THE WORLD AS POWER

SIR JOHN WOODROFFE

GANESH & CO. (MADRAS) PRIVATE LTD.

THE WORLD AS POWER

WOODROFFE

GANESH & CO.
(MADRAS)
PRIVATE LTD.

THE WORLD AS POWER

SIR JOHN WOODROFFE

GANESH & CO. (MADRAS) PRIVATE LTD.

THE
WORLD
AS
POWER

WOODROFFE

GANESH & CO.
(MADRAS)
PRIVATE LTD.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Sir John Woodroffe was an eminent lawyer, a respected Judge and a profoundly sympathetic and understanding student of Indian culture. Few names are more honoured in the world of Sanskrit scholarship than that of Arthur Avalon, who with the devoted aid of his wife, made it his life-work to spread abroad the grand truths enshrined in the Tantrik literature, divested of the cloud of ignorance and the cobwebs of prejudice. . . . —*The Hindu*, Madras

Excellent volumes, Sir John writes with power, knowledge and lucidity, three rare qualities in authorship. —*The Occult Review*

Mr. Avalon in his publications insists on the greatness of the Tantra and seeks to clear away by a dispassionate statement of the real facts the cloud of misconceptions which have obscured our view of this profound and powerful system. . . .

The work of translation has been admirably done. It is at once faithful, simple and graceful in style and rhythm. —*Sri Aurobindo* in *Arya*

A man of studious and retiring habits, he devoted his leisure from judicial duties in the main to Sanskrit and Hindu philosophy and specialised in the Shakti system to an extent not equalled probably by any other British Orientalist. —*The Times*, London

Rs. 15/-

[illegible]
१५ अप्रैल १९५०, बुधवार
15/5.00

BALKRISHNA BOOK Co.,
Hazratganj, Lucknow.

THE WORLD AS POWER

THE WORLD AS POWER

REALITY, LIFE, MIND, MATTER, CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY

BY

SIR JOHN WOODROFFE

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY M. P. PANDIT

Second Edition

1957

GANESH & CO. (MADRAS) PRIVATE LTD.

Printed at the Vasanta Press, The Theosophical Society, Adyar, Madras 20.
Published by S. Subbaiya for Ganesh & Co. (Madras) Private Ltd., Madras 17.

INTRODUCTION

THERE is a Supreme Reality which is Eternal and Indefinable. It is an Absolute, inconceivable and ineffable—the Brahman. Unknowable in its utterness, this Reality presents itself to us in three supreme terms of its Truth: an absolute Existence, *Sat*; an absolute Consciousness, *Cit*; and an absolute Bliss, *Ānanda*. This is the poise of Brahman turned towards self-revelation.

It perceives itself as an infinite Existence; not a mere existence but a Being with a full awareness of all that It is, an infinite Consciousness. This Consciousness inherent in the supreme Being is no static awareness, it is instinct with a Power, a Force dynamic with all the content of the Consciousness. And the nature of this self-conscient Existence is an inalienable Delight. All is a manifestation out of this triune status of the Eternal, *Sat-Cit-Ānanda*.

All is contained in the infinite Being of Brahman; it is brought out and released into a plenitude of manifestation by the Consciousness-Power innate in Himself for the sheer Delight of His Becoming. It is His own Consciousness as Power, the *Cit-Śakti*, that pours out the potentialities held in the infinitude of Brahman, throws up Forms from out of the Formless depths of the Eternal. The Seers of the Veda speak of it as *Māyā*, the power that measures (*miyate anena iti māyā*) out of the Immeasurable, the Force by which all is shaped out. This is the same "self-force of the Divine Being" which the Ṛṣis of the Upaniṣads beheld "deep hidden by its own conscious modes of working". All is a Play, *Līlā*, of this Power of the Divine in manifestation; all the forms and names

that people the universe are self-deployings of this Ādya Śakti. Each is a diverse self-formulation of the Supreme Śakti, brought into being, maintained and withdrawn in the process of Her Cosmic Play with the Eternal Being, Her Lord, Śaktimān.

This is the theme of the present book by Sir John Woodroffe. Sir John has written numerous volumes on Indian Religion and Culture; but of all of them this series on the Doctrine of Consciousness-Power has a special importance providing as it does a closely reasoned basis for the subsequent development of his unsurpassed exposition of the philosophy and practice of the Śākta Āgama. At a time when the curve of Indian Civilization had reached the very nadir of the loss of its spirit and degeneracy of forms after an eventful life-period unparalleled for its duration and expanse; when the true visage of the Soul of India was so completely obscured that even the leaders of her renaissance movement were fumbling in their steps, apologetic of their past and ignorant of their true heritage, it was given to a few men of vision to see through the debris of the receding past and recover the priceless gems of her ancient bequest. Among the foremost of these selfless savants was Sir John Woodroffe who devoted the labour of a life-time for the reclamation of the profound truths of the most misunderstood and much maligned tradition in Hindu Religion, the Tantra Śāstra. A well-known member of the Judiciary, he specialized in Sanskrit studies, approached the sacred texts of the Āgamas with a becoming reverence with the aid of indigenous scholarship and guidance of Gurus, even delved into the arcana of the Sādhana Śāstra deep enough to emerge as an inspired champion of this hoary religion, astounding everybody by the amazing industry, the brilliance of mind and sympathy of understanding he brought to bear on his single-handed endeavour towards the resuscitation of the glory of the Tantra Śāstra, particularly the Śākta

Vedānta. He wrote, translated, edited, annotated, lectured and did everything he could to present the teaching and practice of the Āgamas in their true original intention and laid India under a deep debt of gratitude for awakening her sons to a living sense of this great inheritance of theirs.

Coming to the present series of his writings (now happily brought together by the Publishers, uniform with their other famous publications on Tantra): We have here a detailed examination of the contribution of the six major Systems of Indian Philosophic Thought, the *Ṣad Darśanas*, towards the understanding of the nature of the Reality, the Universe and the Individual. It is shown how each of the systems, Nyāya, Vaiśeṣika, Sāṅkhya, Yoga, and the schools of the Vedānta, lead one step by step towards a spiritual Monism as the ultimate Truth of Creation. It is noteworthy that Sir John does not deal with these thought-systems as things of the past but treats them as living stages in the progress of the human mind towards fuller and fuller Knowledge and relates them at every step to the march of modern Science. He is convincing when he discusses how most of the truths perceived by the Seers of old are now being confirmed by the progress of Science. This is not to say that all that is being discovered by Science today is there already known in the ancient thought of India and in the same form. The fact is that the fundamental truths of the Universe which were seized upon directly by the fresh and intuitive mind of the Seers of the Veda and Upaniṣad are now being confirmed by physical and psycho-physical sciences from the other end. Their method—the experimental method —is necessarily different but the conclusions at which they arrive are substantially and strikingly the same as posited by the Vedānta.

The author describes how the entire universe and its constituents is a spread-out, *prasara*, of the Supreme Power, the Ādya Śakti, the Divine Consciousness as Force. Spiritual and

transcendent in its pristine station above, it bursts forth as and in the Universe, constituting or becoming the several orders of creation by a graded self-formulation and modification of itself in denser and denser forms of existence. Matter, Life, Mind, are each of them different terms of the self-manifestation of the One Divine Consciousness and are found to be as such in their depths when scrutinised with appropriate means. This basic unity, this oneness of origin that underlies all forms in creation is a fact of spiritual experience which is being increasingly corroborated by the results of the advance of Science. The Cartesian dualism of mind and matter no longer holds good. It is recognised that the ' missing links ' pertain only to the superficies of the process of Evolution and, probed deeper, the Universe reveals an unbroken Continuum over all the several tiers of existence. Even Time and Space are categories of the Self-extension of this Consciousness-Power, terms which refer back to its original truths of Eternity and Infinity. All creation ultimately resolves itself into a vibrant manifestation of a Supreme Consciousness-Force, the Divine Śakti, in the ebullience of Her native Ānanda. It is One Līlā. The Play is real. The Player is the Real of the reals. And man too has a part to play. Whether he will live in ignorance and be a puppet or, growing in Knowledge and Consciousness, he will liberate himself into an identity with the Dynamic Śakti and thus freely participate as a conscious player, is the choice before each individual.

Sri Aurobindo Ashram,
Pondicherry.
July 30, 1957

M. P. Pandit

It was reserved for an Englishman, Arthur Avalon (the pen-name of Justice Sir John Woodroffe), noted for the universality of his culture and his judicial balance, to appraise the Tantras at their true value. In his monumental work, "The Garland of Letters", he has familiarised the Indian public with the meaning and significance of both the esoteric and objective aspects of Tāntric thought and meditation developed through Mantras and Yantras but culminating in an attainment not intrinsically different from the ideals of the Rāja-Yoga.

—Dr. Sir C. P. Ramaswami Aiyar

CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction	v
Power As Reality	1
Power As Life	69
Power As Mind	135
Power As Matter	215
Power As Causality	335
Power As Continuity	367
General Index	399

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

FOREWORD

THE present book[1] is the first of a series which I hope to be able to complete, explaining succinctly some general philosophical principles of the Doctrine of Śakti or Power from the Śākta Vedānta standpoint. A correspondent once asked me —what was that? The answer is, that it is that Doctrine which is to be found, expressly or implicitly, in the Tantras of the Āgama-Śāstra of the Advaita Śākta and Śaiva communities of worshippers. The two have points in common in (amongst others) their Doctrine of Śakti and its evolution as the 36 Tattvas and so forth. Thus the latter are explained in both the Gandharva-Tantra, the Kashmirian Tattva-Sandoha, and other works. In the Prātah-Kṛtya as set out in the Mahānirvāṇa-Tantra (V. 39) salutation is made to Ātma-tattva, Vidyā-tattva, and Śiva-tattva, these being the three-fold divisions of the 36 Tattvas.

In what way another enquirer asks—is it to be distinguished from Viśiṣṭādvaita? The answer is that according to the latter the Universe is the Body of the Lord, both now and in dissolution, that is always, whereas according to Śākta views though we may speak of the existing Universe as the Body of the Mother-Power (in Herself or *Svarūpa*, infinite and pure Consciousness or *Cidrūpiṇī*) yet in dissolution the Universe, the Power whence it proceeds and of which it is a transformation, and the Changeless Real or Śiva are one.

The books will be short but with much condensed substance. My object is to state general principles with reference

[1] The first five books of the series are brought under one cover in this volume.

to the thought of the day. The present counts. It is because Indian Philosophy and Religion are too often treated in an archæological way, as things which have been and are gone, and as wholly unrelated to, and without value for, current thought, that they do not often receive the attention and respect which is their due. My own conviction is that an examination of Indian Vedāntic Doctrine shows that it is, in important respects, in conformity with the most advanced scientific and philosophic thought of the West, and that where this is not so, it is Science which will go to Vedānta and not the reverse. This is not necessarily proof that it is true, for the teaching of Western Science may or may not be well-founded, and has certainly undergone revolutionary changes from time to time. What is laughed at to-day is accepted to-morrow and *vice versa*. But if Western Science is deemed of value, so must be the Vedāntic teaching which is in conformity with it.

This series will illustrate more fully what is here stated, but in a general way some examples may be given in support of it. The primary doctrine of Advaita-Vedānta is Unity. The world is not a heap of entirely disparate things thrown together by chance. All are connected, the one with the other and suffer and enjoy through one another. Some gain this truth through their reason, others through their heart and others again by the stick. Thus the late war[1] has discovered the truth to those ignorant of it—that each people and each man is dependent the one on the other. So that if we harm others we harm ourselves immediately or in the long run. Practical Science is charged with the same mission. Railways, steamers, aeroplanes, the telegraph, the telephone, all help to establish the idea of the unity of mankind, to diminish particularism and to foster a wide view of the Universe and its meaning.

[1] World War I (1914-1918)

India has ever held views which are both wide and of the deepest. Her infinities may bore or appal some. But who will deny that Her ideas have been the most colossal the world has known? Her fearless logic has stayed at nothing, until reaching the last barriers of thought, man transformed by *Sādhana* and *Yoga*, has attained That which is alogical. By thinking and direct experience unity is known. Western Science is working towards the same or similar conclusions by its own objective experimental method. In this process it is destroying the difficulties and contradictions, which itself had created. It has set up partitions which it now pulls down. Some of them may be pragmatically useful, for thinking would be fluid unless we controlled the continuous flow of phenomena by divisions, labels and so forth. Some are indeed imposed on us from without, for this power to impose itself on the mind is a test of our Reality. But others are the product of imperfect observation and gratuitously erroneous thinking. None according to Vedānta is essentially justified.

Unity and Continuity are metaphysical concepts. The forms which we observe are, as forms, breaches of both. Nevertheless from their gradations and relations the unity of Power of which they are manifestations is inferred. Union by *Sādhana* with such essential Power gives direct experience (*Veda*) of the unitary essence which is displayed as Mind and Matter. Though the notion of Cit as the basis of all psychical modes, is still peculiar to India, Western Science and Philosophy are now commencing to distinguish between Mind and Consciousness, holding that below and above the surface Consciousness there is yet another. There is in us much more than that of which we are aware. The unity of Mind and its action as a whole is now recognised, as also that Mind is a Force. This is well established in Indian Doctrine which teaches its activity in perception, actually *going forth* to its object and its creative power as shown in the so-called occult faculties or *Siddhis*.

Speaking of this Mind-ray reminds me of a recent announcement that an instrument in the nature of an electroscope is to be shown at a forthcoming medical congress in proof of the statement that in vision a ray proceeds from the eye,—an old Indian notion. The hitherto supposed gap between Mind and Matter is closing, thus rendering a transition from physical to psychical concepts easier. It is ancient Indian Doctrine that both Mind and Matter are modes of one and the same Substance, and as such related to and akin to one another, thus rendering all knowledge possible. Cognition is recognition.

Of the greatest importance is the change of ideas regarding the nature and constitution of Matter. India in the person of her great thinkers has never held to what Sir William Jones called the "vulgar notions of matter". Western Science now dematerialises Matter. The notion of real and lasting partitions between various forms of elementary matter is passing. The present tendency of science is towards the revival of the ancient Doctrine of one Substance-Energy, the Mahāśakti of the Vedāntic Śākta and the Prakṛti of the Sāṃkhyas. All material forms are passing modes (*Vikṛti*) of this one Power. *Māyā* becomes a possibility and not the absurdity which some have supposed it to be. Sāṃkhya is not a "chaotic impertinence" as the English Samskritist Dr. Fitz Edward Hall, with the usual depreciation of things Indian, called it. On the contrary, here as elsewhere the rational character of Indian doctrine is justified. The hitherto supposed gap between "living" and "non-living" substance is now by many denied. Both are forms of the One Power which in this aspect is *Prānah Prānasya*, the Life of all lives. In so-called "inorganic" substance that Form displays itself in certain restricted ways and in organic substance in other ways of increasing freedom. As regards the evolution of "living" substance, the Indian notion has always been

that the various forms of it differ only in degree and not in kind.

In future numbers of this series I hope to deal with Cit, the unchanging principle of all changing experience. Its Power (*Cit-Śakti* and *Māyā-Śakti*), Unity, Causality, Continuity and the various manifestations of Power (Śakti) or modes of its Substance-Energy as Mind, Life and Matter.

But it is to be remembered that the Indian Quest has been and is a practical one—the quest of Happiness which all men seek. If it be true, as *Yoga* holds, that Man can by the appropriate method think and otherwise work himself *out* of the dualistic system of which he is a part, yet whilst he is in and of it, on the path of Enjoyment (*Bhoga*) his thinking has its end in some form of action. In Śākta teaching, *Yoga* and *Bhoga* are unified (*Yogo Bhogāyate*). Man gains every end in and through the finite yet real world—even those which are unworldly, in the striving for unity with the *Ens Realissimum* of which the world is an act of will. That action in the world will be powerful to effect his aims (and who does not want that?) if he worships the infinite Mother Power, the Supreme and complete "I" (*Pūrṇāham*) of which he is according to this teaching a contraction (*Saṃkoca*) or form. By *Sādhana* he makes contact and then unifies himself with the fundamental Grand Will. This Will reinforcing his own individual and contracted will, the "Little Doer" achieves all success.

Another and most important matter to be remembered is this.—It has recently been said (Hoernle "Studies in Contemporary Metaphysics," 75) that "the Eastern doctrines of the veil of illusion over reality and of the elaborate ascetic regimen for Mind and Body by which the student must discipline himself for penetrating to the Reality behind the veil, have never profoundly affected the main current of Western thought. Most of the great Philosophers of the West, certainly

since the time of the Renaissance, have been men of the world as well as students and thinkers. They have never tried to be 'holy' men set apart from their fellows and the problems of contemporary life. They have not, even when they were professors, spent their days in meditation and mortification of the flesh in order to achieve individually the blessedness of Union with the One".

These statements do not apply to the Middle Ages in the West. With the supposed "Veil of Illusion" this book deals. Śākta doctrine does not favour an "ascetic regimen", except by "ascetic," we understand a self-controlled and ordered life. Says the Kulārṇava-Tantra (Ch. I-V, 75, *et seq*) "Fools deceived by Thy *Māyā* hope to attain liberation by eating one meal a day, by fasting and other acts which emaciate the body. What liberation can such ignorant ones get by the torture of the body? Donkeys go about naked, are they therefore *Yogīs*? If liberation is to be had by smearing oneself with mud and ashes then village dogs who roll therein are *Yogins*. Deer and other animals live on grass leaves and water, are they therefore *Yogins*? Hogs are exposed to cold wind and heat. To them all food fit and unfit are alike. Are these then *Yogins*? Oh Kuleśvari, all such practices deceive. The only direct cause of liberation is knowledge of the Truth (*Tattvajñāna*). It again affirms that, in Kaula-Dharma, *Bhoga* (Enjoyment and Suffering) is converted into Yoga (*Yogo bhogāyate*) and the *world is made the seat of liberation* (*Mokṣāyate saṃsārah*).

The end which is beyond the life of earth is achieved in it. It is not the fugitive but the *Vīra* (hero) who meets life face to face, who conquers all vain fears and ignorance and achieves. He is *Vīra* who struggles with *Avidyā*. By what man falls, by that he rises. But in common with other Indian systems, it holds that by reason and speculation alone Reality, in its sense as the Supreme Experience, is not attained. For this, *Sādhana* as physical, intellectual and moral purification,

self-control, discipline, and worship are necessary. Without these the doctrine is not, even in an intellectual sense rightly apprehended, still less is the Truth realised. Man must *transform* his nature to attain it. This involves right activity (*Kriyā*) with awareness of, and self-identification in all functions with, the indwelling Mother-Power: "She I am" "*Sa'haṃ*" he says.

It has been said in the West (and this is Indian doctrine) that there is no end to what the trained and tutored will can do; and that because if a man puts himself in line with the Forces of Life he can tap reservoirs of Power, the contents of which are bottomless, because they are co-extensive with the Universal Life. This is the meaning of two terms common in the Tantra, namely, *Yoginīpriya* (Beloved of the *Yoginīs*) *Yoginīpaśu* (slave of the *Yoginīs*). The *Yoginīs* are the *Devatā* aspect of the Forces of Nature or *Āvaraṇa-Devatās* of the *Mahā-yoginī*, the supreme *Mahāmāyā-Tripurasundarī*. Work with them and success is attained. Work against them and ill-fortune follows. Identify the self with the partial aspects which are the *Yoginīs* and then various Powers (*Siddhis*) are attained. Identify the self with the *Mahā-yoginī* Herself and Man is liberated, for He is no longer man but She. This is the Śākta teaching, come down from days when India was a *Siddha-Bhūmi*. With what a man should identify himself, depends upon what he wants. But whatever it is, he gets the Power, if he but wills and works for it.

In conclusion, I wish to express my thanks to my friend Professor Pramathanātha-Mukhyopādhyāya for the help he has given me in the preparation of and in revising this and the forthcoming volumes, in which latter I hope to include some valuable notes of his on their subject.

Calcutta J. W.
14th July 1921

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS REALITY

I

It is a common notion concerning the Hindus that they are an unpractical people, without "grip on reality," believing life to be a "dream." This estimate is supposed to receive corroboration from the fact of their political dependence [1] and to be in some degree the justification of it. Their Religion and Philosophy is said to be accountable for these alleged defects and their results. False philosophies and religions have (it is supposed) impeded India in the path of what its critics consider to be self-realisation. That there has been a lack of dynamism is obvious enough, for otherwise things would not be what they are. Therefore is needed the worship of Śakti or Power. There has been in some quarters a lack of faith, of belief, of self-confidence which is life and the issue of Life. How wonderful is the saying of that unnamed sage (to which I will in another volume return) which is quoted by Punyānanda and Bhāskararāya in their Commentaries on the Yoginī-hṛdaya, and Nityāṣodaśikā-Tantras.

Apūrṇaṃ manyatā vyādhih kārpaṇyaika-nidāna-bhūh

"Sense of imperfection is disease and the sole source of every misery." But does not the Vedānta speak of the *Pūrna*, the *Whole* which is both Health and Life lasting? Is

[1] Written in 1921 when India was not independent.

it the fact that Indian philosophy and religion are responsible? This is a large question, the answering of which would involve very many inquiries extending over a large field. Here I am concerned with one only. To me the Hindu typal-mind has a profound sense of reality, both as universe and its ground.

The power of ideas is immense and the greatest of all powers. But we must not over-exaggerate the influence on man at large of the technical discussions of professional philosophers. This is above all true of the philosophical issue, so long and even now agitated, namely as to the reality of the world of objects, as to the real nature of the "Real," as to what is real and unreal in experience, and so on. The reality of the universe is imposed even on philosophers notwithstanding their arguments. For both they and the common folk form part of and perceive it. The difference between these two classes, in India as elsewhere, lies in this, that the reality of the world, in the technical sense of "Reality" as understood in the West, is taken for granted by the latter, who pursue their avocations unworried by self-created difficulties, whilst some at least of the former in the West have been engaged in the task of endeavouring to show that the things which we perceive are not really what we perceive them to be. Indian philosophic thought preserves the reality of the object experienced, whilst making full allowance for the influence in the act of perception of individual mental characteristics and tendencies called *Saṃskāras*, until that stage of cosmic consciousness (called Hiraṇyagarbha) is attained in which Reality as the Universals or Generals of the sense-particulars (*Tanmātras*) is experienced. Beyond this is Perfect Experience as Īśvara and then Pure *Saṃvit* Itself. In the Hiraṇyagarbha subsumed by Īśvara there is still the limiting Saṃskāra which while allowing perfect experience of the universals, yet precludes a perfect experience of the whole

cosmic dynamism of things and their relations. This limitation is removed in the stage of Īśvara in which there is not only a perfect experience of effects (kārya) as they are but of causes as they are. There is no question of noumenal and phenomenal aspects but rather of causal and effectual aspects; nor is there a question of an unknowable background as in Western Science. Both aspects are actually known by us imperfectly; the effectual by Hiraṇyagarbha perfectly; both causal and effectual by Īśvara perfectly.

Western thought has endeavoured to show that things are not what they appear to be, that is, they are in fact other than what they seem. We are thus said to live in "appearances" of "things in themselves," unknowable yet existing in their own right. The sense-data are mere effects, produced in a perceiver's mind by the action on the sense organs of material objects, conceived in terms of imperceptible and hence hypothetical particles and forces. According to the Indian idea here described it is affirmed that things are *as things* what they appear to be. There is no "thing in itself" and therefore no appearance of it. The individual's perception of a thing is however subject to the limitations of his sense-capacity and of his *Saṃskāras*. The Western view is—"What I see as green is objectively not green at all, but an hypothetical vibration of an hypothetical Ether." But according to Indian doctrine greenness is objective: though this greenness may be perceived by me subject to my *Saṃskāras* or prenatal tendencies and conditions of sense-capacity. The standard thing or the standard quality is not an unknowable extra-mental X, but the standard experience of a perfect Experiencer, Īśvara or Hiraṇyagarbha. Īśvara's experience is the "thing in itself" and of the "thing in itself"; my experience is an actual participation in His subject to my own limitations. There is thus no difference (as in the West) between "thing in itself" and "appearance" (which latter

does not resemble the former), but between standard or perfect experience on the one hand and varied individual experience, subject to limitations, on the other. The Vedānta says that things are forms of, or appearances backed by, a Spiritual Reality which is not a thing at all. But so far as anything is a thing, we know it, subject to our limitations, for what it is. The Real has three bodies, causal, subtle, and gross of which the former is the common source of the other two, which constitute the world of subtle and gross objects. Experience in each of these bodies is direct and real. Scientific doctrine has not this reality of experience. For the perceived is substituted the inferred, and some of this inference is (when not unsound) either based on slender evidence or mere hypothesis. Inference is not the experience of the real. It may be wholly error. In applied science we live in a real world. But theoretical science and metaphysics may, as regards the inferred ultimate nature of things, be without truth, the correspondence of the real. In such matters an idolatry of Science is amongst the most foolish. Nevertheless it is a fact that Science is putting forward to-day theories which, if without meaning as applied to the physical world alone, nevertheless tend to establish the truth, which gives them meaning. Thus when it attributes unity, conservation, and continuity to Matter, Energy, and Motion in an universe of obvious plurality and discontinuity (since every form is a real breach of it) what it is in fact doing is to show that none of its conceptions have any meaning, except on the assumption of the unity and unmoving continuity of Consciousness in the sense of the Vedāntic Cit.

Indian thought affirms the truth (in its grade) of experience whether empirical or transcendental. Mere speculation as to the nature of either as inferred by reasoning or sense data leads at best to a conclusion of probability. The only certitude is in direct Experience itself. Nothing useful is

gained in attempting to prove that that experience is in itself not real, or is an appearance of something unperceived. If we would know what some other than ordinary experience is, we must actually shift, not our speculative thought on to it but our being into it. In other words, we must have that experience directly. When we have made the shift, the experience which we have left is of no concern to us. But even if it were, it would not appear to be false but to be the relative truth of the stage at which it was had. It is "corrected" only in and for the next experience of the Real. Whilst on the plane of material experience, sense-data, inference, and reasoning take their part in raising the self to its own higher Self and its experiences. There is no magic carpet which wafts the self from one stage to the other. But it is only a part of the *Sādhana* as moral conduct, self-discipline and ritual worship which are the necessary preliminary of Yoga through reasoning (*Jñāna*), feeling (*Bhakti*) or action (*Karma*). Truth is given us in our awareness of the world, for as we see it so it really is for us. There are higher experiences than this. But if they are to be had, the whole subjective being and its material body must be so actually *transformed* as to enable such experiences to be had. In other words we must experience reality whatever be its aspect—and not merely discuss it.

Contrary to common belief, Hindu thinkers have been and are (in an epistemological sense) not only Realists but Realists of a thorough-going type. There is no trace of the Subjectivism which may be found in the Buddhist schools. I have used the term "Realism," because it can be described, for the present purpose, in a clear way as the doctrine which holds that the world of objects is real in the sense that they exist independently of the consciousness of the person who experiences them. The vast bulk of the people of India are as "naively realistic," as the rest of the world. Nor have

they the mental malady which doubts the obvious and seeks for anything but a plain account of things. Theirs is the great common-sense which means man-kind-sense; even though like everything which is human, it is not free from error. Common-sense is the sense of Reality in its material form. I am not however here concerned with popular but with philosophic Indian thought. By "Indian" I mean Brahmanical or, to use a popular term, Hindu. In fact one of the great cleavages between Brahmanical and Buddhist thought concerns this philosophical question of Reality, either as the Constant Centre of experience, or the universe which is the object of its experience. If the charge made can be laid at the door of any philosophy or religion, it is at that of some forms of Buddhism. For the very mark of Brahmanism is reality and practicality in doctrine and discipline. "Realism" in the Western sense is the doctrine that reality exists apart from its presentation to, or conception by, consciousness. The realist believes that in sense-perception we have assurance of the presence of reality distinct from the modifications of the perceiving mind and existing independently of perception. *This is the Hindu position.* In Epistemology or theory of knowledge the Idealist asserts, after the manner of the Buddhist, that the reality of the world is its perceptibility. *This the Hindu denies.*

With this definition of "Realism" no harm is done by the employment of a technical Western term. Descriptive names given to Western systems of thought are not seldom in themselves ambiguous and often actually misleading when applied to Indian doctrine. They have their utility as a species of short-hand for the description of Western systems and serve a purpose when we endeavour to compare Western and Eastern thought. But care must always be taken in their use. "Realism" even in Europe does not always connote the same thing. Idealism again is a vague term. In the metaphysical

sense, Idealism is the name given to any theory which maintains the Universe to be throughout the work or the embodiment of Reason or Mind.[1] In this metaphysical sense of the term, that is as opposed to materialism, all the Six Philosophies may be described as idealistic, for none of them are materialistic.[2] In an *epistemological* sense the Hindus are *Realists*. In the *metaphysical* sense, some of their systems, such as the Sāṃkhya and Vedānta have been called Idealistic. The former may perhaps be so described, if a system which derives matter from things mental can be so called. It is certainly not (as has been said)[3] materialistic. It sounds strange to call a system materialistic which derives matter from thoughts and ideas and such an estimate is[4] absolutely against the universal tradition of the Hindus who, notwithstanding their assiduous critics, may be at least allowed to know what their own systems mean. For this reason, the Indian author last cited calls it Psycho-dynamism, inasmuch as the Principles which it regards as the origin of things are both psychical, that is, in the nature of feelings, thoughts and ideas, and dynamic, that is of the nature of forces or powers. The Vedānta again differs fundamentally from such idealistic Western systems as those of Fichte, Schelling and Hegel, in that (amongst other things) the Vedāntic Cause of the universe is not Mind or Reason as those terms are understood in the West but *Cit* (of which Mind is only a limited *mode*) and its Power or Śakti. It is better then in all cases to avoid Western terms except where they are nearly adequate, or comparison calls for them.

[1] See Baldwin. Phil. Dict. *sub. voc.*

[2] The first standard or Nyāya-vaiśeṣika has been called "Hindu Realism" and in several senses it is so. It is however not materialism and cannot be called Idealism in so far as its creation is a conjunction of previously existing realities.

[3] By Prof. Garbhe. Samkh. Phil. 242: *et seq.* Prof. Max Muller called it a system of Idealism, "Six Systems." X.

[4] As pointed out by J. C. Chatterjee in "Hindu Realism," 14.

We can most accurately describe Indian systems by avoidance of labels, and by stating what in fact they say, leaving others to docket them in their Histories of Philosophy, if they will.

The belief to the contrary of that which I have expressed is I think in part due to the fact that the most talked-of system in the West is the Monistic Vedānta of the School of Śaṃkarācārya, and in part to a lack of understanding of this system, which presents some difficulties to the European mind. Even in India there are, I believe, at the present day but few who are really masters of it.

II

THE chief orthodox systems of Brahmanism are known as the Six Darśanas or "Means of seeing,"[1] because what the West calls Philosophy is that which gives men sight of sensible verities and enables them to understand in the light of Reason the super-sensible Truth attainable only through Veda, that is, the super-sensible *standard* experience of the Ṛṣis[2] or Seers. Philosophy habits this experience, so far as may be, in its rational dress.

These six systems may for the purpose of metaphysics be grouped into three, *viz.*, (1) Nyāya-vaiśeṣika, (2) Sāṃkhya-Yoga, (3) Vedānta.[3] This last term means Upaniṣad. As such it must be distinguished from the various interpretations of it which are given by the Vedāntic philosophical schools.

All these systems teach the empirical reality of the external world. In fact Śaṃkarācārya to whom the doctrine of the "unreality" of the world is attributed, emphatically affirms, in his polemic against the Subjectivism of the Buddhists, that matter is every whit as real as the mind which perceives it. The first of these groups teaches the absolute reality (that is, independence of the universe) of its nine eternally existing ultimate entities[4], with their properties,

[1] Darśana comes from the root "*Dṛś*", "to see" that is to know.

[2] Ṛṣi also comes from the same root "to see" for they saw as Seers, that is had experience (Jñāna) of supersensible truths.

[3] This is the Uttaramīmāṃsā. The Pūrva or Dharma-Mīmāṃsā's metaphysical basis belongs to the first group.

[4] Dravya : post.

relations and so forth ; the second, the absolute reality or the independence of the universe of its ultimate root as the evolving Material Cause[1] associated with Efficient Cause[2] or Consciousness, the two Realities of this system ; and the third, which is sub-divided into two general divisions, teaches in the first of these divisions that the universe in ultimate resort is real, not as independent, but as part of the *one* ultimate Reality or Brahman ; whilst the Māyā-vāda Vedānta, which is the sole system of the second division and is regarded by its adherents as the crown of all doctrines, teaches that the universe, whilst empirically real, is in the transcendental sense neither "real" *nor* "*unreal*", nor partly either, but is backed up and made apparently substantial by this one Reality ; which, though It is (relative to us) Being-Bliss-Consciousness[3] and Lord,[4] is in Itself beyond all mind and speech (which, however, does not make It *unknowable*).

These Six Systems are really One System,[5] containing three chief presentments or Standards of Indian Thought suitable to various types and grades of mind, which Standards, in themselves, mark stages of advance towards the understanding by the mind of the beyond-mind standard experience of the Seers or Ṛṣis. Those who regard them according to notions of historical succession only will not accept this. They will also further point to the controversies of the adherents of each of the philosophical and religious schools. It is however the Indian notion which is expressed by Śiva who says[6] "The Six Doctrines[7] are My Six Limbs[8]

[1] Mūlaprakṛti: v. post.

[2] Puruṣa which is Cit.

[3] Saccidānanda.

[4] Īśvara.

[5] Some correspondences between the Six Systems are given in the following notes with a view to explaining the statement that they are each a presentment of the one standard Truth.

[6] Kulārṇava-Tantra, II-84, 85.

[7] Darśana: commonly called the Six (orthodox) Philosophies.

[8] Two legs and feet, belly or trunk, two arms and hands and head.

(that is they form the unity of His Intellectual Body). He who separates them one from another severs my limbs (that is the unity of His Body). These also are the Six Limbs of Kula."[1] Śiva is the all-knowing Supreme Consciousness[2], and Mind[3] is a mode of it. The Six Philosophies are the Six Minds or Six Ways in which *intellectual* approach is made to that Full or Whole Experience,[4] a state which transcends mind and its operations. This Indian notion is essentially a true one. It is unaffected by succession in time, or by the fact that each adherent of a system is taught[5] and believes that his system is the truth and would argue others out of theirs. It is necessary that this should be so, because only that can be received which the particular mind is capable of receiving. That is *its* truth. And that only can be held and lead to practical result in which one has faith. One stage is not contradictory of another, because they are stages complete and true in themselves, as representative of a particular psychic development, of which the doctrine held is the corresponding expression. Absolute truth consists in this, that it is impossible of correction. But the stages being relative are in a sense corrected ; not in the sense that they fail according to a standard applicable to the stage of particular development for which they are appropriate ; but because the mind, enriched and transformed in its continuing advance, moves towards another and truer attitude and standpoint.

The Six Systems then are not wholly separate and mutually contradictory as commonly supposed, but are a graduated series in which the three groups form three great Standards suited to different types or grades of mind—

[1] The community and doctrine of the Tantrik school called Kaulas. Kula = Śakti. Akula = Śiva. He who is Līna in both is Kulīna or Kaula.

[2] Cit.

[3] Antahkaraṇa or inner instrument.

[4] Pūrṇa; which is the Immense or Brahman which is theologically God.

[5] See my Essay "Alleged Conflict of Śāstras" in "Śakti and Śākta".

different intellectual capacities and temperaments.[1] What system any individual should follow depends on his competency or *Adhikāra*, a very fundamental doctrine of Brahmanism. To each is given the truth of his stage. When acquired, the mind naturally ascends to the next until, by the elimination of all which is accidental, it passes into the one essential stageless Reality.[2] When therefore it is said that the Six form one system, reference is not made to their historical genesis. The relation is not temporal but logical. They are stages in a process of immanent logic of the Reason realising itself as the true expression (so far as may be) in mind of supermental experience. The former cannot truly represent the latter, but some systems of thought make nearer approach to it than others. Classification by time is superficial. One system may ante-date or post-date another but what is essential is its character as being more or less advanced in the process of self-realisation.

In all these systems the world as a combination of elements is a passing thing, it being a common Hindu notion that nothing which is produced (and the universe as we know it is that) lasts for ever. Into what is it resolved? What are or is its fundamental Realities or Reality? This leads to a short survey of the teachings of the Six Systems on this point.

[1] See " Hindu Realism," 5, *et seq.*

[2] See my Essay " Alleged Conflict of Śāstras " in " Śakti and Śākta ".

III

If we reflect on the nature of ultimate Reality or Realities, the most obvious division which suggests itself is that of the Experiencer and Experienced, of the conscious Selves and the world of objects together with their various properties and relations.

On the subjective side there is Consciousness and Mind, for none of the Indian systems fails to distinguish the one from the other. We know ourselves as conscious beings. Consciousness is recognised by the First Standard[1] as a property and as such must inhere in some Reality which is independent of the body, since it is not the latter's property for several reasons which this *Śāstra* develops. We may only note here the view that if Consciousness cannot be the property of the body as a whole, neither can it be a mere function of the brain, the brain theory of Consciousness being open to the same objections as the one which maintains that consciousness is a property of the body as a whole.[2] In fact consciousness belongs to what feels itself to be the possessor of the body and makes use of the body. But as in all the other Standards, a distinction is drawn between Consciousness and Mind.[3] The Ātman or Self is the basis of Consciousness and

[1] As to what follows the English reader may consult "Hindu Realism" by J. C. Chatterjee and others. To those who know Bengali, Rajendra Ghose's work on this System is recommended.

[2] See Chandrakānta-Tarkālankāra Lectures on Hindu Philosophy, II. 174.

[3] Manas. In this case between Manas and the Self or ātman whose property is consciousness and mind.

experience. It is not limited but is all-pervading and present everywhere. But we observe that the Self does not always perceive an object, even when the latter is in relation with a sense or senses by which it is perceived. Therefore the Self requires something else for perception, namely, attention in which case only perception of the object takes place. Moreover mind is wanted to enable the self to have experience, not simultaneously of all things at once but in succession. For these and other reasons the necessarily limiting function of moving atomic mind in relation to unmoving all-pervading Self, and the separate real existence of mind is shown. As consciousness is not the property of the body, neither is it the property of and one with the senses, life or mind. Mind and senses are instruments of Consciousness. Thoughts, ideas and feelings are generally called Mind in the West, but the Self as sustainer of consciousness is not any of these. For they are in continual change and are known and experienced as changing things in much the same way as the body and its changes are known and experienced. Being so experienced they are not the experiencer. We are here on ground common in general to all the Standards, the main distinction being that in this Standard the Self or Ātman is the Reality in which all consciousness inheres, and consciousness is not its essential characteristic as in Sāṃkhya and Vedānta. We thus get two ultimate Realities on the side of Perception: for the senses are made up of the four minima [1] of discrete things perceived by the senses, and though real are not original ultimate realities.

Then what is perceived? What is perceived is Matter with its properties and relations and so forth, now moving, now held in position in space. Matter is real, its properties and relations are real, and so are time, motion and space. The sensible world is thought to be five-fold, for it affects our

[1] Paramāṇus.

senses in five different ways. As the Standard does not admit a common Substance with varying form, matter is constituted by a number of separate independently existing Realities. Matter has certain general qualities [1] which correspond to a certain extent to what European Philosophy calls the primary qualities which may be perceived by more senses than one: as also certain special qualities [2] which can each be perceived by a certain sense only and correspond to some of the so-called secondary qualities of Western Philosophy. But if external things exist, they must do so independently of the percipient, for that is their Reality. Their qualities are really inherent in them and not in the percipients. Nor can it be said, as some do in the West, that some properties are inherent and objective and others subjective. For the arguments which prove that some properties are objective will also prove that the rest are so. As further explained later the theory of perception is fully "realistic." The four special qualities which affect the four corresponding senses are odour, taste, colour, and the touch sense. Sound in this standard is not regarded as a property of the discrete sensible things, there being no such thing from which sound cannot be entirely eliminated; yet sound as a quality can have no independent existence of its own, nor is it purely subjective. It inheres in the Reality called Ether (*Ākāśa*) though not possessing exactly the same qualities as the Ether of modern Western science. Things move in it and produce sounds not in themselves but in the medium in which they move. There are thus four classes of Minima of those moving things which are discrete and are perceived by the senses, each of which is eternal and changeless and a fifth Reality the ethereal motionless *Ākāśa* in which they are. These Minima or Paramāṇus have been called [3] misleadingly "Atoms." For the latter

[1] Sāmānya-guṇa.

[2] Viśeṣa-guṇa.

[3] As pointed out in "Hindu Realism."

have in Western chemistry some magnitude, whilst the four classes of Paramāṇus are non-spatial and absolutely without any magnitude whatever. Unlike many, if not most, schools of Realism in the West there is no Hindu system of realistic thought which has ever held that the essential basis of the sensible world is a something or somethings which must have magnitude and extension. The ultimate constituents of sensible things are real but not hard solid particles with magnitude—a conclusion towards which Western investigation with its "dematerialization" of Matter now tends. The Minima combine to form sensible matter, the pure points standing themselves away from one another but being united mediately through the intervening ether which is itself a non-discrete Reality or continuum in touch with all discrete things. Each of these four classes of Paramāṇus, as the origin of a special quality perceived by a special single sense, is also the origin of the particular sense itself, namely, the senses commonly called touch, sight, taste, and smell. That is the special senses are essentially of the same nature as the ingredients or originators of the qualities themselves. It is thus important to remember that according to the Hindu theory of Perception the senses are essentially of the same nature as the originators of the qualities which are perceived by them. These senses perceive all perceptible things as moving, changing, coming into existence, and passing out of it. This standard has no such notion of inherent causal efficiency as is held by the second. It holds that the things themselves as things cannot do all this. Motion is communicated by the First Mover who is separate from that which He moves. Discrete things have no power of self-origination and movement—even if they had, we should not see the orderly movement which is in the universe unless there were some Power which makes this orderly movement and seasonable origination and distinction of things possible. But we not

only see things moving and changing, but they hold relative positions to one another, that is, are held together in their positions and must therefore be conceived as being acted upon by a Power which works in a direction opposite to that in which the power of movement works. This movement or *Kāla* produces all relations which are called temporal and so is in this sense Time. The other principle or *Dik* by which discrete things are held in relative position produces notions of spatial direction. Space and Time have an objective existence irrespective of the mind thinking about them. The relations which they produce are as real as the things related. They are relations of the real separate things.

Of Entities (*Dravya*) or as they are sometimes translated Substances, there are thus (both subjective and objective) nine.[1] These with their qualities or properties, movements or actions, species, particular, inherent inseparable relation and negation are known as the seven *Padārthas*[2] or Categories under which everything which can be imagined are classed. All these entities, properties, relations and so forth are real.

Dealing with the Entities (*Dravya*) there are in the Nyāya-vaiśeṣika, the first and simplest of the three stages of philosophical development, on the one hand the Selves,[3] the

[1] Ātman, Manas, Paramāṇus (4), Ākāśa, Kāla, Dik.

[2] Guṇa, Karma, Sāmānya, Viśeṣa, Samāvāya (as of quality with substance, action with substance, part with whole) Abhāva. Guṇas are 24 in number and are Nitya and Anitya, Karma 5, Sāmānya (3), Viśeṣa many, Samāvāya 1, Abhāva 2 again divided into three. According to Kaṇāda there were only 6 Padārthas, Abhāva being omitted. That in which they inhere (ādhāra) are Dravya in the case of Guṇa, Karma, Viśeṣa; Dravya, Guṇa, Karma in the case of Sāmānya and Samāvāya; and Abhāva may be related to anything in Svarūpa-Saṃbanda. According to Vedānta, Śakti is different from these. The Nyāya includes Śakti or Power in Abhāva as the negation of obstruction hindering production of effect (Prati-bandhakābhāva). Īśvara has Nitya-jñāna, Nitya-icchā, Nitya-kriyā. These three properties are called the Śaktis of Īśvara.

[3] Ātmans. These correspond (when I use this word here or elsewhere I do not imply that the notions are identical: on the contrary) to the Puruṣas of the Sāṃkhya-Yoga and to the one Ātman of the Vedānta.

basis of consciousness and experience, or that in which consciousness inheres, together with the Mind or instrument of their experience,[1] and, on the other hand, the four essential subtile objects of experience[2] from which are produced the gross perceptible objects of experience together with the ethereal medium[3] in which all discrete and separated things exist. To these it adds *Kāla*, the Principle of universal movement bringing, according to general Hindu ideas, things into existence, subjecting them to change and carrying them out of existence giving rise in the percipient to the notion of Time;[4] and *Dik* the Principle which, notwithstanding the impulse of the former, holds things together in their various relative positions giving rise in the percipient to the notion of relative position as "here and there," "near and far" in Space.[5] In this system however neither Time nor Space are mere notions. They are *Dravya* or Entities that is something independently real, and self-subsisting. Confusion has arisen from the supposition that *Kāla* and *Dik* mean Time and Space in the general Western sense of those terms.[6] Western Realists have also maintained that Time and Space have an

[1] Manas. This, as an instrument of experience, corresponds to the Antahkaraṇa of the other systems of which Manas is one particular function.

[2] Paramāṇus. Their place is taken in the other system by the Tanmātras or supra-sensible matter.

[3] Ākāśa: given as such medium in all the schools.

[4] Kāla. In the Pāncarātra-Tantras also time is defined as "the mysterious power which urges on and matures everything." It is threefold as Supreme, Subtle, Gross. Transcendental Time is traced back to Veda and is referred to in the saying Kālah kāle nayati mām "Time leads me in time." This is Akhaṇda Kāla or Time without sections. See Dr. Schrader's Introd. Ahirbudhnya-Saṃhitā 65. As to time as a form of perception (Anschauungsform) in the Pāncarātra see Schrader (*Op. cit.* —71) where also he says that the idea of spatial transcendence was known to them and others. As to the two higher standards v. post.

[5] It is a part of the function of Niyati in the 36 Tattvas accepted by Śaivas and Śāktas, *v. ib.* and my "Garland of Letters". Dik is spatial position as to which see *post.*

[6] See J. C. Chatterji's "Hindu Realism," 54 *et seq.* where the point is discussed.

existence irrespective of the mind thinking about them, with the result that all necessary relations drawn from knowledge may also be regarded as having a reality independent of the mind reflecting on them. This does not mean according to Western Realism that they have existence as individuals or independent of the things related. But they have just such reality as we are intuitively led to believe them to have; that is, they exist as necessary relations of the separate things.[1] According to the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika-Darśana, *Kāla* is a general principle of movement and *Dik* is a power which acts in exactly a contrary way, that is, by holding things together in a particular position. It is not Space in the sense of room[2] and is in the nature of spatial direction. Each Reality has only general relation with everything which moves or is held in position. They are both, as realities, distinct from the things in and upon which they operate: but as so operating they give rise in the percipient to the notion of relations called Time and Spatial position.

The imperceptible *Paramāṇus* or things of no magnitude produce perceptible things with magnitude.[3] In this system the World as a compound of these lasting eternal elements is real since it exists independent of experience. Its ultimate constituents are self-subsisting and independent of all perceiving entities or selves.

During dissolution[4] there exist all the *Padārthas*[5] except non-eternal compounded substance, non-eternal quality or

[1] See Dr. J. McCosh. "First and Fundamental Truths," 185.

[2] This is Ākāśa in which Dik operates. Space as extension or locus of finite body (Sthityādhāra) is called Deśa.

[3] Just as the infra-sensible Tanmātras of the other standards give rise to the Bhūtas and their compounds as sensible matter.

[4] Pralaya.

[5] See p. 27. Including Abhāva there are seven categories or Padārthas here spoken of, but different schools of Dārshanikas classify Padārthas differently. The Māyā-vādins say two (Cit, Acit), the Rāmānujas three (Cit, Acit, Īśvara), the Mādhvas have two (Svatantra, Paratantra), Nākuliśas three (Pati, Paśu, Pāśa).

properties and action or motion.[1] Where there is more than one thing there must exist some sort of relation.[2] The Selves or Ātmans[3] (in whom is their *Adṛṣṭa*)[4] and their *Manas*[5] exist unconsciously, that is, without experience. The Paramāṇus with their *Adṛṣṭa*[6] exist without motion in *Ākāśa*[7] and *Kāla* and *Dik* are inoperative. Īśvara alone is eternally conscious, willing and active but without production of the universe. At creation[8] Īśvara makes the *Adṛṣṭa* of the Ātmans operative and conjoins the *Ātmans*, ever associated with their Manas[5] in such wise that the Selves become Conscious and have experience of sensible Matter,[9] the *Adṛṣṭa* of which is also made operative, upon which they are active after their nature, have motion, combine as Dvyaṇukas and then as Trasarenu, that is, combinations of the Dvyaṇukas or six "atoms" which is the smallest sensible matter of three dimensions.

The second and more advanced Standard or Sāṃkhya-yoga asks whether, in an analysis of the World, we cannot reduce it to a lesser number of Realities than the nine Entities with their properties and relations, namely, Consciousness and Mind on the one hand, and on the other the four elements of matter in space, now moved, now held in position? It answers that we can. We can keep Consciousness and Mind and include the rest under the common heading Matter and

[1] That is the Nitya-Dravya, Nitya-guṇas, Sāmānya, Viśeṣa, Samāvāya. There is Abhāva of Kārya and no Karma; Anitya (non-Eternal) Dravyas are everything beginning with the Dvyaṇukas of Pṛthivī, Āpah, Tejah, Vāyu. The rest are, including the Paramāṇus, nitya (Eternal).

[2] Here called Saṃyoga-viśeṣa-saṃbandha. [3] See p. 27.

[4] The product of past Karma and the cause of future Karma. Adṛṣṭa as a Guṇa cannot be ever separated from the Ātman.

[5] See p. 27.

[6] These have their Saṃskāras. All Matter has its appropriate behaviour due to inner tendency or Saṃskāra.

[7] See p. 27. [8] Sṛṣṭi.

[9] Compounded of the ultimate Minima or Paramāṇus.

attribute the latter's motions and positions to its own inherent energies. We thus get three things—Consciousness, Mind and Matter. In the World we see constant change and we experience a continuity of consciousness as an unchanging Self. We see and experience both Consciousness and Unconsciousness. The two chief concepts then which claim our attention are Consciousness, Unconsciousness, Changelessness, and Change. Examination shows that the first differs fundamentally from the second and belongs to a category of its own, that is, it must be regarded as a separate and different reality from the rest. Why? Because our intuition of Consciousness is of its continuity. It is true that some speak of the "stream" of consciousness, but examination shows that it is not unlimited consciousness which moves but the limited mind which is associated with it and is its instrument. Notwithstanding all apparent change, we are conscious of a persisting spaceless and timeless Self which gives meaning to all our notions of motion, change, space, and time. But whilst we know ourselves as consciousness we are aware of limitations upon it. Consciousness cannot as such limit Consciousness. It must then be something unconscious which does so. This something then is Mind. Mind certainly appears to be conscious, but this is so not because it is in fact Consciousness but because it is associated with, and backed by, Consciousness. Mind is a play of dark unconscious force which is lit up by Consciousness. Again Consciousness in itself is unlimited, but everything else which is not Consciousness, or so far as it is not so, is limited. Consciousness then is distinct from Mind and Matter in that the former is changeless, timeless, spaceless, unlimited, whilst Mind and Matter are changing things and (being things) limited in Time and Space.

The next question is—Consciousness being a distinct reality from Mind and Matter, are these last two separate realities or can they be reduced to one? They can be so

reduced if shown to have qualities in common bringing them under one general concept. We have seen that there are two such qualities. Each is *per se* unconscious. Consciousness is unlimited and all-pervading and therefore immanent (however veiled) in Mind and Matter. But abstractedly considered and by themselves, Mind and Matter are unconscious. Again they are both changing. We observe matter in constant change. So also the mind changes, its instability being compared to mercury. In fact motion, as both Aristotle and the Hindus say, is the essential characteristic of Nature. For this reason the world is called in Saṃskrit "*Jagat*" which means the "moving thing". The universe is Mind and Matter in constant movement (*Spanda*), not a single particle being even for one moment at rest. Throughout all this movement the Self remains as the one unchanged Consciousness, the static centre of this other Reality which is many, changing, and unconscious. Both Matter and Mind, which move in and around it are two aspects, the first gross, and the second subtle, of one common Ground and Reality.

The Second Standard then reduces the many realities of the first into two, namely, the *Puruṣas* or Selves as Consciousness and *Prakṛti* the source of both the mental and psychical as subject on the one hand [1] and the material as object [2] on the other. *Prakṛti* the source of the world of mind and matter is a self-subsisting Entity independent of the Selves which, as being in themselves Consciousness, lighten and give the similitude of consciousness to its dark unconscious operations. She is active before Him because Nature always works for the Consciousness directed towards it. As Prakṛti is real so also are its derivatives Mind and Matter, the latter including

[1] The Antah-karaṇa working with the aid of the senses or Indriyas. Consciousness is reflected on these because the natural Principle (Prakṛti) and all its products are in themselves unconsciousness.

[2] Compound matter made up of the five forms of sensible matter (Bhūta) derived from the super-sensible Tanmātra.

the whole universe of objects and the former all empirical subjects.

In this system the nine Realities of the previous one are dealt with as follows: The place of the eternal, infinitely numerous selves or *Ātmans* is here taken by the eternal, infinitely numerous *Puruṣas* or Selves. But whereas the Vaiśeṣika *Ātman* is a Reality of which consciousness is not an essential, inalienable characteristic but is that in which Consciousness is only sustained, the Puruṣas are Pure Consciousness (Cit) Itself. All the other eight Realities of the former system are assigned to, and included within *Prakṛti*, the non-conscious Principle. The place of *Manas* is taken by the inner instrument or *Antah-karaṇa* [1] by which infinite experience is had; [2] and the place of the four *Paramāṇus* and *Ākāśa* is taken by the five *Tanmātras* or forms, of supersensible "Matter" or universals, which in combination produce the particulars which are sensible matter.[3] *Kāla* as "Time" has no objective existence apart from the Moment [4] or ultimate and absolute unit of change, namely, the instantaneous [5] transit of a *Tanmātra* from one point in space to the next succeeding point. The moment is real, being identical with the unit of change in phenomena and the Time-relation thus shares in this reality. *Dik* as the totality of position, or as an order of co-existent points, is like order in time relative to the understanding, being constructed on the laws of actual relations of position intuited by empirical consciousness. Spatial position results from the different relations in which the

[1] This term includes Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Manas which operate with the aid of the outer instruments, the senses, between which and the first two Manas is the link.

[2] Through a form of catalytic activity: that is by the reflection of consciousness on it.

[3] Bhūta.

[4] Kṣaṇa.

[5] Lotze says "Nothing could conceivably have the power to interpose an interval of time, vacant as in that case it would be between cause and consequence."

all-pervasive Ether or *Ākāśa* stands to the various bounded objects in it. The category of Causality is mediated through the scheme of order in time. In short Space, Time, and Causality are empirical relations of things having objective empirical reality but not independent of the things so related.[1] This standard teaches the efficiency, as inherent dynamism, of the world of things, since the Universe in all its forms is a manifestation of the Supreme Causal Energy-Substance Itself.

[1] See Dr. Seal's " Positive Sciences of the Hindus." 18—22.

IV

THE third stage opens with the question whether it is possible to reduce the two Realities to one. At this point reason alone fails to establish the necessity of any such resolution. Perceiver and Perceived can only be unified in something which transcends both and therefore all empirical experience is something alien to it. Reason may doubtless establish conclusions of some probability, but it cannot be shown with certitude that the ultimate Reality is single whilst we still rest in present world experience. If we assume one of two Realities only we may reasonably fix on Consciousness which is self-directing rather than on unconscious matter, but that there is only one remains to be proved. Supreme unitary experience is known only by consciousness divested of those conditioning limitations which are the very constituents of ordinary limited world experience, and which consciousness has thus expanded into that Immensity which is the meaning of the word Brahman. To know this One Reality directly is to be It. To know of It is learnt from those who have had unitary experience or have received the traditional teaching of such experiencers. Therefore it is that the Vedānta is essentially a *Śruti-pradhāna* or revealed *Śāstra* as opposed to a *Yukti-pradhāna* or reasoning *Śāstra*. That there is one ultimate Reality is known by most only secondarily as the revelation of the Seers or Ṛṣis who have "seen" this Truth, that is, have had direct[1] experience of it in *Samādhi* or ecstasy; and primarily by such direct experience which is open to all who

[1] Aparokṣajñāna.

are qualified and strive to attain it. Spiritual experience varies. It may be of a more or less dualistic character or (for so long as it endures) Monistic. The great Vedic saying (*Mahāvākya*) "That thou art" (Tat tvam asi) has thus received varying interpretations. The word *Tat* (That) in Sanskrit may stand for any case.[1] It may be read in the nominative, then meaning the identity of the Māyāvāda school or of Rāmānuja.[2] It may stand for other cases. *Tat* may mean *Tasmāt* as in Vallabha's school— "the one from Whom all proceeds." *Tat* may mean *Tasya*, as in Mādhva's school—"you are His."[3] "He is your Lord, you belong to, and depend on Him." Tat may mean *Tasmin*, *Tasmai* as in the case of other dualistic teachers (*Dvaitavādins*) and devotees (*Bhaktas*). "He it is in Whom you live, with whom you must unite through devotion or It is for Him you are." "For Him you are produced and for Him you must work being in His service." Out and out dualists like the Naiyāyikas say "You are not That (*Atat tvam asi*).

In the system taught by Rāmānuja, Nimbārka, Vallabha and Mādhva, the world in each case is real, but the Principle of which it is the manifestation is not independent and self-subsisting but dependent on or present in God as the *Ens Realissimum* in various ways, as either the Body of the Lord,[4] within His Lordship,[5] or as different[6] from the Lord as the

[1] See Bhāmatī Kalpataruparimala of Appaya Dīkshita sūtra 1. No school stands for the accusative or instrumental, each school puts forward its own Veda-mantra.

[2] Tvam = here Aṃśa, "You are part of the whole."

[3] Svāmitva-saṃbandha.

[4] Rāmānuja. God thus stands to the world in the same relation as man's soul to his body.

[5] Svāmitva-saṃbandha. The three real entities in this system are the Supreme who controls (Niyāmaka), the enjoyer (Bhoktri) and the objects of enjoyment (Bhogya). This system, in that it denies that God is a material cause of the universe, makes nearest approach to Christian theology. Union consists in making approach to and becoming like to God.

[6] Nimbārka.

possibility of distinct and dependent existence,[1] and yet not different as impossibility of independent existence,[2] or as one with God without recourse to any principle of *Māyā*,[3] such as Śaṃkara teaches, being a part of Him, as it were a spark thrown out by fire.[4] In all these systems[5] God is the *Ens Realissimum*, and all other realities are in one way or another dependent on Him, though independent of the mind of the creature who perceives them. Being part of the Lord they share in His Reality. For a knowledge of this ultimate Reality all depend on *Śruti* or *Veda*, the teaching of which is interpreted in various ways. The interpretations differ and so do the spiritual experiences, but they are none the less true for that. They have the reality of all actual experience and the truth of their stage of experiencing. In spiritual progress man passes from out the lower to the higher experience, that is, an experience of greater unity. The *standard* spiritual experience is that of the *Ṛṣis* as embodied in the Vedas.

[1] Para-tantra-sattā-bhāvah.

[2] Svatantra-sattā-bhāvah. Hence the doctrine is known as Bhedābheda "different yet not different." In the Śaiva-Tantras of the Kashmir school (such as Svacchanda-Tantra, Netra-Tantra and others) and other Śāstras, Unity (Abheda), Diversity (Bheda) and Diversity in Unity (Bhedābheda) are also taught. Every Indian Śāstra shares ideas to be found in others (See "Kashmir Śaivaism" by J. C. Chatterjee, 6.)

[3] Vallabha.

[4] Śaṃkarācārya denies absolute identity in this sense, for according to him the identity of the Supreme and individual self is only established after eliminating Māyā from the first and Avidyā from the second.

[5] The Western reader who desires a short summary of these different schools may consult V. S. Ghate "Le Vedānta E'tude sur les Brahma-sūtras."

V

THE third Standard or Vedānta consists of two main divisions. In the first is contained every school but that of Śaṃkarācārya. His Māyāvāda is the sole system of the second division. The ground of distinction consists in this, that he alone distinguishes between conventional and transcendental reality and truth. All Vedāntic schools are at one in taking up the analysis at the point at which it was left by the previous standard. They do not altogether discard its findings but hold that one of its two Realities, *Prakṛti* the Unconscious Form-principle, is not wholly independent of the other or Formless Consciousness or *Puruṣa*. Reality of the universe as the complete independence of the second Standard is denied, but another reality is given to the universe according to the first division, namely, the reality of that of which it is a part or with which it is connected. According to the Vedānta of the second division this reality of the universe is empirical only, and from the transcendental standpoint is denied. The Vedānta thus in the continuous approach to unity reduces the two Realities of the Second Standard to one Reality only.

The final step is taken by the Māyā-vāda Vedānta on its transcendental side. Empirically it admits a real material causation by *Māyā* as the Power of the Lord, who is Being-Consciousness-Bliss, as also the reality of the world of Mind and Matter. If the cause be real the products must be so. Matter is every whit as real as Mind, is not the creation of

the latter. The order of evolution of the *Jīva* or individual differs from that of the Sāṃkhya. But from the transcendental aspect, which is the standpoint of God, the world is without reality. The ultimate experience is not a world-experience. From the view-point of the former's persistence, what comes and goes is unreal. There is here no infringement of Realist doctrine which affirms that matter exists independently of mind. This is fully recognised. But it is clear that in a state which transcends both, that is, in which there is neither Matter nor Mind, the question whether matter exists independently of mind cannot arise. There is no denial of the realistic position because a further form of experience is assumed where Realism, Subjectivism and the like have from the nature of the case no meaning. "Realism" assumes both Mind and Matter. So does the Advaitin Vedāntist as regards World-experience. In the state which it assumes beyond World-experience the question does not arise.

It is this second division of the Vedāntic schools occupied by one System only, namely, the Monistic Māyā-vāda doctrine of Śaṃkarācārya which has given rise to the notion that the Hindus think the world is unreal, though the vast number of ordinary folk can have no such notion and every other Indian philosophical school combats his teaching on this point. By its followers this school is regarded as the crown of the whole series of thought-systems of which the Cārvākas and Lokāyatas, atheists and materialists, are at the other and the lowest end. The fundamental distinction between it and the other Vedāntic systems lies in this, that whereas they in ultimate resort give to the universe reality, though dependent on Brahman of which it is in one sense or other a part, in this last system the manifold of the universe consists only of "Names and Forms" [1], which are no true part of the one

[1] Nāma-rūpa.

and sole Reality or Brahman, whose presence gives the world the appearance of substantiality it possesses. They are the product of an inscrutable Power [1] of the Lord [2], who is Himself only the Immense or Brahman seen through the self-same veil of *Māyā*. In this way the sole Reality, in its sense of unchanging everlastingness, is affirmed.

The unreality of the world was the theme of some of the northern Buddhist schools,[3] who in this as in other matters deserted the path of good sense marked out by Brahmanism. The Tibetan word which answers to *Māyā*, when given the meaning of a magical and illusory show conjured up by a Magician, is *s-Gyuma*. It was Śaṃkarācārya's object to refute these Buddhists and he, in so doing, gave an interpretation of Vedānta which, whilst in opposition to Buddhistic Idealism on the empirical plane, in that it asserted that matter was every whit as real as the mind which perceived it (and was therefore not the creation of mind), yet conceded the "unreality" (as his school defines the term "Real") of the universe from the transcendental standpoint.

That there is some similarity between his doctrine and that of the Buddhist Māyā-vāda was long ago perceived, as in the Padma Purāna which speaks of his system as a "bad doctrine and a covert form of Buddhism." [4] It is however equally obvious that there are also fundamental differences between the two doctrines, some of which we will shortly examine. In the first place, Śaṃkarācārya held to the empirical reality of the world as existing independently of its percipient. Since the *Jīva* or Individual Centre produces his own *Saṃskāras* or tendencies, there is, it is true, a sense in which we each make our own world. But in another sense the world exists

[1] Acintya-Śakti. [2] Īśvara.

[3] See my Introduction to the Buddhist Tantra Śricakra-saṃbhara, Vol. VII, Tantrik Texts, p. xv.

[4] Māyā-vādam asacchāstram pracchannaṃ bauddhaṃ, etc.

independently, as the actualization of the collective *Saṃskāras*. He conceded empirical reality to the waking and dreaming states and even to illusion[1] (strictly so called) whilst they lasted. They are, they are "had" or experienced. Moreover the object as experienced is for such experience true. A vivid dream is for the dreamer indistinguishable from waking experience, the sense-data of which it revives and combines after its own mysterious fashion. All that Śaṃkarācārya said was that the reality of one state was "contradicted," that is corrected, by another, the dream by the waking state, illusion by normal experience. Was there then any state which was not contradicted or corrected by another? The answer was—Yes, there is—it is that which exists "uncontradicted" in all the "three times" (past, present and future). This is *Parā-Vīdyā*. The working of the senses and intellect are *Aparā-Vidyā*. These are neither contradicted nor even corrected by *Parā-Vidyā*. All contradiction is within the *Aparā-Vidyā* between attributes—the work of the senses and the intellect. But where these have no place and forms have no meaning, where duality does not exist—how can such Reality (itself uncontradicted) contradict? Contradiction is possible when opposite attributes are applied to a thing assumed to be the same. But the same relation does not exist between the two forms of Knowledge. They do not give opposite versions of one and the same Reality. There is and can be nothing in common between the formal Knowledge of *Aparā-Vidyā* and the attributeless Immense which is *Parā-Vidyā*. There is no sameness (in which all contradiction is based) between the qualified and un-qualified, between the formal and formless. Even if it be said that the basis is the same in both, they are indistinguishable. The self never contradicts the evidence of the senses and intellect. All contradiction is relative to these, its instruments but never with

[1] Prātibhāsika-sattā.

it. There are thus no two standards of truth.[1] The "Real" then is defined as that which is the eternally enduring and changeless, and this is the Supreme. It has been said too by some Western thinkers that conservation and persistence are the criterion of the Real.[2] This is the Hindu view. *Māyā*, the Principle of change, itself is not unreal any more than it is real. It is an inscrutable Mystery[3] which is neither. The world is metaphorically described as a dream,[4] as a mirage and a falsity. But to whom and when? Not to the world-experience to whom it is in fact real whatever his philosophy may be. In a state in which no world is experienced no question of its reality arises. There are in short two conditions, one in which there is world-experience, that is, the gross universe, and another or *Yoga*-experience in which there is either the subtle or ideal universe or no object at all. If we would compare the passing ephemeral world of Humanity with that state which is Divinity, the former has only the reality of its transient stage, whilst the latter is the stageless, timeless, and spaceless Unchangeable, which is alone (in this sense) the Real. To speak (as is commonly done) of an esoteric and exoteric doctrine is to mislead. The doctrine teaches the reality which is conventional or pragmatic and the reality which is the true and transcendental real.[5] Those who follow it, hold to both realities. The doctrine however

[1] See G. R. Malkani's "Method of Philosophy" (Indian Institute of Philosophy, Amalner), 28 *et seq.*

[2] As in physics by Professor Tait. Herbert Spencer on biological principles defined pleasure as the index of the unimpeded flow of vitality. Hence Supreme Bliss is absolutely unimpeded (Akhanda). Reality = Persistence = Deathlessness (Amṛtatva) = Bliss (Ānanda).

[3] Anirvacanīya. All systems ultimately get back to inscrutable Power (Acintyā-Śakti) "Omnia exeunt in mysterium" as the Schoolmen said.

[4] This description is common to many schools in the sense of non-lasting. So in the ślokas by the Sikh Guru Tegh Bahadur he says: "It is a dream. Know nothing is real but Him alone."

[5] Vyāvahārika-sattā, pāramārthika-sattā.

is a subtle one, only truly known to its *Sādhakas*.[1] That it is possible to hold to the reality of the world and yet follow this Monistic doctrine is shown by its *Bhaktas*,[2] for a *Bhakta* or worshipper must believe in the reality not only of the object of his worship but of himself and his worship and the World in and by which it is done. How to live in this and other antinomies is the secret of men of his temperament, capacity, and type.[3] It is not uncommonly but wrongly supposed that an adherent of Māyā-vāda Vedānta cannot be a devotee (*Bhakta*). This is not so, as an Indian author well points out[4] instancing the teaching of the *Śantas* of Mahārāṣtra and Jñāneśvara the author of the well-known Commentary on the Gīta, who was both a convinced Māyā-vādin and an ardent partisan of Bhakti. Numberless instances might be cited, as for instance the Śākta-Tantras which, though practical Scriptures of worship, teach Vedāntic Monism, or to be more accurate, " non-dualism (advaita = " not two "). What is affirmed is that there is no duality but what else there is is not affirmed. To the Transcendental neither oneness nor any other attribute strictly applies.

Probably it is a correct conclusion to say that Śaṃkara adjusted his exposition of Vedānta to meet the original Māyā-vāda of the Buddhists and so promulgated a presentment of *Māyā* different from that of the Buddhists,[5] and

[1] He who does Sādhana follows the religious discipline which (and not mere intellectual knowledge) qualifies one to be a Vedāntist.

[2] He who has Bhakti or devotion to God: a devotee.

[3] It is not everyone who is qualified (Adhikārī) for it. Each will follow that school of thought which suits him best. Each has its merits and its demerits, that of Śaṃkara included, since no intellectual system can truly present the alogical or reconcile the opposites.

[4] Ghate *Op cit.* " Remarquons quil est d'ailleurs possible de conserver la bhakti sans rénoncer á la doctrine de l'unité absolue ni á as consequence la doctrine de la Māyā." XXVI.

[5] The term is used by other schools as meaning the inscrutable power of God whereby He is enabled to do that which seems impossible to us.

therefore without abandonment of what he believed to be essential principles of Brahmanism. In fact he was by tradition a worshipper of the Supreme Mother or Śakti whose *Śrī-Yantra*[1] may sometimes be seen in Vedāntic Maths.

After all what does the doctrine amount to? The empirical reality of the world is fully affirmed; that is, as long as one is in the world, both mind and its object are equally real. Objects are realities independent of the experiencer. The qualities of things exist in them and are perceived. The limited Knower, in so far as he is limited, is as much of a product as limited Matter is. If our experience tells us that we see a world of objects we in fact do so. Commonsense cannot proclaim otherwise. But the next question is—is it or is it not the fact that there is an experience for which the world does not exist? The answer is in the affirmative, given on the authority of *Śruti*—which the West calls Revelation—but which may be perhaps better described by what is there called Spiritual Experience. This is not for the Hindu *any* spiritual experience but the *standard* experience of the Vedic Seers. That experience may be had by any man who strives for it, not necessarily now in this life but in some stage of his future self-evolution. Is this last experience itself corrected? Those who have it say that it is not. It is a state, permanent, without change, in all the "three times," past, present and future. If the true Real is (as this system affirms) That which changelessly and for ever endures, then This alone is True Reality and all else *relative* to it is unreality. It seems to be thought that its adherents take the world to be unreal in the epistemological idealistic (one has to take breath with such long words) sense. This is not so. They say in effect "we are in a world which to us *is* real, but we aspire to the attainment of a state known

[1] A diagram used in worship. See Frontispiece.

by our Seers, in which the world of things and pains, the world of contingencies, the world of opposites is not. *Relative* to that, our experience, though in present fact real, is ultimately unreal. The reality of the world is a pragmatic truth."

VI

SPEAKING in a general way we may convert the second Standard or Sāṃkhya system into the Śākta doctrine of Power or Śakti by substituting for the infinite *Puruṣas* one Śiva, and for *Prakṛti*, Śiva's Power or Śakti, and then affirmating that Śiva and Śakti are not, as the Sāṃkhya says, two independent Realities but one Reality in twin aspect, namely, static and kinetic. The Sāṃkhyan Puruṣa is changeless Consciousness (Cit). So is Śiva. *Prakṛti* is as unlimited cause the principle of Change, and as effect limited changing forms, which are, as effects, modifications of their cause. Śakti or Power is that which, in itself unchangeable, produces from out itself as Material Cause the world of change. Common language speaks of the Power *of* Śiva but strictly Power or Śakti *is* Śiva. When the one Reality or Brahman is regarded as the Changeless Consciousness it is called Śiva: when it is regarded as the Power of Consciousness or Consciousness-Power which projects the Universe from out itself, it is called Śakti. It is fundamental doctrine that there is no Śiva without Śakti, nor Śakti without Śiva. But this substantial unity with diversity of aspect involves a changed view of the nature of the cosmic process. In Sāṃkhya there are two Realities, in Śākta doctrine there is only one with dual aspect. According therefore to Sāṃkhya, evolution is from and of *Prakṛti* who is distinct from the *Puruṣas* but associated with them. The *Puruṣa* is the efficient and *Prakṛti* the material cause, the

two causes existing not in one but in two entities. In Śākta doctrine, as Śiva and Śakti are one, it follows that the world is evolved from, and by the one Reality, Śiva-Śakti, that is by a Reality which in one aspect does not change (for Consciousness never does so) and in another aspect is the Cause of Change and Change itself. As we are here dealing with the Power-aspect of Consciousness to recollect and imagine forth the Universe, we may for convenience speak only of Power or Śakti, if we are careful to remember that Śakti is only the active power of actionless Consciousness (Śiva). The Śākta Darśana reminds us of this fact when it says that the universe is the product of *Cit-Śakti* and *Māyā-Śakti*, that is, Cit or Consciousness in its aspect as power and efficient cause and Māyā-power or material cause. Cit-Śakti like the Sāṃkhyan-Puruṣa is by its presence the efficient cause and yet the actionless Witness, of all which goes on. What happens is by and in its aspect as Māyā-Śakti which, like Prakṛti, is the ultimate Substance-Energy out of and through which the universe is evolved. There is thus one ultimate enduring absolute Reality of which all other relative realities as Mind, Life, Matter are transient forms. The world is real and must be so, for we are here viewing the problem from the world standpoint. The question of its reality only arises when the problem is viewed from the other end.

If we put this doctrine into modern form avoiding all technical terms it comes to this. Persistence is the criterion of Reality. The ultimate Reality is Eternal Being-Consciousness which in itself is changeless. Consciousness whether transcendent or immanent in the world never moves. If in the world-process it appears to do so, this is due to the play of mind of which it is the basis. But this Consciousness is nevertheless a true efficient cause, that is, one which moves without itself being moved. As such it is consciousness-power.

But what is the patient and the material cause in the Cosmic Substance? It can be only the one same Reality for there is no other. But what is this Substance-Energy which is the material cause of the universe? The answer depends on the side from which we view it. If we look at it from the other-world aspect, that is, the Reality which we call Power as it is *in Itself*, then the answer is that it is Consciousness.[1] If on the other hand we look at it on the world-side then it is the Root-Substance-Energy of the universe which appears as Mind and Matter. That root as cause is neither one nor the other but the Power to produce in itself and to appear as both, when Consciousness on the arising remembrance of world-enjoyment becomes outer turned (*Bahir-mukhī*) and sees, in its gradual awakening to the world, the "This" (*Idaṃ*) or Universe. Why and how? In consciousness there is the seed of power to manifest itself as object to limited centres in it. That seed is the collectivity of all Tendencies (*Saṃs-kāra*) towards life and form acquired in an infinite number of past universes. In short it is the nature of this ultimate Reality to manifest itself. How? Consciousness has two attitudes, inner (*Antar-mukhī*) and outward turned (*Bahir-mukhī*). In the first and in its fullest sense there is an experience in which there is no subject or object. In the second the object or "This" (*Idaṃ*) is gradually experienced at first as part of and then outside the Self. There is a polarisation in unitary consciousness of "I" (*Ahaṃ*) and "This" (*Idaṃ*), the experiencing subject and his world. The latter is as real as the former which perceives it but since both are transient and change, their reality is relative. Full, timeless, spaceless, endless Persistence is the Absolutely Real which is the Supreme Experience.

I have stated the matter in the simplest way hoping to recur to it in a discussion on the term Śakti or Power. The Advaita, Śaiva and Śākta-*Śāstras* however explain it in

[1] Cidrūpiṇi Śakti.

great detail and complication and in technical terms of their own. It what are called Thirty-six *Tattvas* or stages of evolution of Consciousness into Mind and Matter, their Scriptures show the origin of even Puruṣa and Prakṛti. This scheme I have explained elsewhere.[1] These are not, in such case, the ultimate reality but merely one of the principles (*Tattva*) or stages in a line of Consciousness which extends upwards beyond them.[2] Puruṣa and Prakṛti *Tattvas* merely mark the stage when the "This" (*Idaṃ*) or object of the "I" (*Ahaṃ*) is thrown out of the Self and becomes an outer thing distinct from it. In other words they are the immediate Root of Empirical reality but that Root is itself grounded in the soil of Consciousness which is ultimately *Saṃvit* or the Supreme Experience Itself.

The relation of this system to that of Māyā-vāda Vedānta will be more fully explained in a discussion of what the Śākta understands by *Māyā*. Both are Monistic or rather non-dualistic (Advaita-vāda). The Sammohana-Tantra thus gives high praise to Śaṃkarācārya as an incarnation of Śiva (Śaṃkara) and describes his four disciples as the four *Mahā-preta*, who support the Throne of the Mother of the World, for such is *Māyā-Śakti* to the Śākta. She in one aspect is the ultimate Changeless Reality. She in another aspect does evolve into and appear in the forms of the World. These are in their essence the enduring Real that is Herself, and as forms of Herself the passing yet real objects of experience. There is thus a real yet transient diversity in a real and enduring unity. Doubtless this doctrine does not explain how logically God can be changeless and yet change. But the *Māyā* of Śaṃkarācārya, which is neither real nor unreal, also runs counter to logic. The highest truth is alogical.

[1] See "Śakti and Śākta," and "Garland of Letters."

[2] Through Śuddha-vidyā or Saḍ-vidyā, Īśvara, Sadāśiva or Sādākhyā, and Śiva-Śakti-Tattvas.

Better the Śākta says accept both the reality of the changing World which is imposed by *Māyā* on us in our ordinary experience, as also the reality of the Changeless which is experienced in Yoga, a state free of the coercive effect of *Māyā*, which is Mahā-māyā Herself. No logical argument will solve the Problem. In spiritual experience the Problem disappears. And so Śiva says in the Kulārṇava-Tantra (1-110) "Some desire Dualism (*Dvaita-vāda*), others Monism (*Advaita-vāda*). Such however know not My Truth which is beyond both Monism and Dualism (*Dvaitādvaita-vivarjita*).

VII

An examination of all the Indian scriptures of worship leads to the same conclusions. Some are philosophically related to the first division of Vedānta and some to the second in various ways and degrees. The Śākta-Tantras are a form of Advaita-Vedānta. All worshippers are practical realists, whatever their doctrine may be. This does not prevent a Śākta from holding to the doctrine that the Supreme Experience is not an experience by a limited knower of a world of limited objects, external to a plurality of selves, themselves mutually exclusive. He prays to the Mother knowing that the form of the One as Mother is that in which She appears to him.

To sum up: No Brahmanical system countenances any form of subjectivism. All teach the empirical reality of the world and the perception of the physical non-mental qualities of things therein. All but one give it, besides this reality, an ultimate reality either as being the combination of several or of two everlasting Realities, or as in some sense a part of the one ultimate Reality or Brahman in its aspect as Power. We have thus Pluralism, Dualism and Monism in all its shades. That one exception says that the universe is ultimately neither real *nor unreal*, nor partly one and partly the other, but an inscrutable mystery which we must accept if we would hold to the changelessness and partlessness of God—which all admit. For only in this way, even though it be formally, is the Reality beyond Reason truly expressed in that high manifestation of Itself which is Reason.

Indian doctrine is realistic firstly in so far as it affirms the independent reality of objects in our daily experience, wherein the percipient is in presence of a reality existing independently of, and distinct from, the *Vṛtti* or modifications of the Mind. This we have seen. It is secondly realistic in its treatment of the nature of that perception; thirdly because the sphere of reality is more extensive than that which is generally allowed in the philosophic West, and because experience in time is only a section of what is an eternal process without beginning or end. The first point has been sufficiently established. I will now add some further observations on the second point and deal shortly with the third.

VIII

To deal fully with the nature of perception would take me beyond the scope of this paper. It will be discussed when treating of Śakti or Power as Mind. It is necessary however to make some further reference to it here from Vedāntic standpoint for the doctrines held are more thoroughly realistic than those of many Western schools.

Perception has not only a real object independent of the percipient (thus rejecting the Berkeleyan dictum *esse est percipi*), but (as already stated) the physical qualities we perceive are, according to the Indian view, in the object itself. No distinction is made of primary, secondary or tertiary qualities. The first two are in the object as well as in the mind, and the last has an objective basis in the Universal Mind of which the individual mind is only a special case. A so-called secondary quality is not a mere mental impression in the percipient. It is "out there" in the object perceived. Its[1] real, in the sense of basic quality, is quality as the Universal apprehended by the Universal and Collective Mind. Its quality as a variable sense-particular is perceived by the individual mind according to its manner of perceiving. This quality is therefore "there" in the object even when there is no individual mind perceiving it. For this Universal is always "sensed" by the Collective or Cosmic Mind. It has

[1] I here answer, from the Vedāntic standpoint, some queries put in R. F. A. Hoernle's "Studies in Contemporary Metaphysics," 104 where the question is discussed.

not however all the qualities which different percipients see in it from different points of view and at the same time. For, in this sense, individual sensation is "private." Indian thought does not hold that the object as perceived is an exact copy of the object as it is in itself. Though the object is always one and the same, all do not perceive it in one and the same way. Both mind and its object are active in perception and affect the one the other. The mind brings its own quota to the act of experience. What is this? These are the individual *Saṃskāras* or tendencies and aptitudes produced by former experience in this and previous lives. As the product of such previous lives they are innate. The variety of sensation is thus due to the imported subjective element or individual *Saṃskāra* and not attributable to the object. It is the percipient's manner of perceiving it. The Universals of *Tanmātra*, the Generals of what is apprehended as the sense particulars, are always objectively present. Hence sensation is both "private" through the individual mind and common through the Cosmic Mind. The Hindus therefore are more realistic than those who distinguish between the qualities as primary and so forth and make sensation merely "private."

The basis of these principles may be found in the doctrine that the quality of the object which is sensed and the constitution of the sense which perceives it are the same.

The same forces which go to make the subtle mental object also go to make the sense which perceives it. The gross material object is derived from a combination of the subtle elements. One and the same Causal Stress in the original Substance-Energy (Śakti) phenomenally appears as the sense on the one hand and the matter and its qualities on the other. The knowing is of like by like. The causal aspect of an Universal is a stress or motion (Spanda) in Universal Substance without reference to any percipient organ at all. From the phenomenal aspect the Universal relates

to a percipient organ evolved co-ordinately with it which may be either absolute or relative, universal or individual. The object is apprehended as it is with all its qualities, subject to the particular *Śaṃskāras* or mental tendencies which merely affect the manner of knowing them. Western science thinks that it is concerned with a real world which persists independently of our experience but then, as has been pointed out,[1] we are committed to a division between the contents of immediate experience and its causes which division has become deeper and more impassable with every advance in physics and physiology. For the physical causes of perception are now inferred but not perceived. The real material world has been driven into the unseen and now lies (it is said) hidden behind the screen of its own effects. Perception becomes a remote psychological effect of a long train of causes, physical and physiological, originally set in motion by the external thing but in no way resembling it. It dissolves the thing perceived into a remote reality which is neither perceived nor perceivable: as in the case of the reduction of matter to the structure and motions of invisible homogeneous electric units. Thus we perceive for example in an object impenetrability, density, weight, configuration, colour, taste and so forth whereas we are told that the object is really constituted of vortices in homogeneous ether which is not matter at all. It turns the world of common sense into an illusion and on this illusion it rests its case.[1]

According to the Indian view we *do* perceive things as they phenomenally are. The physical causes of perception are perceived. What is not perceived and is not the object of any percipient is the creative activity of and in the fundamental Substance-Energy which is phenomenally presented to us as mind and senses on the one hand and objects on the other.

[1] Balfour. Gifford Lectures (1914), 159.

As sensible experiences do undoubtedly exist, so there must be, other than and outside of ourselves as individual experiencers, things by which such experiences are produced. It is not the fact that what really exist are only our impressions and ideas. The sensible world exists apart from, and other than, our experience. The *Śāstra* puts forward many reasons in support of these commonsense beliefs.[1] Thus we deny the existence of things perceived in dreams precisely because we are certain of the existence of things experienced on waking. If the sensible did not exist then dreams, which are the repetition of things already experienced when waking as existing outside, would be impossible. If sensible things had no existence of their own there is no reason why we should not see them at will and continuously just as we can have our own ideas at will and for so long as we like. But on the contrary we perceive sensible things only so long as they remain in relation with us and this is because they exist independently of us. So again we distinguish between right perceptions and hallucinations, which we could not do if sensible things had no objective existence: all of which arguments are grounded on good realistic common sense with nothing " dreamy " about them.

These teachings are not merely confined to the Standard itself but are parts of the other Standards also, subject to the necessary modifications involved in the fact that advance is made to a new Standard. It is obvious that the teachings of all the Standards are not in all respects the same, otherwise there would not be several Standards. Nevertheless there are teachings which are common, correspondences, and similarities. The second Standard takes up the matter (whatever it be) at the point at which it was left by the previous Standard and carries it further. Thus both the first and second Standard treat Consciousness as distinct from Mind, but the first regards

[1] See " Hindu Realism," 21 *et seq.*

it as a property of the Self and the second as the Self's essential characteristic. The first Standard does not recognise the faculties of Mind and which the second Standard calls 'Judgment' [1] 'Self-arrogation,' [2] as substantive principles at all. It would regard them as attributes [3] of the Self. Mind as Manas is in the first Standard a substantive principle but it is atomic [4], that is without magnitude. It is so to say a point at which, and through which, connection is established between the Self and objects for the purposes of experience. Hence all experience is necessarily serial. It is like a tap through which all experience whether internal or external must flow. The functions of Manas are generally recognised as the same. But the whole "Inner Instrument [5] as assumed by Sāṃkhya and Vedānta will better explain life by their respective activities than the simple atomic *Manas* of the first Standard. Just as the senses are of the same nature as the *Paramāṇus* or originators of the qualities which are perceived by means of them, so in Sāṃkhya and Vedānta the senses and their subtle objects [6] have a common origin. These minima of sensible matter are in the first Standard non-mental, in the others they are the universals or generals of the sense-particulars which by the addition of mass appear as such particulars in the form of gross matter. In a general way there are similarities especially in fundamental matters as regards the theory of Perception, such as the reality of the object with its own physical qualities and the like. On the other hand principles peculiar to the system have their modifying effect. Thus in the Advaita-Vedānta Consciousness is the one

[1] Buddhi. [2] Ahaṃkāra. [3] Guṇa.

[4] Aṇu; in Vedānta Aṇu is created and therefore cannot be partless.

[5] Antah-karaṇa involving Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Manas.

[6] Tanmātra which in Sāṃkhya derive with senses from Ahaṃkāra and in Vedānta the senses and their gross objects both derive from the Āpancīkṛta-Tanmātra.

Immanent Reality, and it is the discovery of the essential identity between Mind and its material object which makes the substance of perception according to Vedānta. The main realistic position is maintained throughout the standards for all empirical experience.

IX

As regards the third point it is to be noted that there are many more Realities than those experienced by the gross mind. The Real as object is not merely the material as that term is ordinarily understood. There is the world of the Subtle Real which is the object of the mind which had developed to that stage in which it can be experienced. The [1] originating sources of the sensible are themselves supersensible realities. These constitute, besides the sensible, other worlds which are supersensible. A world or sphere of existence is nothing but a condition of the experience on the part of experiencing Beings; and therefore must be as many varieties of worlds as there are fundamentally different types of beings. In the sensible world are a great variety of beings who form a number of orders and grades. These grades form a series, at one extremity of which lies that order of beings whose experiences are the most limited. From this grade upwards to man there is an ascending series, each successive order of which has experiences wider in range than those of the beings of the preceding order. Man stands at the head of this series. But there is no reason to suppose that he is the absolutely highest order. In fact he is limited and helped by Unseen Powers, Beings more powerful than he who exist in unseen forms. If what is super-sensible in man can exist in an unseen form after death, why not other Beings who habitually exist in such forms? And if these Beings exist in unseen or supersensible forms, then there are also states of existence or worlds

[1] See "Hindu Realism," 101.

which are also supersensible and quite as real, if not in a sense more so than the gross world of ordinary experience.[1] Experience reaches up to that of the Cosmic Mind which apprehends the world of universals as they exist in themselves.[2] The *Saṃsāra*, or wandering or world of birth and death, is thus constituted of different orders of experiencing beings, of which man is one, and there are worlds of experience beyond the *Saṃsāra* from which there is no return for the Beings therein. These supersensible worlds [3] are as real as the material and as much the body of and in correspondence with the Metaphysical Real as is the latter.[4]

The stages here are *lived* through as states in each of which nearer approach is (through the transformation of the experiencer and with him his world) made to That (*Tat*) which is the full and perfect Real, which stages at length pass and expand into It as that Whole or *Pūrṇa* in which all forms of determined experience are had, which sums them all up in Itself and which transcends them all. The stages may be thought of and in some degree described, but are in themselves the actual experience lived through of determined being evolving into the *Pūrṇa*, the Full or Whole. The stage

[1] See "Hindu Realism," 101, 102.

[2] This is not the Supreme but the Hiraṇyagarbha Consciousness for which experience the Universals are still mysterious stresses in Consciousness, the real nature of which is only known to the Lord Himself (Īśvara).

[3] Each of these has its inhabitants or Experiencers. The Lokas or Worlds of experience are fourteen, seven above and seven below; supernormal, normal and subnormal. Thus also the Śaiva systems speak of various classes of beings (Jīvas) such as Mantras, Maheśvaras, Mantreśvaras, Vidyeśvaras and so forth, who exist in the descending and ascending stages of involution and evolution which are called the 36 Tattvas.

[4] H. Keyserling dealing with the Indian outlook in his Das Reisetagebuch eines Philosophen, 3rd Ed., says at p. 86: Ich weiss dass das Psychische ein ebenso objectives ist wie das materielle, dass Vorstellungen ein genau so entsprechender leib von metaphysisch-wirklichem sein Konnen wie feste Korper, dass es uberall moglich ist im Prinzip von Geiste her den stoff zu beeinflussen.

is not a matter of subjective information but is objectively lived. It is not a mere matter of argument but is a transformed life. The Self gives testimony of Itself in various ways to the Self in the process or movement of the Self to the Self. That testimony again is not something communicated from one to another. It is a realisation of the self as the Self in each of its grades of manifestation. "To know is to be"; a Vedāntic maxim which has application not only as a description of the highest end but to every stage on the way thither.

X

HERE we touch upon the practical bent of the Indian mind and its craving for reality which makes it satisfied with nothing but the most real foundation for its knowledge. To truly know is *to be*. I do not intend to work out the matter now as it forms a distinct subject with which I hope to deal on some future occasion. It is this: the teachings of Religion which Philosophy supports are not mere speculation. The knowledge of plurality is based on actual experience, that is, of the senses and reasoning thereon. If the reality and nature of the world requires to be established it is done here. But what of supersensible matters?[1] Their nature and existence is not the subject of mere speculative reasoning which can at best establish a conclusion of probability only. Reasoning on such matters gives no certitude that we perceive the Real and the True. The warrant of authority again is actual experience (*Anubhava*) which is not a specific form of proof co-ordinate with other forms but the basis of all these—the Self itself[2] of a suprasensible kind. Just as the physical sense-faculties are extended by the use of scientific instruments, so by *Yoga* there is an extension of natural faculties which gives experience on a plane beyond that of the ordinary daily earth experience. This Yoga-experience is of varying degrees leading up to Īśvara-experience or that of the Lord Himself who

[1] Atīndriya.

[2] See G. R. Malkani "Method of Philosophy" criticising Professor Zimmerman's article "Truth and its criterion in Śaṃkarācārya's Vedānta" in Indian Philosophical Review.

is the Great Yogī. If then the Vedānta affirms that notwithstanding apparent plurality all is one—"All this universe is Brahman"—it is not merely because argument leads to a Monistic conclusion (it may perhaps as well lead to the contrary), but because that unity has actually and really been experienced directly by those who affirm it. The truth of the doctrine is accepted by others on the faith of this experience which they accept. This is the twofold sense of Veda.

Two points are apt to be overlooked nowadays owing to Western influence. The first is that the Vedānta is not a mere system of philosophy in the modern Western sense. It is based on Revelation (*Śruti*). If not so based, it is worth no more and may be worth less than any other particular philosophy, seeing that it, in some respects, at any rate in its Monistic form, runs counter to our sense-experience. The second point is that it is not to be understood by mere reading and study. He who would understand it must first worship and self-discipline himself by the Vedāntic *Sādhana*. The notion that a man if clever enough can understand anything is not an Indian one. His must be not only a good mind but a pure and good character. Such an one alone will act rightly and will understand the Real. Understanding it, he will worship the Ground in its form. The Hindu may be right or wrong but he is obviously a greater "realist" when he holds that matter is not only an independent reality, but it is perceived as it is with its qualities, than even the modern scientist who makes matter as presented an illusory appearance produced by some reality no doubt, but one which is wholly different from what we perceive. To the former present experience is real but still more so is the persistent Ground of it, attainable by a practical and real transformation of the Self. From whatever point of view we examine the matter we find a realistic standpoint. One is at a loss to know how the notion that the Hindus were non-realists arose. For

however Māyā-vāda may be ill-understood it is in no case a philosophic system adopted by all India. Perhaps some may have confused the questions whether the world is real, and whether in action due regard is had to the realities or circumstances under which it is to be taken. A man who in his actions does not take sufficient account of the real facts of the world is sometimes said to have no sense of reality. This may doubtless in some cases be mere foolishness. In others when noble ends are pursued in disregard of the sordid "realisms" of the day, the world is the better for it. However this be, I merely note the possible ambiguity and do not further discuss a question which has no bearing on my present subject.

Whatever be Indian capacity in ordinary affairs, the Indian mind has done its thinking with a practical end in view. Philosophy was not pursued from a mere curious desire to know, to found "systems," earn academic applause, and so forth but with a view to realise the practical end of all material being or Happiness. Every system posits that as its aim. The world and material ends are real, but spiritual experience is the truly Real. Philosophy worked hand in hand with religion as in Europe during the Middle Ages, though it was never *Meretrix Theologorum*. The Vedānta is really an Indian Scholasticism based on *Shruti*, or what Westerns call Revelation, though we must not confound the two. There is in fact scarcely any important technical term of Western philosophy or religion which can be used without some qualification. Rather we should say Philosophy and Religion were not severed, the fundamental principle of Vedānta being to sever absolutely nothing. All knowledge was considered in relation to the whole. The notion held by some in the West that Religion and Science and Philosophy are antagonistic was unknown: such notion having arisen in the West for historical reasons, Religion there being identified with Christian Dogma. Indian Religion teaches that Absolute

Bliss is to found only in That which is beyond the contingent world of opposites which is unimpeded and full Being. It not only so teaches but gives out the practical means or *Sādhana* whereby this state of Bliss may be attained which is the true and real.

The only fruitful path is that of real striving, or *Sādhana*. Any *Sādhana* sincerely and diligently pursued will secure its fruit. The fruit of the highest *Śākta-Sādhana* (for *Sādhana* may be of various kinds) is the realisation of its fundamental *Śruti*, "All this is verily Brahman" (*Sarvaṃ Khalvidaṃ Brahma*). "This" is the Universe. Brahman the Immense or Immeasurable is as Power (*Mahā-śakti*) its cause.

That Power is real and so is the universe which is for the worshipper Its Body or Form.[1]

For if the material cause is real so is the effect. He affirms "I am real as body" for Matter is a form of the Great Power or Śakti. "I am real as Mind"; for mind is another form of the same Power. *Sa'haṃ* "She I am" refers to the Mother of the universe. Again "I am the Real as Unchanging Consciousness vehicled by Mind and Body and transcending it." The forms come and go re-entering and again reissuing from the *Paramārtha* or Supreme Reality. *So'haṃ* "He I am", *Śivo'ham* "Śiva I am" the Śākta also says, when speaking of the *Kutastha*-Śiva or Enduring Real. Those who thus worship Power become "Power."

Though the unreality of the universe is spoken of because of its being a passing thing, it is yet to be also remembered that the world-process is according to Indian ideas an eternal one. The world is not something which appears and is gone

[1] A correspondent has asked me how this view differs from Viśiṣṭādvaita-Vedānta. It differs in this that according to Rāmānuja, mind and matter not merely seem to be but are the body of the Lord distinct from Him; whilst in Śākta doctrine, the world is the body of the Lord so long as it lasts, but ultimately there is only the one Ātmā in which mind and matter are merged.

for ever. It reappears eternally. It is not the first and only one produced, but merely one of a beginningless and endless series.[1] The manifestation of the universe is thus an eternal process. It appears and disappears. This is the pulsing movement as the systole and diastole of the Cosmic Heart as Divine Power. Nothing can come from nothing, and something cannot vanish into nothing. It arises from the seed of Tendency (*Saṃskāra*) which is in the Great Womb (*Mahāyoni*) and is there in a potential state. The seed sprouts as the great *Aśvattha* Tree which is the manifested universe. It dies down again into the seed of potentiality to reappear again in endless succession. This appearance and reappearance is the *Saṃsāra* or the constant "moving on" or wandering in the worlds of birth and death.[2] There is thus an eternal series of Experiencers.

Man breathes forth and inbreathes. What is done "here" (*Iha*) is done "there" (*Amutra*). The Universe pulses forth and rests, and pulses back again. Breathing is a microcosmic representation of the macro-cosmic process.[3] And so the duration of the life of the highest being in the hierarchy of Being or Brahmā, for whose experience the universe as a whole exists, is the duration of that particular Universe. The duration of Brahmā's life is that of one outgoing

[1] For the argument of this point, common to all the three Standards, see "Hindu Realism," 95.

[2] Called in the West re-incarnation. Transcendentally there is no *re*-incarnation. Empirically also *re*-incarnation is not an exact term. In say a series of three, viz., X—Y—Z, the first X does not *re*-incarnate as X but as Y nor Y as Y but as Z. The forms change but there is yet a continuity which is the cause of Z affirming that *he* was Y and before that X and so on. The Ātman being eternal has no real birth or death. It is merely related to and dissociated from a body.

[3] As to the charge of Anthropomorphism which with Animism stampedes so many I will deal in another place. In Prāṇāyāma or Breath-control, appearance, stay, and disappearance are Pūraka, Kuṃbhaka, Recaka.

breath[1] of Kāla[2] which is objectively a beat of Cosmic Time. Time is no magnitude for the Supreme. For Him the Immeasurable there is no measurer. But Time is attributed to His appearances. The Universe is dissolved and at rest for a period of the same duration when it appears again with, what the Pāncarātra-Tantra calls, the "Wheel of Dawn."

Ancient Hindu teaching is thus to be found in the following words of Professor Huxley:[3] "The faith which is born of knowledge finds its object in an eternal order bringing forth ceaseless change, through endless time, in endless space: the manifestations of Cosmic Energy alternating between phases of potentiality and spheres of explication. It may be as Kant suggests, every cosmic Magma predestined to evolve into a new world has been the no less pre-destined end of a vanished predecessor." For Cosmic Energy we may read Divine Power or *Daivī-Śakti*: for phase of potentiality *Pralaya*, when the world exists potentially in the Womb of the Immense:[4] and for sphere of explication, *Sṛṣti* or production, therefrom.[5] The Power, the Process and the Result are real. Śaṃkarācārya from his transcendental viewpoint calls the world "false," but to the Śākta, and from his standpoint, it is real. It is the field of action and liberation "*Mokṣāyate saṃsāra.*" "The world is made the seat of liberation as the Kulārṇava-Tantra says—To him Māya is not unreal (*Avastu*).

[1] Niśvāsa.

[2] Kāla, here the Time-aspect of the Supreme. Then follows the Great Dissolution (Mahā-pralaya). See Introduction to Prapancasāra-Tantra 8. Tantrik Texts, Vol. 3, Ed. A. Avalon and Schrader, *Op. cit.* 27.

[3] Evolution and Ethics, pp. 8, 9.

[4] Brahman.

[5] In the same way Herbert Spencer speaks of the alternating states of homogeneity (that is Pralaya when all is undifferentiated mass) Heterogeneity (that is Srṣti when the generals and their particulars are produced) a state of relative stability (Sthiti) and then a lapse into homogeneity again (Pralaya).

It is not a mere mist of ignorance connected, yet unconnected, with the Brahman and which screens the Real. It is an eternal Reality or Power appearing as the passing and changing worlds. For it is the World-Mother who is the Great Power Herself. What is unreal (in the sense of passing) are the Names and Forms which are yet, so long as they last as the objects of perception, also real. And so the Śākta can say of himself that not only in Spirit, but in Mind and Body, *Sa'ham*, "She I am," "I am the Real and the Power of the Real."

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

FOREWORD

I TAKE the opportunity given by the publication of the second volume of this series to deal with a criticism on the first which affects all. I am therein described as an "adherent" of "Śāktaism" and as "commending" the acceptance of such doctrine to others. It is true that I think that this doctrine has been misunderstood and has been the subject (on the whole) of unjust judgments. I think also that it is, in its highest presentment, a grand and inspiring system (by which I do not mean that it is the only one, or that it is without defect); otherwise probably I should not have concerned myself with it. I desire however to say here that I do not write as an "adherent" of this, or any other philosophical system or religious sect whatever, but as a free-thinker and free-companion: "Neither Burgundian nor Armagnac." *Nullius addictus jurare in verba magistri.* But, as I have said elsewhere in describing *Śākta* teaching and Vedānta I write from that standpoint. Nor do I, *pace* my critic, make light of, and still less deny, the utility of Reason or its efficacy to give us the truth within the system of which it is a part. But the Truth as it lies beyond that system is directly realised as it is in Itself, that is beyond Mind not by Reason but by a Full Experience (*Samādhi*) which is not a "sleep" except to the gross world and is an awakening in the supersensible world. Those who talk in this fashion show want of knowledge of their own Scripture. There the highest praise is bestowed on reason. See for instance the Chapter on *Vicāra* in the Yoga-Vāsiṣṭha. Moreover Vedānta does not accept

the intuitionalism which discards intellect. On the contrary the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad says that the Self must be thought upon and deeply pondered (*Mantavyo, Nidi-dhyāsiṭavyah*). What else is the meaning of *Jñāna-Yoga*?

Nor, notwithstanding my personal views of the Scripture, do I "commend" it to anyone. What others choose to believe is their affair in which I have no desire to interfere unasked. One of the many notions, for which we are indebted to the profound thought of India, is the fundamental doctrine of Competency or *Adhikāra* which I hope to make the subject of one of this series of volumes. That Doctrine involves this—that there is a mental as well as physical food—a mental as well as physical stomach and digestion.

Talking of food it is curious to note here (see Professeur Picard "La Science Moderne" 245) that all the characteristics of living Matter such as its equilibrium, chemical and anatomic organisation are now regarded by the great majority of Biologists as secondary qualities in comparison with nutrition which is considered by them to be the essential attribute of Life. It is noteworthy that in this ancient Indian doctrine also, emphasis is laid on the physiology of Nutrition, all the main *Vāyus* except *Udāna* being concerned with this function of "living" substance.

Indirectly and on the whole, man tends to the Truth, but directly and immediately what he holds to or seeks is not the truth, but the truth which he *wants*. It is the cravings of his psychical being which he satisfies. This is the meaning of the phrase "will to believe". If there be a really detached search for truth it is excessively rare. He is a foolish and inconsiderate man who would deprive others of the meal of food, material or intellectual, which satisfies them, though it may not please him. A celebrated German Theosophist was I believe commonly wont to commence his addresses with the observation "I am now going to tell you a story". Well

I also am telling a story. It interests me but I am the last person to persuade others to accept it if they be themselves indifferent or unwilling. I am not seeking "converts" nor trying to "prove" that any one is "wrong". If, in answering an internal urge to write, I can please others besides myself so much the better. My account of the main Indian Concepts may be of use either to those who are disposed to think the same way, or to those who simply want to know the facts. If the books are of use to any one in either way that is enough for me. Should anyone think that they are of no use, that also is enough; for I will not dispute the point with him. If his own theories held in good faith really satisfy him, I will certainly not "commend" to him any other. Each will answer the speculative questions which all ask, particularly to-day, according to their general theoretic views, the product of their intellectual make-up and temperament. As regards this, all that is required is sincerity, good faith and that openness of mind which is necessary for a progressive self-development.

But all can with confidence become adherents of the Religion of Health, procuring it for themselves and others and relieving their sufferings. Health = Hale = Whole or *Pūrṇa.* To be *whole* physically, psychically, and spiritually is to be *well.* The contrary of wholeness ((*Apūrṇa*) is Disease. And so it is said *Apūrṇaṃ-manyatā Vyādhi*—"the sense of imperfection, that is want of wholeness, is Disease". In, with, or as the Whole, man has life here and hereafter. So one of the *Cakras* in the great *Śrīyantra* is called *Sarva-rogahara* or the Destroyer of all Disease which is *Aḍharma.* Śiva is called *Mṛtyuṃjaya* or "Conqueror of Death". As such above his head is shown the Moon shedding streams of Nectar (*Amṛta* = Deathlessness) over His upright body. After all it is what a man *is* and *does* which counts. The notion that mere cleverness is enough is not a Hindu one. What is the use of talking

of the *Ātmā* and so on if one has helped no one. And so in the Śākta Scriptures, as in others, emphasis is laid on *Kriyā* (action) which however may be given a more extended sense than that in which it is there ordinarily used.

To pass to the subject matter of this book I personally (like indeed, I suppose, most people) do not believe that Life is merely as Claude Bernard said a "fermentation," or that a true theory of it can be based on the now (with some) fashionable "colloidal solution". It has been said that, for the majority of Biologists, vital phenomena are merely physico-chemical phenomena. Nevertheless the Vitalist School is on a truer track. If I remember rightly it was an English Chemist who lately observed that the more Matter is studied the clearer it is seen, that it is *away* from Matter (as such) and in the opposite direction that the solution, if any, of Life will be found. As regards the subject of this volume I believe in the "simplist" solution that Life, as we know it, is a power (as the Life of all lives) of the Supreme Power (*Parāśakti*). J. H. Fabre, the celebrated Naturalist and incomparable observer (as Darwin called him)—said: "I can't say I *believe* in God. I *see* Him. Without Him I understand nothing: without Him all is darkness." The question is not so much the existence of God but what sort of God. Philosophers and scientists would less grudgingly give to this Power the name of "God" were it not for the crude, ridiculous and even hateful notions which the beliefs of some have associated with this word. Merely physical explanations have availed nothing and will avail nothing. The Vedānta has dealt with the question very profoundly in distinguishing the Vital Body (*Prāṇamaya-Kośa*) from the Physical Body (*Annamaya-Kośa*) and in making the lower Mind-Body (*Manomaya-Kośa*) which is the vehicle of all the animal instincts, the essence of the former. Life and instinct are wondrous things the sight of which evokes the sentiment of worship. Neither results from

Matter. The explanation must be sought not below but above it in the Supreme Intelligence which they emphatically proclaim. J. H. Fabre conceived the relation between instinct and organ as analogous to that between Soul and Body. Instinct is an incorporeal element characterised by a native, infallible and irresistible impulse, superior to the organism as well as to sensibility, though it is not separate from, or completely independent, of these.

As regards evolution also, he would I think say that the separate creation of species is a truer notion than the theory that a higher species evolves from a lower one. For each species is a form of Divine Power (*Daivī-Śakti*). If, for example, A, B, C, be three distinct species in an ascending scale from A to C, it is not A which produces B, nor B which produces C, but it is the one Power (*Mahā-śakti*) which produces A, B and C. That Power which has appeared as A, appears also as B, and will next appear as C. B as an ascending type does not owe its ascent to A the lower type, but is a fresh pulsing-forth (*Prasara*) of Power, with a view to liberate Consciousness which appeared as A, now appears as B, and will appear as C. Some Christian writers claim to be "liberal" in repudiating what they call the "crude" view according to which the Creator is perpetually "interfering" with His work. But in my opinion it is more true to say that every act of creation, maintenance, and dissolution in past, present or future is directly His. In the same way it is futile to search for the "missing link" as a lost *form* intermediate between A and B and B and C. The real link is the Supreme Power which produces each. So in a tree, one main branch does not derive from another but from a trunk common to both. This view is not based on any disrespect for Matter, which is as much a form of the Supreme Power in this doctrine as is Life or Mind. As Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya so well

says in his Note appended to this volume—" to those who see the All (*Pūrṇa*) there is no difference, except formal, when Life is materialised or when Matter is vitalised, or when Spirit is materialised or again when everything is spiritualised ". If there has been any People who, taking them all in all, have seen things as they are and seen them " whole " it is the Hindus.

It is not enough to dispose of a solution to say that it is " materialistic ". The difficulty in the way of the acceptance of such a solution arises from the nature of Matter itself. If we say, as Professor Tyndall did, that Matter contains the potency of all Life, we are using the word " Matter " in a sense which is not the ordinary one and trying to say something which is stated much better in this Indian Scripture, according to which Matter *as such*, that is as the *crust* or end of the *involving* process is not as such potent to produce Life which is part of the *evolving* process. It is the Power, of which Matter is a gross manifestation, which is able to organise Matter into " living " form, which is the first stage on the way towards liberation from Matter and thus towards Pure Experience. One of the chief keys to an understanding of Indian Philosophy is to remember that all its schemes *begin with everything*. Creation, evolution or whatever else it be called, is only the appearance in subtle and gross forms of an inherent tendency in pure Being—Consciousness, as the *nidus* of all the manifested tendencies or *Saṃskāras*. One cannot get out of a bag more than has been put into it. If it is not put there in the beginning, it will not be got out in the end. Thus Life manifests in form. Life has no origin except as manifesting in a particular form. But Life has, in itself, no origin, for it is but a limited aspect of Eternal Being in all Its fullness. Consciousness again has not itself *evolved*. It is gradually *liberated* which is quite a different notion. It is not a product of Matter. If it be not

assumed in the beginning it will not be found at the end. It is eternal. Its existence is as a contraction (*Saṁkoca*) through association with Mind and Matter. And so with these last two. As constituting shapes they appear and pass away. But in the form of a potency to appear as such—a potency in the Cosmic Will—they had never, according to Vedānta, a beginning as they will never have an end.

The practical effect of a philosophy or religion is of primary importance. In this case the aim is Wholeness and Power and that is the effect of practical working or *Sādhana* as distinct from mere theorising. The high *Sādhana* (for there are several degrees) is self-purification and the worship of God as *Śaktimān* or the Supreme Possessor of Power. I hope to deal with *Sādhana* in a future volume. *Śakti* means "Power" and a *Śākta* is a worshipper of it in Its Supreme form. Then following this, entry is made upon the highest stage which is *jñāna-yoga* or religious philosophising by him whose mind and body have been purified and perfected by *Sādhana*.

The Śakti-saṅgama-Tantra says that the doctrine of *Śakti* was promulgated to establish unity amongst worshippers. For whatever might be the name of the God of their particular form of worship, all admitted His "feminine" aspect as Power. A Bengali writer, now deceased, who is not so well known as he should be, namely Bhudeva Mukhyopādhyāya stated in one of his books (on what authority however I do not know) that Śākta teaching was also promulgated with the political aim of hardening the power of resistance in the Hindu to foreign aggression. However this may be the doctrine is in fact powerful and power-giving. It is not possible that those who truly realise that in their essential being they are the self-same Supreme Power which created the universe, or in actual contact therewith, can be ever weak. It has been said that it was Christianity

which first told the individual man that he was of worth. But how can that be seeing that hundreds of years before the incarnation of the Christ the Rishi had said "That thou art"? That is, man is not only of worth, but he is *Devālaya* or abode of the Divine Power itself. Life itself is a power which is weakened or increased in the individual as he has ability to resist, and to increase through faith in, and progressive realisation of, his essential oneness with, the enduring Whole, which, while timeless in itself, is represented in time by a principle of conservation within the limits of the life of an universe. Abundant life is needed for the successful undertaking of all human activity. How to gain it is the work of *Sādhanā*. But in rightly stressing the necessity of practice, it has sometimes been forgotten, in the reaction against "Dogma," that practice must be backed by a doctrine which supplies the reasons for it. I read for instance that auto-suggestion is now being practised by the mere repetition of the words "I am becoming better and better every day and in every way," and the like. But unless one believes this what is the use of saying it? Some appear to believe without reason but with good results. But others will not believe this without having been given first a reason to show why such belief is well-founded and will therefore have good result. Be they sound or not, Śākta doctrine does give its reasons when it says that the ultimate Reality and inner being of each self is the unlimited Whole (*Pūrṇa*) of which the individual is a contraction or form, deriving the limitation implied in all form by the operation of those Powers which are Mind and Matter and the function of which is to negate the Whole or Consciousness (*Niṣedha-vyāpāra-rūpā Śaktih*) as Yogamuni finely says in his Commentary on Abhinava-Gupta's Paramārtha-sāra. That Really Real is the Inner Self and unlimited Being of which life in Mind and Matter is a limited form. It is Hale or Whole. It is unbroken (*Akhanda*) Bliss of which

all happiness in the world is a fragment. It is unlimited Power in itself as the Transcendent Will. Limited Power exists in the form of the individual wills of living forms and the physico-chemical powers of Matter.

But all these forms of contraction are due to, and take place in, Mind and Matter. The one Spirit, which is changeless Bliss, is the essential being of all these forms. From this it follows that each form may make contact with, and then realise, the whole, which is his own essential Self, which is Health itself, the Source, infinitely joyous, of all limited power and life—*Prāṇah prāṇasya* as the Upaniṣad says or the "Life of all lives"—with results all beneficial to itself. To understand this however it is necessary to know the nature of Mind and its operations and therefore the meaning of the old saying in the Upaniṣads "What a man thinks that he becomes". If this be doubted the answer is "try". If the objector refuses to try a system which promises particular results, he cannot complain that he has had no benefit from it. Just as in the West one finds advocates of the Cult of Power, so others, both here and there, are opposed to it because of its abuses. It is true that Power may be wrongly used but that need not be so. The objection is not to the Cult of Power (which is not the same thing as the Cult of material force) but the use of it when obtained. In the same way loose thinking makes a distinction between Might and Right as though Might was wrong. There is nothing necessarily wrong about Might. The true distinction is between Might in the service of Right and Might in the service of Wrong. In the same way objection has been taken to the Śākta doctrine because it teaches *Yoga* through Enjoyment or *Bhoga*, as distinct from *Yoga* by Renunciation which but very few are willing to try, and are still less capable of achieving if they did. *Bhoga* which is both Enjoyment and Suffering is not limited, in the former

case, to "Beer and Skittles" or to be more up-to-date "Cinema and Dancing Teas". It is a sound principle but, like everything else, susceptible of abuse by the sincere but weak on the one hand, and the hypocritical pretender on the other. It is an old doctrine in this line of thought that perfection can best be attained if each seeker of it perfects himself in all common human functions, and in his own particular avocation whatever it be. However humble it be let him only place himself, his life with all its functions and actions with the Whole, when they acquire meaning and strength. The individual life is then lived in and with the Universal Life. But it must be known what Life is. To this question this volume attempts to give shortly the Indian answer.

What is called the "Philosophy of Life" and Doctrine of Power is now in vogue in the West. "New Thought" as it is called (so akin in some respects to Śākta doctrine) says "Within you is the Power". "Spiritual healing" is taught and practised by the followers of what is called "Christian Science" to whom man's mind is "mortal mind" and the world of matter is a kind of *Māyā*. Great changes are taking place in Psychology. The debt of Theosophy to India is well known as also (though in another sense) of India to Theosophy which re-called to the Indian the value of his cultural inheritance. In Medical science, Psycho-therapy is establishing itself. An American critic reviewing one of the books which I have published on Tantra Śāstra spoke of this Scripture as being "perhaps the most elaborate system of auto-suggestion in the world"—a fact which he did not consider to be to its credit—for auto-suggestion, in its Indian sense, was not understood by him.

All these western movements are further instances of the approximation, which is now taking place, of modern western and ancient Indian thought to which I have often referred, as

in the first volume of this Series on "Reality". There is no reason however for any racial bumptiousness on either side. These doctrines and practices are based on notions which are it is true very old in India. They are the product of Ancient India, of that Great India which thought for itself and did not wait for cultural food of any kind to be spooned out to it by strangers. To-day it is the West which is great not only politically but in its intense original life, in its worship of Power and Beauty, in its Art, Science and Philosophy, and in its keen research and elaboration of fresh ideas. There, even the smallest peoples with no great past history are respected Selves. India has not yet recovered from the state which laid her open to the foreign invader. She is still learning how to say "I" which if it be said will be the starting point of her activities. This is not to deny the existence of great evils or that the present European civilization carries within it, like everything else, the seed of its death. Moreover, though I think the East has influenced the West, as the West the East, it is possible that similar ideas may have sprung up independently. If a theory has any truth in it, it may be discovered without help from any other. It is in respect of the absurdities of others that we more often require to wait for information. Probably no really new "Truth" is true. There is much truth in the Ancient Wisdom which is being re-presented to-day, sometimes with a richer content and in most cases with an objective proof which was previously wanting.

The Upaniṣads (some of which are more than 2,000 years old) teach the essentials of the lines of thought to which I have referred, such as that man's essential being is the one Spirit: that that being is pure Consciousness and Bliss of immeasurable power, that Mind and Matter are two of its powers and as such one with it, for power (*Śakti*) and the possessor of Power (*Śaktimān*) are one, that man makes

himself what he is and he can make himself what he will; that (to use the words of the Chāndogya Upaniṣad) "what a man thinks that he becomes," that the Power is within, being known as the "Inner Controller" (*Antaryāmin*), that Mind is active and goes forth as a Ray to meet the excitations of matter, that it has power over matter, and may possess various *siddhis* such as moving matter without physical connection and others, and that mind can influence mind by telepathy and hypnotism (*Vaśī-karaṇam*) and in other ways. The recent theory, for instance, of the American Dr. Abrams that there is vibration (*Spanda*) of the "ultimate" electric units of matter, that specific rates of vibration are associated with definite pathological conditions of the blood or tissues, and that these conditions may be cured by electric waves possessing a periodicity enabling them to control the vibrations of the disease from which the patient is suffering, is strongly reminiscent of the theory of *Mantra*, which by its sound-vibrations affects and regulates the psychical and physical sheaths. In a recent book by a Bengali author it is observed (not with approval for he rejects the Vedānta and adopts the notions of Modern Western Theism) that it appeared to him that "in these modern speculations the old philosophers seem to have been winning all along the line". He says: "An Indian may well feel proud that the speculations of his age-old philosophers so long ridiculed by Europeans are adopted by the newest science"; but he finds that it is "difficult to resist the smile which such speculations naturally give rise to". Let him not resist the smile. No one will begrudge him that, for smiles and laughter spell health, nor will he perhaps demur to the amusement of others for a reason quite contrary to his own. Naturally those Indians who do not think much of the religion and philosophy of their ancestors will be amused (though the kindly ones will be saddened) at the sight of those Europeans who (as they think)

are picking up ancient Indian errors and putting them forward as new Western truths.

Others of a different way of thinking will likely be of opinion that if modern western scientific theories tend to square with ancient Indian teaching, then some case is made out for the latter.

But after all it does not matter who first said what. The question is—is it true and therefore useful—a question which we should approach without prejudice.

My friend Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya has been good enough, at my request, to supply me with the valuable Appendix which will be found at the conclusion of this book which will be followed by two volumes, which I have prepared with his help, on *Śakti* as Mind and *Śakti* as Matter.

Puri J. W.
30th May, 1922

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS LIFE

(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

I

"He said 'I am Life'" (Sahovāca, Prāṇo'smi). "The life of all lives" (Sa u prāṇasya prāṇah) "Adore Me who am Life." (Prāṇo'smi, Māṃ upāsasva).

Kauṣītakī Up., 3—2; *Kena-Up.*, 2.

In the West, matter is commonly divided into that which is organised and unorganised, the former being called living, and the latter non-living, substance, "brute," "inert" and "dead" matter. As is so characteristic of Western Thought, emphasis is thus laid on difference and discontinuity, these being apparent. An absolute gulf was created between the two;—the greatest of all gulfs namely that between what is dead and what is alive. "Organisation" [1] means more or less systematic arrangement of relatively separate parts in a whole suited to fulfil any sort of function. According to the old meaning of the term "organic," an organic body is one, whether living or not, in which heterogeneous elements make up a composite whole. After Leibnitz two elements in the conception (that of composition of parts and of relation of means and end) are intimately connected and Kant welds them together in his definition of the organic, as that in which all the parts are reciprocally means and ends to one another

[1] See Baldwin, Phil. Dict.

and to the whole. Thus historically the identification of organic with the living comes last, and the term means that which has life whether animal or vegetable as opposed to inorganic or inanimate. Organism in biology means a discrete body of which the essential constituent is living protoplasm. The term originally indicated the recognition of organisation as essential to life and as opposite to unorganised or "dead" matter. An organism has the inherent principle of its own systematic process. It is thus common to speak of organised matter in connection with life. But all matter is now held to be in a state of organisation, that is systematic arrangement of relatively separate parts in a whole suited to fulfil any sort of function. It is said to be constituted of complicated structural elements, and the molecules and atoms are described in fact as miniature solar systems. The supposed, self-moving, electric units of these atoms constitute distinct structural arrangements, varying in number and position in the varied forms of so called elementary matter. And so it has been said [1] that "as soon as we lift the veil of appearances, matter so inert in its outward aspect is seen to possess an extremely complicated organisation and an intense life". So again mineral being is characterised by its beautifully geometrical crystalline form as the living being is characterised by its anatomical one. In short all matter, everything which exists is organised. It is therefore not organisation but degree and nature of organisation which distinguishes so called living and non-living substance.

Nothing again is inert. According to Sāṃkhya and Monistic Vedānta all matter is a compound of derivates from one primordial Substance-Energy called Prakṛti and Māyā-śakti. This and its modes are in perpetual movement. For activity is the essential characteristic of the ultimate Substance-Energy. For this reason the Hindus call the world "*Jagat*"

[1] Le Bon "Evolution of Matter".

which means the "moving thing" because everything is in movement in changeless Spirit or Consciousness, just as in the phenomenal world all is moving here and there in the ethereal continuum. It is true that a common distinction, in ordinary parlance, exists between moving (*Cara*) and unmoving (*Acara*) things, but this refers to the appearance only of gross matter and even to living plants without locomotive movement. This notion of the inertness of matter was due to superficial observation of molar masses apparently at rest and set in motion by force from without. As above stated, according to the views now held, the ultimate particles of the atoms of matter are in constant movement and the atom itself is a reservoir of tremendous energy. It has therefore been rightly observed that the whole question of motion, as related to living and not-living being, requires re-statement in view of modern ideas of an ultra-physical nature relating to intra-atomic activities and to molecular movement.

There is no Indian equivalent of the phrase "dead" matter. The term "*Jada*" generally means anything without locomotive movement (*Acara*) a stationary thing. In this sense a plant may be *Jada* though there is movement in the plant itself. A moving thing (*Cara*) may be relatively *Jada*. Thus a man who is numbed with cold is said to be *Jadasada*. One is said to be in the state of *Jada* when he feels incapable or disinclined for physical or mental action. *Jada*[1] means without movement (*Nihspanda*) effortless (*Nirudyoga*). It also means unconscious (*Acetana*). But a thing which is *Acetana* is not necessarily and absolutely without consciousness. In fact nothing is that. Everything in Vedānta is a form of consciousness (*Cit*). Everything again, as regards its material body, is Māyāśakti or the finitising principle, Creatrix of the world of forms or Power which in itself (*Svarūpa*) is Consciousness. Again Māyāśakti as ground of appearance is constituted

[1] See Prakṛti-vāda Dict. of Rāmakamala Vidyalaṃkāra.

of three Guṇas (*Triguṇa-mayī*).[1] That is in everything there is the Factor *Sattva* (for the three *Guṇas* or factors of the Natural Principle never exist apart from one another), and *Sattva* is that aspect of the Natural Principle which manifests Consciousness in any phenomenon, veiled though that Consciousness be in differing degrees. What then we call unconscious or as having the appearance of unconsciousness is only that in which Consciousness is most obscured to the finite observer. But there is nothing which does not manifest it in some degree. Thus the response of matter to stimuli is evidence of the *Sattvaguṇa* and of the *Cit* which it reflects. In popular language *Acetana* (unconscious) may be applied to man who is *Acetana* to some things and *Cetana* to others. What may be in one condition *Acetana* may be *Sacetana* (conscious) in another. Thus *Acetana* (unconscious) may be applied to a man who is not expert or quick about anything, incapable, worthless, in a state of fascination, dumb, blind, an idiot, any one who remains without action and effort.[2] How little a Hindu looks on anything as being absolutely dead, and how words are used in an analogical sense is illustrated by the case of an Orissan sculptor who told me that he was unable to make a statue I wanted out of an old stone which I gave him because it was "dead"; that is it had ceased to be able to be worked upon.

From a philosophical point of view then all is essentially unmoving Consciousness veiled in varying degree by continually moving Mind and Matter, most veiled in gross matter, and less and less veiled in plants, animals and man, who in Yoga becomes complete Consciousness and nothing else. Again the vehicle of mind and matter is the manifestation of the Power (Śakti) of Consciousness, that is Consciousness as

[1] See "Reality", *supra*.

[2] Dakṣatā, Satvaratā, Akṣamatā, Akarmaṇya, Mohita, etc., see Prakṛti-vāda Dict.

Power. The term Consciousness must be understood not in its ordinary Western sense but as an approximate term for *Cit*.[1] All matter again is composed of Sattvaguṇa as well as of the other Guṇas which are the principles of efficiency, and resistance or inertia in a phenomenon. There is no vehicle of Consciousness which is not in perpetual movement. There is no vehicle which does not in varying degree display Consciousness.

Neither then organisation, motion, nor consciousness are peculiar to living substance. Motion exists in both forms of substance, though it is what is called mechanical and determined in one, and apparently free and undetermined in the other. Organisation exists in both cases, though more and more complex in living substance. Consciousness is the essence of both, though so obscured in what is called inorganic matter that the latter is deemed unconscious. Yet even here science corrects crude observation. Thus irritability was supposed to be a fundamental property of living substance. It is however now known that "non-living" matter reacts to external stimuli. Thus its reaction to acid is a spasm. For knowledge in this direction we are indebted, as all know, to experiments of the distinguished Indian scientist Sir Jagadish Bose. By taking as basis the fact that the most general and delicate sign in life is the electric response, he has shown that this electric response is the reaction of an obscure form of Conciousness in matter. He has thus shown by his ingenious experiments the fatigue of metals and its disappearance after rest and the action on these same metals of excitants, depressants and poisons.

Whilst it is of course true that self-conscious mind exists only in high manifestations of Life, it is also the fact that in the response which inorganic matter makes to external stimuli we see the most rudimentary form of that which when

[1] See "Śakti and Śākta," by the author. Chapter on Cit-Śakti.

developed is called sentiency—a form of Consciousness. Matter is of extreme mobility and it has been said[1] "endowed with an unconscious sensibility which cannot be approached by the conscious sensibility of any being". The author cited adds "This sensibility of matter so contrary to what popular observation seems to indicate is becoming more and more familiar to physicists. This is why such an expression as the 'life of matter,' utterly meaningless twentyfive years ago, has come into common use. The study of mere matter yields ever-increasing proof that it has properties which were formerly deemed the exclusive appanage of living beings. The analogies discovered are, it is likely, due to the fact that nature does not greatly vary her procedure, and constructs all beings from mineral to man with similar materials, whence they are endowed with common properties".

Then is the substance we call matter different in what is living and not living? The answer is in the negative. It is the same matter which is in living substance as in non-living substance. There are not two kinds of matter. The chemico-mechanical school stand for the continuity of evolution between non-living and living substance. The Vitalists say that there is no difference as to matter, but that, when viewing life, we are in the presence of "something else" (not matter) in addition to what is found existing in non-living bodies. Nature in fact constructs all beings from mineral to man with similar materials. The difference exists in the manner they are worked up to display the Consciousness which is their essence. The greater the display of consciousness the more complex the structure.

The various "elements" of matter may by combination give birth to bodies of increasing complexity from the forms of inorganic matter to the compounds forming the tissues of living beings. A living being is made up of an aggregate of

[1] Le Bon "Evolution of Matter," 249 (1907).

chemical compounds formed by the combination of a small number of elements[1] so associated as to compose molecular edifices of very great mobility. A particularly complex but structureless homogeneous undifferentiated chemical substance known as Protoplasm[2] is the substance out of which all "living" things, whether Plants, Animals or Men, are formed. This elementary life-stuff possesses even in minute portions all the properties seen in the most complicated living structures such as assimilation, growth, contractility, sensitivity, reproduction. Of it is built up the cell, itself a complicated structure with its walls and nucleus. Inorganic forms constitute molecular edifices of small complexity in structure, whereas compounds elaborated within the tissues of living beings are admittedly extremely difficult of interpretation. So long as chemistry had only to study very simple mineral or organic compounds, elementary laws were sufficient, but closer examination showed that substances existed to which none of the known laws of chemistry could be applied and these substances are just those which play a preponderating part in the phenomena of life. A great number of chemical compounds, of which the aggregate constitutes a living being, possess a structure and properties to which none of the old laws of chemistry are applicable. No formula can express their composition and no theory explains their properties. On them depend the majority of the phenomena of life. The viscid albuminoid Protoplasm, which is the fundamental substance of the cells, never appears to change, though by its presence it determines the most complicated chemical reactions. The writer[3] from whom we

[1] The human body is about 75 per cent water, rest jelly and bones. The nerves and brain cells are 80 per cent or 85 per cent water. The Colloids are, it is said, the underlying fabric of many of the processes of life.

[2] Contains carbon hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen and a minute quantity of other elements notably phosphorus. It is however so complex chemically as to defy exact analysis. Moreover it is dead protoplasm of which chemistry speaks.

[3] See Le Bon, *Op. cit.*, 293—295.

quote the above speaks of the chemical edifices which the humble cells perform comprise operations, not only the most skilful in the laboratories, but many more skilful still which man is unable to imitate. By means unknown the cells construct complicated and varied compounds and decompose the most stable bodies. "All these operations so precise, so admirably adapted to one purpose are *directed* by forces of which we have no conception *which act exactly as if they possessed a power of clairvoyance very superior to reason.* What they accomplish every moment of our existence is far above what can be realised by the most advanced science."

A living being is, as body, the aggregate of these cellular lives. What then is that which we call life, be it in the cells or the cellular aggregate, as the plant, animal, and man? What is it which constitutes the distinction between what we call life and non-living substance? For it must be admitted that there are obvious differences between the two, otherwise man would not have made the distinction. It is sometimes forgotten, in the desire to unify all things, that it is the characteristic of phenomenal Reality that it is made up of differences and apparent discontinuities. For it is only these which can constitute a world. If all were static and homogeneous there would be no world at all. Continuity only exists as regards the original Substance-Energy (Śakti) of which all apparent diversities and continuities are modes. Nevertheless, whilst admitting diversity, we may discern elements of sameness or correspondence which are the phenomenal indications of the unity of Creative Reality Itself.

Varying definitions have been given of Life such as "the special activity of organised beings" which tells us nothing. Life is generally defined as a process and we are told what Life does rather than what Life is.

Thus living substance is said to be that which is born, breathes, moves, assimilates, grows, adapts itself to environment,

repairs and reproduces itself and dies. Whilst it is true that these are fundamental properties of living substance, it cannot be said that, at any rate all of them, are properties of what is popularly called "living substance" alone. Perhaps in some degree none are. To be born and to die are only particular ways of coming into and leaving a passing form of existence. We cannot equate the behaviour of bodies with that of artificial machines. Thus the atom of matter does not depend on external impulse for its movements. It is not provided from without with its gigantic store of energy which it carries within itself. It keeps itself going until it dissociates. This dissociation is the death of the atom for which there must have been, as regards any particular atom, a corresponding birth. Nor can we say that one is self-moved and not the other. In gross matter there is intra-atomic and molecular movements, though as a mass it is moved only by the application of external force. "Brownian" movement may be a reaction of external molecular conditions upon a small mass of matter, resulting in mechanical motions, but it is yet a movement of transport. Even so called "self-initiated" animal movement may be a reaction to external conditions. Some are of opinion that there is no spontaneous or voluntary movement and that all movement is the result of tactisms in the nature of a chemico-physical reaction.

Then what of the admittedly living cell. Except as an independent organism it may be incapable of movement of transport. Thus only the white cells of the blood have amœbic movement. Some cells have ciliary movement only. Others, such as the living cells, have no movement of transport at all. These cells are yet living and form part of a living organism. All admittedly living substance breathes. And hence the word *Prāni* or breathing creatures. The plant does so through its leaves. Even in an animal, the Amœba, we cannot see the process of respiration taking place. It is therefore supposed

that the interchange of gases which constitutes the breathing process takes place all over the surface of the creature, there being no apparent special organ. It may not be too fanciful to suppose that some such interchange takes place, through attraction and repulsion, (principles of universal operation) in the interstices of matter. Whether "non-living" matter can assimilate depends on the question whether it is capable of growth. The process is in some measure chemical, for chemical changes and operations take place during its progress. All matter is capable of crystallisation, and matter is thus individualised by incorporation of elements borrowed from the medium with itself. Cells and crystals have been said to show evident affiliation. The crystalline form corresponds to the anatomical one. The material molecules go through successive transformations to assume the crystalline form, being a representation, in a way, of tissue in the course of evolution. All this of course is not to deny that there are differences between the growth of crystals and of so called "living" bodies. So again with self-repair which is a mark of living substance. Like the animal or plant a mutilated crystal can repair its mutilation. In fact this healing or righting tendency is not merely present in individual bodies, but is an essential characteristic of the universe as a whole—an aspect of the universal Law or *Dharma* under which all abnormality, injury and wrong are in due time righted. So again as regards generation. In certain conditions liquids only crystallise if they have first received a crystalline germ. In other cases spontaneous crystallisation appears to be observed. The crystalline bodies which are produced by admitted vital activities are identical in composition and molecular structure with crystals of "inorganic" origin. Adaptation, that is meeting the various conditions with which any living being is confined, may ultimately be reduced to Attraction (*Rāga*) and Repulsion (*Dveṣa*), and response to changes in environment, whether the

reaction be due to mere chemical changes in the composition of a thing, or whether there is also an element of purposiveness in them. Matter responds by expansion to heat, and by contraction to cold under rigid law. Lower organisms are also largely subject to such law but as they rise in the scale of being the element of freedom manifests. In all cases a purpose is served; in some only is the organism conscious of it. All forms of Matter and Mind act according to their inherent *Saṃskāras* or innate tendencies to realise their ends, though only in some bodies is that tendency presented as object to its consciousness. The form is adapted to the end of accomplishing what the organism is by nature fitted to accomplish. In some cases the action is the realisation of a chemico-physical law, in others by instinct, in some others again by conscious willing process.

Every centre acts according to the degree of freedom which evolution has accorded to it. It is in fact in *freedom* that we find the distinguishing characteristic of living substance. It cannot be said that either organic or inorganic matter is altogether free. For each form exists and operates according to the laws which govern it. Each has its normal behaviour or *Dharma*. But living matter shows increasing will and purposive action.

If we then examine the differences which exist between so called inorganic and organic matter, we find that they may be summed up in the generalised statement that living-matter is endowed, in greater and greater degree, with *freedom* and *individuality*. External control is never wholly absent but there is increasing freedom from it. Instead of a rule imposed on simply-organised subject material, the forms of living matter are biologically described as an organism rich in organisation with internal self-regulating control. Chemical and physical processes are rigid and unvarying and a particular behaviour may be expected with accuracy. We do not anticipate any

departure from the regular lines of events involved in any chemical or physical process. On the other hand an opponent of the Vitalistic theory [1] has said that an animal never does twice the same thing in the whole course of its existence. Freedom and individuality is thus the fundamental characteristic of living matter. And this we might expect, seeing that the initial creative process is an impulse towards individualisation—an impulse which continues to gain strength with the evolution of forms.

The fact that gross matter exhibits (though in rudimentary form) the properties of living substance is regarded by some as proof that all matter is either, in an obscure sense, alive or has within it the potency of life. Either view is apt to introduce confusion and obliterate real differences. Life is a term which expresses a distinction. If we call all matter alive we thereby give to the word life a meaning which renders it meaningless. If again we say that matter as such contains the potency of life, we are again giving to the term matter another sense than that in which it is ordinarily understood, namely a sense which places it in contrast with both Life and Mind. The position taken by Śākta doctrine is in this matter, as in so many others, sound. It recognises both difference and unity. To the holders of chemico-mechanical theories of the production of Life by Matter, it says that Matter as such is not the cause of Life. On the contrary Life is a Power, a form of Consciousness which directs matter. But it is right to say that the cause of Life is immanent in matter as the Power which manifests as both Matter and Life. To the Vitalist, whether old or new, it says that he is right in affirming that Life is not a product of Matter as such, but wrong when he says that there is "something else" in living substance which is absent in non-living substance. For the one Power is present in both, but manifests either as so-called

[1] See Le Dantec, "The Nature and Origin of Life".

"dead" matter with its regulated and calculable motions and behaviour, or in "live" matter in which the gradual freeing of consciousness and will introduces "self-initiated" purposive action which is less and less calculable, until for practical purposes it becomes incalculable. It is not in short to matter as such that we must look for the appearance of life, but to the Power (Śakti) which is the cause of *both* matter and life. This is so fundamental and important a point that it is examined later in greater detail, after a short historical review of the theories held in East and West as to the nature of Life and its so-called origin.

According to the Indian Materialists (Cārvākas, Lokāyatas) Life, as well as Consciousness, was spontaneously generated (Abiogenesis) as a result of the chemical combination, under the influence of heat and moisture, of the four kinds of matter[1] in organic forms, just as the intoxicating property of spirituous liquors is the result of the fermentation of unintoxicating rice and molasses. The instinctive movements of the newly-born organism were held to be mechanically due to external stimuli, as much as the opening and closing of the lotus at different hours of the day or night or the movement of iron under the influence of the lodestone. It is common ground however in the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, Sāṃkhya—Pātañjala and Vedānta schools that Consciousness[2] transcends and is not the product of matter. The Naiyāyikas held that psychical and vital processes are immaterial and could not be resolved into motion.[3] The two latter schools held that both Mind and

[1] Vāyu, Tejas, Ap, Pṛthivī. The fifth Ākāśa was not admitted as not being subject of perception. See Seal, 239—91, Positive Sciences of the Hindus.

[2] Caitanya. This is *not* mind. The latter is intermingled consciousness and unconsciousness.

[3] Pari-spanda. Life. It is a Guṇa, jīvanayoniyatna or activity of the Ātman

Matter are, as all else, which is not consciousness[1], forms of motion, but are distinguished from one another in that the Vedānta holds that Life is also a separate substantive principle which the Sāṃkhya, on the ground of economy of categories, does not admit. Both held that consciousness is not a motion and cannot be the resultant of the motions of inorganic matter. Nor is the consciousness of the self or of the organism as a whole, the resultant of supposed consciousnesses vested in the constituent particles of the body. There is one central abiding Consciousness. Life[2] according to the Sāṃkhya is not a *Vāyu*[3] or bio-mechanical force nor any mere mechanical impulsion resulting from the impulsion of *Vāyu*. Life is a reflex activity, a resultant of the various concurrent activities of the mind and senses.[4] This, it is said, explains the disturbing effect on the vitality of pleasurable and painful emotions. The Sāṃkhyas accept the substantive existence of Mind[5] but resolve Life into a mere resultant activity of the mind and senses. Whilst therefore for them Life was not a bio-mechanical force nor evolved from inorganic matter[6] it was only a complex reflex activity resulting from the operations of the psycho-physical principles or forces in the organism. The Vedāntists[7] whilst agreeing with the Sāṃkhyas that Life is neither a biomechanical force, nor the result of its operation, deny that it is merely the result of the concurrent sensory-motor, emotional, and apperceptive reactions of the organism. Life is prior to the senses, for it

[1] As either the Sāṃkhyan Puruṣa or Vedāntic Ātmā. Both are transcendent, immaterial, and at rest: all else moves.

[2] Seal, 241.

[3] Vāyu comes from the root Vā = to move.

[4] That is Ego (Ahaṃkāra), the emotional (Manas) and sensory-motor (Jñānendriya and Karmendriya) relations of the organism.

[5] Manas, as derived, co-ordinately with the Tanmātra, from Ahaṃkāra or individualised Prakṛti.

[6] Bhūta.

[7] Seal, *op. cit.*, 242.

regulates the development of the fertilised living ovum from which the senses subsequently develop. The sensations do not explain life. Moreover the deprivation of any one or more of the senses does not mean a deprivation of life. The Vedāntists therefore hold Life, which is called Prāṇa,[1] as a separate, substantive, quasi-material Principle, pervasive of the organism, which is not a gross natural force or material energy but a form of regulative activity or motion guiding such energy phenomenally and, as the western Scholastics said, immersed in Matter. In the Śākta system, everything which exists is a form of Supreme Power or Śakti which is in Itself Consciousness and manifests as Consciousness-unconsciousness.[2] That Power is either of Will, Knowledge or Action. The Life Principle is a form of active power (*Kriyā-śakti*). But the Powers are never entirely separated the one from the other. Wherever there is the one, there is the other. In particular manifestations, one or other may be predominant [3]. Therefore there is present both Will and Knowledge and all these are manifestations of the one Consciousness. The Vital Principle is ultimately as all else Consciousness, in this case active to produce and sustain living substance and all its functions. Living substance is a form of God as Power.

Prāṇa has been defined [4] to be "the special relation of the *Ātmā* with a certain form of matter which by this relation the

[1] This word comes from the root *An* "to breathe" + prefix Pra.

[2] Neither the 24 nor the 36 Tattvas give Life as a separate substantive Principle or Tattva, as does the Māya-vāda scheme. Life is here, as in the Sāṃkhya, merely a complex reflex activity resulting from the operation of the psycho-physical Principles. It is a form of the Supreme Power which produces them, though possibly (for the point is at present not clear) after the manner of the Sāṃkhya. That is Life as Cause is Power, though the mode by which it works may be that which the Sāṃkhya indicates.

[3] Pradhāna.

[4] "Hindu Realism," J. C. Chatterjee. In the Tantras the Devī as Life-Principle is depicted of a red colour in a boat floating on a sea of blood.

Ātmā[1] (or Self) organises or builds up as a means of having experience". *Prāṇa* in its general sense as the "Life Principle" is not breath, nor is it breathing except in a secondary sense. Breathing is only one of the manifestations of Life, an attribute of living substance. It is a manifestation of the Life-Principle. Breath is simply the circumambient air inhaled and expelled. The form of the Life-Principle or *Prāṇa*, as manifested function, is breathing. Life, as the vital principle, bears the same name as its chief characteristic—the breathing which, in various forms, is the mark of vegetable, animal, and human nature. And thus the word "Spirit" literally means breath. Man must speak in terms of material existence, and he here selected what seemed to him the least material, the most unsubstantial. A breath may be felt. The physical action of breathing may be seen and known. When breathing ceases Life ceases: and so the Kauṣītakī-Upaniṣad calls *Prāṇa* "the Life-duration of all". But That which is unseen, of which its functioning is seen, is Spirit or Brahman as the Life and source of all lives, the *Prāṇa* of all *Prāṇas*.

Prāṇa is either individual or cosmic. The latter is the Brahman as *Prāṇa*. The special relation, above mentioned, constitutes the individual *Prāṇa* in the individual body. The individual *Prāṇa* is limited to the particular body which it vitalises, and is a manifestation in all breathing creatures called *Praṇī* of the life-giving activity of the Brahman. The cosmic *Prāṇa* which pervades and vitalises all breathing creatures (*Prāṇī*) is the Brahman as the collectivity of all individual *Prāṇas*, and the source of the individual and collective life. Breathing is a microcosmic manifestation of the macrocosmic Rhythm to which the whole universe moves and according to which it appears and

[1] This term is compounded of A + at + man. The root *At* means All-spreading just as Brahman does. According to some the root is As "to be" (Asmi, Sum, I am) or *An* to breathe—the "Spirit," which has the same significance.

disappears. And so it is said that the life of Brahmā, the Creative-consciousness in any universe, is of the duration of the outgoing breath,[1] of the Lord as Time.[2] With His inbreathing all worlds are withdrawn.

The body is divided by the Vedānta into five sheaths, which are less and less gross as we proceed inward, namely the sheaths of food or matter, life, lower and higher mind and of bliss.[3] The *Prāṇamaya* or life-body differs from the gross outer body or body of food [4] which it vitalises. The latter is heterogeneous,[5] or made up of distinct or well-defined parts. But the vital-self [6] which lies within the gross physical self [4] is a homogeneous undivided whole,[7] permeating the whole physical body.[8] It is not cut off into distinct regions,[9] as is the microcosmic cosmic physical body known as the Pinda. Unlike the latter it has no specialised organs each discharging a special function. It is a homogeneous unity, present in every part of the body which it ensouls as its inner vital self. A new life appears with the germination of the seed [10] in breathing creatures. Into this seed *Prāṇa* enters. When the *Prāṇa* goes, that is when the organism ceases to breathe, the organism which the Vital Principle holds together disintegrates, though for a time the cells may continue a sort of life of their own.

[1] Niṣvāsa.

[2] Kāla—See Introd. Prapañcasāra-Tantra, Vol. 3. Tantrik Texts.

[3] Annamaya, Prāṇamaya, Manomaya, Vijñānamaya, Ānandamaya.

[4] Annamaya. [5] Pariccinna. [6] Prāṇamaya Ātmā.

[7] Sādhāraṇa. [8] Sarvapiṇdavyāpin. [9] Asādhāraṇa.

[10] In the viviparous Placental (no a-placental animals were known) or Jarāyuja, the oviparous animals or Aṇdaja, vegetable organisms or Udbhijja. It was commonly believed that the fourth class Svedaja or Uṣmaja were spontaneously or a-sexually generated from inorganic matter through the action of moisture and heat such as maggots in corrupting flesh. See Rāghava-Bhatta Comm. on Śāradā-Tilaka, 1, 27, 29. But the view was also taken that inorganic matter without seed (Bīja) could not give rise to animal life. See Seal *Op. cit.*, 177, 181.

Prāṇa is metaphorically called *Vāyu* in the sense of universal vital activity. It is itself one, but on entry into each body manifests itself in ten different ways under ten different names, of which the five chief are *Prāṇa*, *Apāna*, *Samāṇa*, *Vyāna* and *Udāna* later explained.

Prāṇa or *Āyuh* [1] (Life) like all other constitutive principles of the Universe has two aspects namely as cause and as effect. In the first Prāṇa is a name for the Supreme Brahman as the Cause of, that is the Power (Śakti) which produces, the life of individual being. Numerous Texts establish this : "He said 'I am *Prāṇa* (*Prāṇo'smi*) [2] "Thou art *Āyuh*" (*Āyuṣtvaṃ*) [3] "*Prāṇa* is Brahman" (*Prāṇo brahma*).[4] Here *Prāṇa* means Para-brahman [5] beyond Mind and Speech.[6] Hence God is enjoined to be worshipped as Life. "Adore Me who am Life (*Āyuh*) and Eternal." [7] "He who worships Me as Life and Immortality obtains in this world all Life (*Āyuh.*)" [8] Worship of life is done with life.[9] It is this Prāṇa, as the Supreme Cause, which gives life as Effect.[10] He is thus the Life of all lives." [11] The Kāṇva [12] says "The Devas worship that which is the Deathless One (*Amṛta*), which is truly Itself Life, and

[1] Āyuh is Prāṇa. Kauṣītakī-U., 3—2.

[2] Kauṣītakī-Up., 3—2: Prāṇa is Brahman (Prāṇo Brahmeti). *Ib.* 2—1.

[3] Maitri-Up., 5—1.

[4] Chāndogya-Up., 4—10—5. Kauṣītakī, 2—1, 2—2.

[5] Bṛhadāraṇyaka-Up., 4—1—3.

[6] Kauṣītakī-Up., 2—2. Here Prāṇa is indicative (Lakṣaṇārtha) only. As the Parabrahmasvarūpa or transcendental Brahman *It* is beyond Prāṇa. Cf. "Thou art He who is other than Prāṇa and the Devatās and Who art both." Kauṣītakī-Up., 1—6.

[7] Kauṣītakī-Up., 3—2 (He who is Prajñātmā).

[8] *Ib.* Cf. "They get life (Āyuh) who worship Brahman as Prāṇa." Taittirīya-Up , 2—3—1. Prāṇa is the third Pāda of the Gāyatrī, Taitt. 1—5—3.

[9] "I do Tarpaṇa of Āyuh with Āyuh." Śiro-Up., 1.

[10] Prāṇah prānāya dadāti, Cha.-Up., 7—15.

[11] Sa u prāṇasya-prāṇah. Kena.-Up., 2.

[12] One of the recensions of the Bṛhad.-Up.

the Light of Lights."[1] The Āgama also says "As we two (Śiva and Śakti) are the Self of the World,[2] We Two are one with it. By reason of Our oneness with one another we are at all times the Life of the World (*Jagatprāṇa*)".[3] What is vitalised is so vitalised by Prāṇa.[4] And He is the Vitaliser or *Prāṇa* in chief.[5]

It is from this Supreme Life that all beings issue, enjoy their individual lives, and then re-enter into it.[6] It is thus the Cause of the universe. As such, Life is eternal.[7] It is also this universe.[8] As Life eternal it is an endless, constant and changeless Persistence itself. It is also eternal as universe, in the sense that whilst particular systems come and go, the universal process is eternal—now dropped and now resumed. *Prāṇa* is *Paramātmā*, *Antarātmā*,[9] that is Supreme Being beyond and in bodies as their Controller and Director. It is *Kāla* the force which urges on all things and is viewed as Time[10] "Fire" (*Agni*) (which is the builder of forms);[11] exhibited in matter,[12] though itself beyond matter.[13] Eternal Life is the persistent and true[14] which is enshrined by all name and form.[15] It is formless.[16] All have form but It.[17] The Supreme

[1] Cited in Comm. to v. 1 of Kāmakalā-vilāsa. [2] Jagadātmatvāt.

[3] Cited by Natanānanda-nātha in Comm. to v. 12 of Kāmakalā-vilāsa.

[4] Prāṇena abhiprāṇitah. Aīt.-Up., 3—11.

[5] Mukhyah Prāṇah. Cha.-Up., 1—2—3; 1—5—3. Prāṇa is the fourth Pāda of Brahman. Cha.-Up., 3—18—4.

[6] Cha.-Up., 1—11—5. Prāṇa is Ra because in Prāṇa all beings enjoy (Ramante) Bṛ.-Up., 5—12—1.

[7] Prāṇo vā amṛtam. Br.-Up., 1—6—3.

[8] Prāṇo' sau lokah. Br.-Up., 1—5—4.

[9] Maitri-Up., 6—9, 6—1, 6—8 and 7—7. [10] Maitri-Up., 4—5.

[11] *Ibid.*, 6—9. It (as Brahman) is Tejomaya. Br.-Up., 2—5—4.

[12] *Ibid.*, 6—11.

[13] It is Amṛtamaya. Br.-Up., 2—5—4 and Adhyātma, that is above Daiva and Bhūta. Prāṇo vā amṛtaṃ. Br.-Up., 1—6—3.

[14] Prāṇā vai satyaṃ. Br.-Up., 2—1—20. [15] *Ib.*, 1—6—3.

[16] Atha amūrtaṃ prāṇah. Br.-Up., 2—3—5.

[17] *Ibid.*, 2—3—4. Idaṃ eva mūrtaṃ yad anyat Prāṇāt.

Brahman is formless, and so also is the organising principle of bodies, though it takes on the forms of the matter in which it is immersed.[1]

Life then, in its causal sense, is a name for the Supreme Power (*Śakti*) in its aspect as the originator of individual lives. That Power is in itself Consciousness (*Cit*). This consciousness is immersed in matter and is there veiled and appears as the director, guide, regulator, and controller of its material energies.

It is not "material" in the English sense, that is, it is not matter. On the contrary Life or *Prāṇa* is said to be so called "because it leads and guides (*Praṇayanāt*) and moves about."[2] Leads and guides what? The answer is Matter; for this which is the last product of the involution of Consciousness cannot, as such, guide and direct itself. The Vedānta clearly distinguishes, in its doctrine of the sheaths (*Kośas*) of the Spirit, Matter which is the outermost and most gross sheath, from the vital body which is the next inner and more subtle sheath, within which again are the sheaths of lower and higher mind and within the last the Self. The gross body is the sheath of matter or food[3], and within it is the vital or Prāṇic sheath[4] which, with Mind, are the subtle body of the Self. This latter is Consciousness, and Mind, Life, and Body are forms of its Power (*Śakti*).

If it be remembered that all is in essence Consciousness, veiled in varying degree by its Power as Mind and Matter, the nature of Life will be clearly understood. In the higher mind[5] functioning as Reason, Judgment and so forth, Consciousness is

[1] Vāyu, by which name Prāṇa is metaphorically called (in so far as Vāyu is a form of gross material Energy which Prāṇa is not) belongs to the formless (Amūrta) division of the Bhūtas (sensible matter).

[2] Praṇayanāt prakramaṇāt prāṇa iti abhigīyate. (Prakṛti-vāda Dict.) The first word may also mean because it builds up (matter) which is also a function of Life.

[3] Annamaya-Kośa. [4] Prāṇamaya-Kośa. [5] Vijñānamaya-Kośa.

least veiled and most aware of itself. The lower mind [1] which attends, directs and synthetises the functioning of the senses is more veiled. Animal instinct again is a veiled form of consciousness. Another form of the mental principle is *Prāṇa* or Life. Though not specifically called mind, it is nevertheless that aspect of mind which is wholly immersed in matter as the *directing* consciousness of the material energies of the body. For to limit, regulate, control in whatsoever way is the function of the mental principle, and that which is the patient of such operation is Matter. Consciousness is present and at work in all matter, whether we call it living or not living; but when it directs the material energies in such a way as to build up and sustain breathing creatures (*Prāṇī*) it is called *Prāṇa* or the Vital Principle or Force. And so the Maitrī-Upaniṣad[2] sums up these relations in the statement that the Life-Principle is the essence of Matter (and of food, which is matter which sustains life), the Lower Mind is the essence of the Life Principle, the Higher Mind is the essence of the lower mind, whilst the Self in its body of Bliss is the essence of the Higher Mind.[3]

The Vital Principle manifests itself in various functions. All movement in matter may be reduced to the centripetal and centrifugal, attraction and repulsion, which are psychically, like (*Rāga*) and dislike (*Dveṣa*) and physically cohesion and affinity on the one hand, and their opposites on the other. Cohesion which links together the elements of bodies manifests in the mutual actions of the molecules. Affinity operates between particles of different bodies determining the majority of chemical reactions. Gravitation is an immense form of attraction and volcanic action is a repulsion on a

[1] Manas of the Manomaya-Kośa.

[2] Maitrī-Up., 6—13.

[3] Prāṇo vā annasya raso, manah prāṇasya, vijñānaṃ manasah, ānandaṃ vijñānasya.

large scale. In osmotic phenomena,[1] molecular attraction and repulsion are most clearly shown, there being produced two currents in a converse direction called exosmose and endosmose. These simple molecular attractions and repulsions, acting in the bosom of liquids, govern a great number of vital phenomena and are, it has been said, perhaps one of the most important causes of the formation of living beings. All such attractions and repulsions can act only at a certain distance. The term "Field of Force" is given to the space in which they are exercised and that of "Lines of Force" to the directions in which are produced the attracting and repelling effects.

Prāṇa, as a general term for Life, manifests in various ways and is thus given various names according to the functions.[2] *Prāṇa* is also the name of the chief of these functions. *Prāṇa* in the latter sense is the specific vital function which is *appropriation* or *injection*. It is the vital representative of the *centripetal* movement of matter and of the psychical principle which is Like or Attraction or *Rāga*. Leading instances of appropriation or injection are inspiration,[3] swallowing food or drink, absorption by the skin, either naturally, or in the case of medication, by skin absorption. On the macrocosmic scale *Prāṇa* is gravity. Commonly *Prāṇa-vāyu*[4] is said to include the outgoing breath.[5] But treating *Prāṇa-vāyu* as appropriation and injection, it would seem properly to come under the next head or *Apāna*.

[1] All substances which possess the property of dissolving in a liquid attract the solvent and are conversely attracted by it.

[2] The chief of these are five and so in Prāṇāgnihotra Up., 2. Prāṇa = Agni = Paramātmā surrounded by the five Vāyus—Prāṇa, Apāna, Samāna, Vyāna, Udāna.

[3] Śvāsa. See Bṛhad.-Up., 1—3—7; 5—14—3.

[4] Vāyu which comes from the root Vā = to move is here moving vital force in the form of Prāṇa. So also with Apāna-vāyu and the rest.

[5] Naiśvāsa, as in Yājñavalkya where Prāṇa is described as Śvāsa-niśvāsa-rūpa.

The latter is the specific vital function which is *ejection*, the vital representative of *centrifugal* movement in matter and of the psychical principle which is *Dveṣa*, or repulsion and dislike. The organism appropriates and injects what it likes and wants and by ejection or excretion gets rid of what is not needed. It is instanced by all forms of elimination, and expulsion such as defecation, urination, sweating, nasal and aural excretion, semination, parturition. Thus in the last case the seed is received in the womb by *Prāṇa-vāyu* and is expelled as the child by *Apāna-vāyu*. On the macrocosmic scale we see it in operation in volcanic eruptions and oozing of moisture from the rocks and the like. It would be possible to resolve all vital functions into these two—*Prāṇa* and *Apāna*, but with greater particularity, vital functions are classified under three additional classes.

The third *Vāyu* is *Samāna*, the function of which is *assimilation*. By this food is selected and rejected, broken up, metamorphosed in digestion and then assimilated.

Vyāna is in general terms the function of *distribution*. What has been appropriated by *Prāṇa* and is not subject of ejection by *Apāna*; what has been assimilated by *Samāna*, is distributed by *Vyāna*. It includes conveyance of fluid blood produced from digested food, as also bodily movements as a whole, such as jumping, throwing and any function not included in the foregoing or the next.

Udāna-vāyu is concerned in the exhibition of *voice-function*, utterance as talking, singing, shouting, utilising for this purpose the air inhaled by *Prāṇa*.[1] It is to be here observed that the physical air inbreathed is not *Prāṇa* nor is the breath expired *Prāṇa*. Prāṇa-vāyu is the vital function by which the air is indrawn.

[1] See generally Caraka (Śārīraka-sthāna, 1—3). Suśruta, Cakradatta, Śiva-saṃhitā, Jñāna-saṃkalinī-Tantra and Gaurīkānjalikā-Tantra, Shāradā-Tilaka with Rāghava-Bhatta's Comm., 1—45.

Five subsidiary Vāyus are also enumerated, concerned in the functions of belching, eyelid movement, hungering and thirsting, yawning and hiccup,[1] the last of which is a tonic contraction or spasm which takes place if there is no corresponding expansion and may perhaps be also identified with the *rigor mortis*.[2]

Besides these gross Vāyus there are others, Yoga-Śāstra speaking of forty-nine.

The term Prāṇa is used also in a general way as being speech;[3] vitality in the limbs,[4] offspring,[5] the principle of movement,[6] food,[7] and the Sun which is the material source of all earthly life.[8]

The abovementioned special vital functions have each a centre of operation which centres are commonly said to be, as regards the first five principal *Vāyus*, in the throat (*Udāna*), heart (*Prāṇa*), navel (*Samāna*), anus (*Apāna*), and the whole body (*Vyāna*). It is however a mistake to identify the seats of these vital forces with these gross physical bodily regions. What is thereby indicated are the five subtle centres or Cakras in the spinal column called Viśuddha, Anāhata, Maṇipūra, Svādhiṣṭhāna and Mūlādhāra of which the Tattvas are "Ether," "Air," "Fire," "Water" and "Earth,"

[1] Nāga, Kūrma, Kṛkara, Devadatta, Dhanaṃjaya. To these some add others.

[2] It is said not to leave the body even after death. On this account apparently it is called Laukika Vāyu (Rāghava-Bhatta, Comm. on Śāradā, 1—45) as it remains in the body when all the other vital forces have abandoned it.

[3] Br.-Up., 1—3—27. [4] *Ib.*, 1—3—19. [5] *Ib.*, 1—4—17.

[6] Vāyu, as in Bṛhad.-Up., 1—1—1. Vātah prāṇah; where it is said to be the third part of Puruṣa, the other two being Fire (*Agni*) and Water (*Jala*), these three being the Dośas of the body in the Vaidya-Śāstra. See also Muṇdaka Up., 2—1—4, Mahā-nārāyaṇa Up., 14—1.

[7] Maitrī Up., 6—13. By food Prāṇa and by Prāṇa strength; by the Prāṇas Manas: Mahā-nārāyaṇa-Up., 23—1. Anna is both food and matter.

[8] Āditya is Prāṇa. Praśna-Up., 1—5; it is the outer Prāṇa (Bahih prāṇa), *Ib.*, 3—8.

respectively, these being names for various motions and densities of matter.[1] Thus, in utterance, the physical throat is involved but the subtle vital centre is in the spine. The physical heart is merely a pumping machine, not directly concerned in breathing, though energy expanded in utterance may affect the cardiac movements. The navel has nothing to do with assimilation, the centre of which is at that portion of the spine which passes through the navel region. *Apāna* is not in the physical anus but in the Svādhiṣṭhāna-Cakra in the lower part of the spinal column. *Vyāna* is said to be "in the whole body" in the sense that its operation is over the whole body, from its seat in the lowest spinal centre, the Mūlādhāra. The production of the *Jīva* is from this centre, though the process of reproduction namely semination is from the urethra governed by the Svādhiṣṭhāna tract.[2]

The Tantras, on the Yoga side, give the colours of the several vital forces observable by Yogic vision.[3] These colours are (following the order of the *Prāṇa-vāyus* given) emerald (*Prāṇa*), red like evening sun (*Apāna*), milky (*Samāna*), white like Dhatūrā flower (*Vyāna*), colour of fire and lightning (*Udāna*).[4]

It has been observed that the Yoga-Sāstra speaks of forty-nine *Vāyus*. The Six Cakras are seats of the Letters and

[1] See A. Avalon's "Serpent Power". These are the five physical centres. We are not here concerned with the sixth or mental Ajñā-cakra. The words "ether" "air" are not to be understood in the English sense of the terms. See *Op. cit.*

[2] As regards the minor Vāyus, Nāga, Kūrma, Kṛkara, Devadatta, Dhanaṃjaya, their places are given in Rāghava-bhatta, Comm. to vv. 44, 45 of Ch. 1 Śāradā-tilaka.

[3] Yoga-dṛṣti. Prāṇa-Tattva is in Vedānta derived collectively from the Rajas or activity aspect of the Tanmātras or infra-sensible "matter" one of such Tanmātras being colour and form. All Tanmātras except the first two are with form (Mūrta). Prāṇa is a form of Kṛiyā- Śakti.

[4] The colours of the subsidiary Vāyus are dark cloud (Nāga), collyrium black (Kūrma), scarlet like the China rose (Kṛkara), white like crystal (Devadatta), white like Dhatūra flower (Dhanaṃjaya).

Tattvas or Principles of Mind and Matter. The sixth is the subtle psychic centre, and the remaining are subtle centres of physical function. It is clear that the first is more subtle than the remaining five. It is also clear that these five are less and less subtle between themselves as descent is made from the fifth to the first centre or Cakra, for they are the seats of Ākāśa, Vāyu, Agni, Ap and Pṛthivī, the five forms of movement which go to make up sensible matter perceived by the five senses. Each of these is more material or gross than that which preceded it. This greater materialisation as we descend is due to the increase of Tamas or Mass. The pulse of movement slows with each increase of Mass and thus the highest number of vibrations is in the highest centre and these gradually decrease until the last or "Earth" centre is reached. In each of these centres there are certain letters, 50 in number if we include Kṣa, in the Ājñā or psychical centre, or 49 if we exclude Kṣa as being a letter compounded of two other letters (Ka and Ṣa) appearing in the subsequent series. The letters are themselves each forms of movement of varying intensity or rate of vibration of which we become sensible by reason of the *Dhvani* or Sound which is their revealer. Thus *Dhvani* is not the letter but its revealer[1] and is caused by the contact of the vocal organs and the surrounding air producing sound-waves in it. The letter (*Varṇa*) itself is eternal[2] movement, which is known as "the sound which is not produced by the striking of things together" (*Anāhata-Śabda*), and which is revealed as gross sound to the gross ear through *Dhvani*. The vibrations of the letters are the same as those of the *Tattva* of the centre in which they are—in fact the letter is the movement of the Tattva manifested to the

[1] See "Garland of Letters" by the author.

[2] In this and other similar cases "eternal" means during the life period of each cosmic system; these being infinite it is eternal, though appearing and disappearing with the dissolution of the particular system. The true Eternal or Brahman does not appear and disappear.

Ear as Letter (*Varṇa*). For this reason, when on a proper[1] initiation, a Mantra is given, if the disciple is, on examination, found to be constituted in such a way that any Tattva is in excess or deficient, then the Mantra of that Tattva is given to him with the instruction to repeat it, if in excess with the outbreathing (*Ucchvāsa*), when so much of the *Tattva* is ejected or if in deficiency with the inbreathing (*Śvāsa*), when so much of the *Tattva* is injected, a practice which proceeds on the lines that the Tattva and its Mantra are one and the same.[2] The object is to obtain an equipoise, as near as may be, of the Tattvas which are variously predominant in various bodies. At the same time *Prāṇāyāma* regulates the psychic movements (*Vṛtti*), for breathing and thinking-movements synchronise. The letters are distributed as follows, 2 (consonants), 16 (vowels), 12, 10, 6, 4 consonants in each of the Cakras respectively. After the first psychic centre the order of the five Prāṇas, relative to the Cakras, are, as stated, *Ūdāna* in the second, *Prāṇa* in the third, *Samāna* in the fourth, *Apāna* in the fifth, and *Vyāna* in the lowest or sixth. From this it follows that *Vyāna* should be (as is in fact the case) the grossest of the five *Vāyus*, and Udāna which is called the Supreme *Vāyu* is the most subtle, after of course the vibrations of the psychic centre which are more subtle than any of the vibrations and movements of physical functions. That these centres govern and regulate the vital functions assigned to them is obvious from the scheme. A matter however which requires enquiry is the answer to the query what is the significance of the number of the letters in each Cakra relative to the vital function governed by it. It will be observed that starting from the last Cakra the number of letters increases 2, 4, 2, 4. To

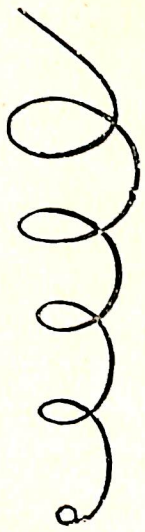
[1] Apparently many, if not most, initiations mean nothing nowadays, owing to the ignorance and apathy of both Guru and disciple.

[2] The Bīja-Mantra ends with the Anuśvara breathing or the letter Ma (M) as in this the "Sun" of letters the Tattvas or Principles are considered to be in equipoise.

perfect the above scheme it would apparently have to be shown that *Vyāna* had four forms of movement, manifested collectively or separately, in the functions assigned to it; *Āpāna* had six and so on. There are thus 49 forms of vibration in which Vital Force exhibits itself and the Letters are Life-forces revealed to us by gross sound. In short the "Garland of Letters" represents all the Forces which go to the making of the universe made known to us as *Dhvani*, just as they are manifest to us in other ways through other senses. The above account will also explain why there can be such a thing as medical and spiritual treatment, by sound and Mantra. We treat disease by touch, as in massage, and medication through the skin; through the eye by colour,[1] by the tongue through medicine placed on it and gross drugging; by the nose through chloroform inhalation and olfaction generally. The influence of harmonious sound as Music is invariably acknowledged. In the Yoga-Śāstra lettered sound is operative also, since it stands for a movement which exists also in the constitution of the person sought to be affected thereby. *Ākāsa* is operative in Māntric treatment, *Vāyu* in electric treatment, *Tejas* in that by radium heat and light, *Ap* in Hydropathy, and *Pṛthivī* in drugging with solids and liquids. This last is the grossest form of medical treatment. How gross and unnatural then is the modern treatment (if it be in fact such) by injection into the body of vaccines, serum, colloid preparations and the like?

The appended diagram will more clearly explain the matters described in the Text. The spiraline coil which gradually contracts, as matter becomes more and more gross, is Kuṇḍalinī-Śaktī.

[1] The colour treatment has been tried for several diseases and the effect of various colours on the mind is well-known.

Ājñā centre (external) region (eyebrows)	Ha———	Kṣa.	Psychic function or Antahkaraṇa-vṛtti
Viśuddha-cakra (throat)		16 vowels	Udāna form of vital force (Utterance)
An'āhata-cakra (heart)		12 consonants	Prāṇa form of vital force (Injection)
Maṇipūra-cakra (stomach)		10 consonants	Samāna form of vital force (Assimilation)
Svādhiṣṭhāna-cakra (genitals)		6 consonants	Apāna form of vital force (Ejection)
Mūlādhāra-cakra (Perinaeum)		4 consonants	Vyāna form of vital force (Distribution)
		49	

The Āyurveda and other medical Śāstras treat of three Forces in the organism called Vāta or Vāyu, Pitta, Kapha, usually translated as "Air," "Bile" and "Phlegm" over which some merriment is made, as over so many other things by the non-understanding. The gross or physical body is composed of five forces and the forms of material substance which they constitute. The first of these five is Ākāśa or Ether, though the former term is not to be altogether identified as is sometimes done with the Western physical Ether. For the moment[1] it may be defined as the continuum in which the plurality of individual centres move. The last is Pṛthivī which is literally translated "Earth" but really means any matter in solid state. Āyurveda does not deal in this connection with Ether but with the centres which are interpenetrated by it, nor does it deal separately with Pṛthivī because, for its practical purposes, it regards both liquids and solids as solids. The remaining three are first Vāyu which is

[1] I deal with the subject in "Power as Matter" (Bhūta-Śakti).

translated "Air". Many are under the error of supposing that the air we breathe is Vāyu. Air is composed of oxygen, nitrogen, carbon dioxide, vapour and various other things. It is not a gas or chemical compound, but a mechanical combination of various gases and floating matter in mechanical combination. It cannot be accurately defined, for the nature of air, in this sense, varies at different places. It is not the same in a town as in the country, nor in the country as at the seaside, nor in a valley as on a mountain height. Vāyu is not air but the *menstruum* in which air, the mechanical combination, exists and by which it is held together. Vāyu comes from the root *Vā* which means "to move" and is, in its primary sense, motivity. Possibly as a substance constituted by such motivity it may be electric fluid just as Ākāśa or Vyoma may in the gross plane be ethereal fluid.

In the body it is exhibited as nerve force and as also any kind of electro-motor or molecular force and is in fact the power whereby the other principles of the body move. For without it they are said to be "cripples". In short it is as Suśruta says the force which sets the whole organism in motion.[1] It is the principal factor which determines the genesis, continuance and disintegration of the living body. This Vāyu is classified according to its function as Prāṇa, Apāna and the rest above described with five subdivisions of each. The other two principles are Pitta which literally means Bile and Kapha which literally means Phlegm. But these are not either, except under those conditions in which they are transformed into Malās or fit to be ejected; but they are not Bile and Phlegm in those planes of their functions which determine the genesis, growth and continuance of the organism as well as its death, decay, and disintegration.

[1] See Introduction by A. Avalon to Prapañcasāra-Tantra, Vol. 3. Tantrik Texts and the English translation of Śuśruta Saṃhitā by Kavirāja Kunjalāla Bhiṣagratna.

The function of Pitta or Agni (Fire) is, amongst others, metabolism and the bodily heat which is the product of the latter. One of its important functions is digestion, metaplasia, and assimilation. There are said to be 5 chief "Fires" [1] in the body each again of four subdivisions [2] as in the case of the next Principle or Śleṣmā. Kapha or Śleṣmā which is similarly divided is Apa, that is, the moisture principle. The watery principle keeps in check the last. The equipoise of these principles is essential to health. If Heat (Pitta) predominates the body dries up, if Moisture (Kapha) predominates heat is extinguished and if Motivity predominates there is irregularity everywhere. These three principles embrace the whole sphere of organic existence. These three principles are called Doṣas [3] and Duṣya is that which is affected.[4] All Life as movement arises under conditions of heat and moisture which as the manifestation of Divinity are the objects of worship in the Vedas.

There is as yet no general agreement on the fundamental problem of the nature of Instinct. Instinctive behaviour has been defined by Dr. Lloyd Morgan as that which is, on its first occurrence, independent of prior experience, which tends to the well-being of the individual and preservation of the race, and which is similarly performed by all the members of the same group of animals, and which may be subject to modification under the guidance of experience. Instinct is also not uncommonly described as race-habit. Instinct is an organised expression of what goes on in the unconscious. It

[1] See *Ibid.*

[2] Thus Pācaka Pitta which is digestive heat is divided into one digestive fire of the mouth, two digestive fires in the stomach namely peptic and hydrochloric acid and two in the intestines namely Pancreatic and Bile secretions.

[3] Literally Faults because of the diseases to which their disharmony leads.

[4] See Prapañcasāra 15, namely, the Dhātus or substances, skin, blood, fat, etc.

is, however, now thought that animals are not altogether perfect in their instinctive functioning. Instinct is a Saṃskāra or tendency and aptitude manifesting as vital Power in Prāṇa. On its first occurrence in any individual it is independent of prior experience as had in that particular form, but it does not actually then commence but is a tendency, now latent now patent, in the whole series of evolution to which the individual displaying instinct belongs. The behaviour of inorganic matter is apparently fixed and calculable and seems mechanical. This fixedness of behaviour though less rigid appears in living substance as instinct. But not only is there a relatively greater freedom but the instinct may become modified and from out this basis of instinctive action, self-consciousness and self-directed movement arise.

Heat, light and moisture are the generating conditions of all life evolved by the life-giving principle. It is heat and moisture diffused throughout nature which fosters life in all its forms. This Heat and Moisture, like all else, exist in gross, subtle and causal forms. Agni, Varuṇa and Soma are with others, names of the One—"That which is one the wise call it by various names." [1] When then it is said in Veda [2] that in the beginning there was the Causal Water in which the One developed by the power of, or out of, Tapas and Desire [3] reference is not made to material Heat but to that intensive creative brooding thought and will which projects the universe, in which one of its gross transformations is material Heat in many forms some subtle, some gross. Fire is seen in the heavenly bodies, flaming masses of molten viscous or earthy matter, in lightning which liberates a kind of light and heat [4] latent in the aqueous particles and vapours [5] just as the

[1] Ṛg-Veda, I. 64. [2] X. 129.

[3] Kāma that is Ichchā or creative will. [4] Tejas.

[5] Agni is "Son of the Water". The lightning flashes from the celestial cloud-ocean.

ordinary domestic and sacrificial fire [1] liberates it from wood or fuel.[1] Fire is stored up in the igneous rocks and exists as the various stores of animal heat. There are thus said to be ten Agnis or fires in the body.[2] In short heat, light, moisture as everything else which is manifested are various modes of the motion or activity of the supreme source of all such activities or Power. For the Vedāntists resolve all activity, physical, vital, and psychical into modes of subtle cosmic motion. It is not however the heat or moisture which directly and alone generates life. They are merely the conditions under which Supreme Power as Prāṇa-Śakti manifests itself. That Supreme Power is manifested. Whilst all manifestation is movement, whilst all manifestation is a transformation of one and the same material Cause, yet differing names are given to the differing manifested forms. These denote the functioning or Power. It is that Power which manifests as both organised and unorganised matter but the organisation of it is not by matter but by and as the Power Itself in Its aspect as the organiser of matter, to be the receptacle of all the grades of life. What then are these grades?

Given the fact that all beings and things have their origin in one and the same material cause of which they are transformations, it necessarily follows that all things are essentially and ultimately one. They are one as to the general Energy-Substance (*Śakti*) of which they are manifestations which Energy-Substance is active to reveal the static Reality as

[1] The flame of burning wood (Indhana) is not pure Tejas for there is chemical union with earth-particles acted on by energy when the light and heat particles latent therein come forth as flame. It is not that the fire which is seen is there unseen but the potential energy which, given the necessary conditions, manifests as the seen fire.

[2] Three are immanent in the Doṣas and seven in the Duṣyas (see Introd. Prapañcasāra-Tantra, Vol. III, Tantrik Texts Ed., by A. Avalon). Pitta is fivefold, *viz.* Pācaka, Rañjaka, Sādhaka, Alocaka, Bhrājaka as also Kapha, *viz.*, Śleṣmaka, Kledaka, Bodhaka, Tarpaka, Avalaṃbaka.

Mind or to obscure it as Matter. But this Energy or Power has various modes. These are the varied forms of it, displaying the generic and specific qualities of things. The qualities of things are modes of Power (*Śakti*) acting in these collocations. These forms appear according to an order or law of succession under conditions of causality, space, time and mode and hence in the world all effects do not manifest themselves at once. So-called inorganic matter and organic matter as vegetable or animal organisms[1] however differing as forms are thus essentially and ultimately one—in respect of their Substance-Energy. Metaphysical continuity is indicated in the graded continuity of forms.[2] At each stage of evolution there is a going forth (*Prasara*) of Power (Śakti) which stores up its Energy in some relatively stable form. There is then another push of Power to form a fresh equilibrium. These points of relatively stable equilibrium constitute stages in the evolutionary process. The redistribution of mass and energy which occurs at each of such stages constitutes the various forms of chemical, vegetable and animal species. There is no matterless mind nor mindless matter. The question is whether (the Cause, being transformed into inorganic matter), the power to organise the latter so as to display the phenomena of life comes directly from the inherent power of the effect as such, or must be attributed to the Cause as a special form of functioning which is Prāṇa or the Life Principle. All change

[1] Organic compounds are either vegetable (Sthāvara or Acara-Bhūtā or immovables) or animal (Asthāvara or Cara or Jaṅgama Bhūta). Both are compounded of the five forms of sensible matter (Bhūta) in greater or less proportions.

[2] See Seal *Op. cit.*, 17, 55, on the Sāṃkhya, citing Pātañjala-Sūtras and Vyāsa-Bhāṣya. So it is said: Jalabhūmyoh parināmikam rasadivaiśvarūpam sthāvareṣu dṛṣtham. Tathā sthāvarāṇāṃ jaṅgameṣu jaṅgamāṇaṃ sthāvareṣu (the evolved properties of Rasa and the like are seen in immovables that is vegetables. And these properties of immovables or vegetables are seen in animals and these properties of animals are seen in vegetables that is immovables).

is transformation of Energy due to collocations of the threefold tendencies of the material cause in its varied products. The potential energies of infra-sensible matter[1] are actualised as the five forms of gross sensible matter.[2] The latter is a compound of the former and undergoes a change of state. From the five forms, compound substances are made and so the variety of all substances in the world is produced. These material substances go to the up-building of the bodies of all forms of organic life. These show vital phenomena of birth, assimilation of food, growth, death, sentiency, waking and sleep, health, disease, reproduction, response and movement within limits.[3] Plants[4] have a sort of dormant or latent consciousness and are capable of pleasure and pain.[5] Cakrapāṇi in the Bhānumati speaks of such consciousness as being of a stupified sort, that is darkened or comatose;[6] as also Udyāna who speaks of their very dull dormant consciousness.[7] In a well-known passage from the Śāntiparva of the Mahābhārata, it is said that plants have a (rudimentary) sense of hearing, touch, sight, smell and taste.[8] They feel pleasure and pain and when cut down they die. "Therefore (it is said) I see

[1] Tanmātra. [2] Bhūta.

[3] Seal, 169 where some authorities are given.

[4] See as to Hindu ideas concerning plants and plant life, Seal *Op. cit.*, 169.

[5] *Ib.* Antah-saṁjñā bhavantyete sukhaduhkha-samanvitāh (these have inner consciousness consisting of pleasure and pain).

[6] Vṛkṣāstu cetanāvanto'pi tamaścannajnā-natayā śāstropadeśa-viṣayā eva. (Trees though possessed of consciousness by reason of their consciousness being overspread by Tamas are esteemed objects according to Śāstric teaching).

[7] Atimandāntahsaṃjñitayā iti (because vested with a low degree of inner consciousness).

[8] The illustrations given are:
It is affected by thunder; it dries up under the touch of heat; the creeper finds its way and is therefore not eyeless; it drinks through its root and knows whether water is healthy and has therefore taste. Various odours free it from disease so that it bears flowers and so it has sense of smell.

Jīva, that is living organism, in it. There is no unconsciousness there."[1]

The next evolutionary stage (however brought about) is the lowest, lower, and then the higher forms of animal life and lastly man. The differences between plant and animal life have always been regarded by the Hindus as being one not of kind but degree.

Moisture and Heat are essential factors in the generation of all animated matter which is divided into four chief divisions of which the plant life is the first and lowest. It is born through moisture and heat[2] and is called Udbhijja that is that which "pierces up" from the ground such as grasses, creepers and other plant forms. These spring from seeds. Life-potentiality is not merely contained in the seed but in the seed and environing conditions. The animal seed is developed in the egg or in the case of viviparous animals the mother's body. The mother's body, in the case of the plant-seed, is the earth, subject to the play of air, warmth and moisture.[3]

The next class is called Svedaja or Uṣmaja, moisture or heat-born. These conditions are common to plant life and the following forms of animal life. It was supposed by some of the ancients both in the East and West that there was a sort of spontaneous generation of the lowest forms of life from moist and heated inorganic matter such as rotten wood and excreta. Not improbably the reason for this was the minute character of the seed or germ and lack of knowledge as regards generation by fissure or gemmation. The opinion however

[1] Jīvaṃ paśyāmi acaitanyaṃ na vidyate.

[2] Svedaja or Uṣmaja. "Heat" not "sweat" as some absurdly translate it.

[3] Rāghava-Bhatta (Comm. on Śāradā-Tilaka, I.27) says that when the earth is thus prepared it gets the state of "seedness" (Bījatva). The seed is planted and watered and then the seed attains the root-stage (Mūlabhāva) and then sprouts and continues to grow.

was also held that Svedaja animal must be included there under the oviparous or plant-seed class; the idea being that though vegetable organisms may pass off into animal there cannot be generation without seed[1], or ovum, and inorganic matter without either of these cannot give rise to animated matter in any form.[2]

The next division was the Aṇdaja or oviparous animals and the highest and last the Jarāyuja the viviparous or placental. An ancient author's[3] classification is based on the number of senses possessed by animals, such number determining its place in the series. As none of the senses are wholly absent in any form of living matter, probably only well-developed and active senses were alone intended; rudimentary or dormant senses being not reckoned. This classification has the advantage of distinguishing man from other mammalia which like him are viviparous by the former's possession of five well-developed and active senses and all the mental operations based thereon.

The constituents of the physical body are called Dhātu, of which there are seven, namely, Chyle (Rasa) derived from food, Blood (Rakta) derived from chyle, Flesh (Māṃsa) derived from blood, Fat (Meda) derived from flesh, Bone (Asthi) derived from fat, Marrow (Majjā) derived from bone, Seed (Śukra) derived from marrow.[4] The seed of woman is called Strī-śukra and sometimes Śoṇita—which in this connection does not mean menstrual blood which is Ārtava. All

[1] Bīja.

[2] Seal *Op. cit.*, 181, citing Cāndogya-Upaniṣad, Praṗāṭhaka 6, Part 3 and Saṃkara, Comm. on same, where the classification of animals is on this basis of their Bīja, that is seed or ovum.

[3] Umasvati, the author of the Jaina work Tattvārthādhigama. Seal *Op. cit.*, 188.

[4] In some cases Tvak (Skin), Roma (Hair), are stated in lieu of, or in addition to, those above stated. Thus Bhāskararāya in his commentary on the seventh Ṛk of Bhāvanopaniṣad speaks of nine Dhātus, *viz.*, those given in the Text and Roma and Tvak.

this development takes place by metaplasm or conversion of one tissue into another. By heat the Chyle becomes Blood which is built up into Flesh, and also by a reverse process it becomes Fat with its interstices in which, by deposit of calcium salt, the bone is formed. Marrow is formed by the tunnelling of the bones of the tissue of which it is the essence. Semen (Śukra) is the essence again of marrow and the most elaborated of the Dhātus, which exists not merely in the testicles but is spread in subtle form throughout the whole body in the subtile channels known as the Śukravāhinī-Nādīs, and is worked up into the gross form in which it is ejected in the genital organs.[1] The tissues of the developed seed in the male (Śukra) and female (Strī-śukra) generates the child. Ojah is not one of the seven Dhātus but a substance which may be said to be the essence of all, which gives vitality to all and which "when it dies, man also wishes to die". It gives glow to the whole body. The Devatās of these seven Dhātus are Dākinī and others situated in the seven Cakras or centres.[2]

Three principles are at work in the body namely Pitta, Kapha, Vāta, the rendering of which as "Bile," "Phlegm" and "Air" gives no idea of their meaning. They represent the principles of Heat (Tejas), Moisture (Ap) and Activity (Vāta or Vāyu) respectively. The first two, when in excess manifest abnormal states of Bile and Phlegm which are excretions (Malā) of substance of which the body is ridding itself.

[1] The extraordinary use to which some so-called "Tantriks" put semen is founded on the theory that it is Soma which gives deathlessness in the physical body.

[2] Dākinī, Rākinī, Lākinī, Kākinī, Ṣākinī, Hākinī, Yākinī which according to the Mahāyoginī-Nyāsa in the Saubhāgya-ratnākara are protective Devatās over skin, blood, flesh, fat, bone, marrow, seed and all other Dhātus respectively situate in the Viśuddha, Anāhata, Maṇipūra, Svādhiṣṭhāna, Mūlādhāra, Ājñā, Sahasrāra respectively.

In the Ṣatcakra-nirūpaṇa (Serpent Power) Dākinī, Rākinī, Kākinī, Ṣākinī are in Mūlādhāra, Svādhiṣṭhāna, Anāhata, Viśuddha respectively, the other three being the same.

These three are called Doṣas. Vāta is classified into Prāna, Apāna and so forth above mentioned. All metabolic processes are called Pitta, which has also five subdivisions according to functions and locations. Kapha or Śleṣmā is also of five kinds, the functions of which are to supply to the body its watery element. Vāyu, Pitta and Kapha are thus fundamental principles of the human economy when, in virtue of their correlative and sustentative functions, they ensure an equipoise among the different vital and physiological processes essential to its health; for disease is a lack of harmony and of completeness. Hence the word " hale " which means " whole ". When the equilibrium is disturbed, pathological conditions arise which form the *esse* of disease and then they are said to be transformed into Doṣas or morbific diatheses. As excretions of Apāna Vāyu they are called Malās. Thus Vāyu, Pitta, Kapha are not "Air," " Bile," and " Phlegm " except under those circumstances in which they are transformed into Malās. They embrace both the biological and pathological principles of the organisms.[1]

The whole body is intersected by channels or Nādis which are both gross and visible as nerves and arteries, and also subtile and invisible to ordinary, but visible to yogic, vision. The " Eye of Food " is not the only one. Thus recent mention has been made [2] of the extra-ordinary capacity of a man to discern through the clothed body the existence of morbific growths in it. This is only an instance of the Siddhi of clairvoyance which it is claimed laid bare to the Yogīs the numerous subtile channels though which the bodily Energy-Substance functions.[3]

[1] See my Introduction to Prapañcasāra-Tantra, Vol. 3. Tantrik Texts and the Suśruta-Saṃhitā (English Trans.) Edited by Kavirāja Kunjalāla Bhiṣagratna. Like the old Western systems the Indian is a kind of " humoral " system.

[2] By Sir Conan Doyle in his " Wanderings of a Spiritualist," p 137.

[3] See as to these Yoga-Nādī, Avalon's " Serpent Power ".

In the highest, man—evolution on the material plane ends. Evolution takes place through the Power of God which as material cause is always transforming Itself into higher forms in order that Spirit may be freed of the bonds of Mind and Matter in which It has involved Itself. This is the Eternal Rhythm of the Divine Mother as Substance-Energy. He who "sees", that is, creates Otherness, resolves it into Herself again. That is His "Play" (Līlā). Those who enter into the spirit of it and follow its laws gather the fruits of the world. It is given to man alone to recognise the Player, to unite himself with Her and thus to free himself from the fields of play which are the eternally recurrent universes. The Devotee (Bhakta) of the Mother as She is in Herself—seeks not Her limited forms, but Her own unbounded Self. It is not life in forms that he wants, though he knows them to be the Mother-Power, but the Life of all Lives which is Her own Brahman-self. But there is also another form of Devotion, that is Devotion to Her as Form, as universe. Here too *Siddhi* of the so-called "lower form" is obtained when the form is recognised as Her form. For that recognition is itself strengthening of individual power. In Karmayoga without attachment both ends and aims are served.

APPENDIX

LIFE AND THE FIRST PRINCIPLES

By Professor Pramathanātha Mukhyopādhyāya

Like many other terms such as 'Ākāśa,' 'Jyotih, etc., the term 'Prāṇa' is used in the Śruti to connote, in the ultimate sense, Brahman. The Vedānta discussing certain texts (see Vedānta, I. 1. 23, I. 1. 28, etc.) from the Cāndogya and Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇa attempts to establish this.

In fact, any Principle which exists and acts as adhiṣthāna (ground) in relation to any bhūtas (created things) is a manifestation of Brahman.

Because the ground or Adhiṣthāna is everywhere Brahman; the part is always grounded in the whole (Pūrṇa), the particulars in the general.

If, for example, X exists as the ground of the things A, B, C, then X, in so far as it is the ground, is a manifestation of Brahman which is the Ground Principle.

Now, Prāṇa even in the ordinary sense is the ground of the Indriyas. The Indriyas work so long as the Prāṇa is there in the body; they cease to exist when Prāṇa leaves the body. In *Suṣupti* again, the sense-capacities are absorbed in the Prāṇa; in Jāgrat they reappear out of it again. "Yadā vai puruṣah svapiti prāṇaṃ tarhi vāgapyeti prāṇaṃ cakṣhuh prāṇaṃ manah prāṇaṃ śrotraṃ; sa yadā prabudhyate prāṇādevādhi punarjayanta iti."

Hence, Prāṇa as the ground of the senses is a manifestation of the Ground Principle (*i.e.*, Brahman).

But Prāṇa in the ordinary sense is not the ultimate ground—the Pūrṇa itself. So that Brahman is spoken of as "Prāṇasya Prāṇah"—the Life of Life.

The matter may be stated otherwise:

The bodily functions including the sense-functions represent a stress-system (or system of acting and reacting forces).

Prāṇa is the root or ground of such functions; because without it they all cease.

Therefore, Prāṇa is the radix of a particular stress-system.

The radix of stress-system considered as a whole is Brahman (as Cit).

Hence, Prāṇa is an aspect or manifestation of the Ultimate Radix (*i.e.*, Brahman).

The question, however, is this:

How does the ultimate Ground Principle become (or appear to become) an individualised or circumscribed Ground Principle ? In other words, how does Prāṇasya Prāṇah appear as Prāṇa? If we know the process and its stages, we know the mutual relations of Mind, Life and Matter which are all aspects of the Ultimate Principle.

To understand this, let us begin by analysing our world of experience (*i.e.*, Fact).

World of experience = Cit involving Stress ('Stress' meaning Power to evolve or appear as a varied order of phenomena) = Cit (Sattva, Rajah, Tamah) ; S, R, T, being the three partials into which stress can be decomposed. Now, what is the nature of Cit considered as Cidākāśa (Ether of Consciousness) ?

On reflection on the nature of this Ether of Consciousness, we find that it possesses three svarūpa lakṣaṇas—*viz.*, unity, wholeness and freedom: It is Eka; It is Pūrṇa; It is Abādhita (*i.e.*, uncircumscribed, unrestricted). The whole Stress-system operates *in* this Ether.

Though the Ether as Cit never really loses Its nature (anyathābhāva), it appears, by reason of the operation of the Stress-system (*i.e.*, S, R, T) in it, to move or change. As for example, the ākāśa which is contained or circumscribed by a jar *seems* to move from one place to another when the jar itself is moved.

Since, however, the Stress-system is really one with the Cit Itself, we may say that the latter has two aspects, *viz.*, static (Śiva) and moving or kinetic (Śakti); that is, Cit is kinetic (Śaṃkara, from the transcendental point of view, will say—*seems* to be kinetic) without ever ceasing to be static: Śakti must ever play on the breast of Śiva. The relation stated is alogical. To speak of 'aspects' of what is an indivisible unity is pictorial thinking. We cannot however help this if we must think and speak at all about the unthinkable and unspeakable Fact.

Let us consider the Motion-aspect. How can we state the Movement? Stress is resolved into three factors—S, R and T (Sattva, rajah, tamah). Movement of the Stress-system is its movement between the two limits,

viz., S (manifestation) and T (veiling). That is, the Stress-system moves from maximum veiling to maximum manifestation (or minimum veiling), and *vice versa*. Manifestation of what?—Of the Essence.

The movement is rhythmic.

The movement of the world as a whole is rhythmic (alternate sṛṣṭi and laya); movement is rhythmic in the details also, *e.g.*, heavenly motions, seasons, etc., motions in the living cells and organisms, motions in the atoms, and so on.

To use a physical figure, the movement cannot be represented by a moving simple pendulum; it is rather spiraline, or coiling movement.

Since it is rhythmic also, the Stress-system is alternately coiled and uncoiled.

Movement, therefore, analysed gives us these two elements:

(1) A finitising process; (2) an uncoiling and coiling procsss (vikāśa and laya). By the former we have in the world an hierarchy of samaṣtis and vyaṣtis (genera and species) having at the one end Īśvara as the *Summum Genus* and at the other the "point charges" or Śakti-vindus which are the *infima species*.

On account of the existence of this hierarchy, we have a double set of world-derivates, *viz.*—a Samaṣti principle and its vyaṣti mode, *e.g.*, we have both Samaṣti manas and vyaṣti manas; Samaṣti prāṇa and vyaṣti prāṇa. 'Samaṣti' does not mean 'arithmetical sum total'.

The two processes (finitising and coiling-uncoiling) are concurrent.

Now, let us treat the latter process—Evolution-Involution.

Evidently the process is a resultant of two tendencies—*viz.*, association and dissociation. In the case where the former tendency preponderates, we have this fact—*viz.*, a given point, A, more and more recedes from the centre X; this is uncoiling. Where the latter tendency is in excess, we have A more and more nearing X; this is coiling. Where the ratio of attraction to repulsion (Rāga to Dveṣa) is constant, we have simple rotation or revolution of A round X in a fixed orbit. Where the ratio is variable, we must have evidently either the coiling or the uncoiling diagram traced by the moving point. The two tendencies are opposite *saṃskāras*; and their ratio is the *adṛṣta* of the given point A in relation to X.

In mathematical analysis we commonly regard the adṛṣṭa of a material body or particle (*e.g.*, the earth or the moon in the solar system; the electrons in the atomic system) as constant, because that assumption simplifies the data of calculation. But really a constant, unchanging

adṛṣṭa is an abstraction, not fact. Adṛṣṭa being determined by the relative dispositions of S, R, T, must change, for it is the nature of these latter to always change. Hence, the simple rotatory motion of physics is an abstraction: it is obtained by limitation of the actual data. The earth, for example, is not *exactly* revolving round the sun, but moving in an eddying sort of motion. This eddying (coiling) movement may be clockwise or anti-clockwise. When the former, the earth may be gradually drawn towards the central solar mass, and be ultimately merged in it. That will mean the laya of Pṛthivi (*i.e.*, of the plane). When the latter, the earth may be gradually receding from the solar mass, in which case again, after a certain critical stage has been reached, the earth may be dismembered from the solar system, and drift into space. In both cases we have a *critical stage*. Suppose the earth is eddying round and round *towards* the Sun; after a certain critical stage has been reached, it will cease to go round and round, but will be pulled to the centre and merged in it; *vide* the career of a piece of straw in an eddy in water. In eddying *away* from the centre there is also a critical stage, after which the body ceases to eddy, but flies off from the circuit. Orthodox Astronomy will now hardly accept this account of celestial motion, but it should be borne in mind that spiral nebulæ have doubtless played a great part in cosmogenesis. Astronomy now regards the masses of the sun and the planets as being practically constant, so that the gravitational stresses between them are supposed to maintain a permanent configuration; it also excludes all "extra-physical" forces as having anything to do with the working of the material order. But if we at all admit the view of cosmic evolution and involution, we must hold (on *à priori* grounds at least, so long as experimental or observed facts are not forthcoming) that the stresses in the solar system (or any other system) do not maintain a *permanent* scheme of bodies; that the configuration of the planets, etc., is but approximately and relatively fixed.

The parallel of the atomic system is instructive. Here Science already recognises that the system is only relatively stable; that the electrons (unit negative charges) stepping beyond a certain "critical speed" may be dissociated from the atom and flung away; this is evidenced by radio-activity amongst other phenomena. There is nothing to prevent us from imagining that an electron moving round a central positive charge may not have an absolutely fixed orbit; that it too may either eddy towards or away from the central charge according to its adṛṣṭa; that in the former case, the electron, stepping beyond a critical rate of motion is dissociated with

the result that the atom may be reconstituted (a different chemical substance may thereby be produced); and that in the latter case, the electron (negative charge) may, by curling round and round towards the central positive charge, be merged and unified with it (after a certain critical stage). This mingling of positive and negative charges means the " loss " (or dissolution) of matter—matter lapses back into Ether of which it is a strained and polarised condition. This coiling motion which we attribute to the elements of the " atom " is not unscientific, *e.g.*, the vortex-motion theory of the prime atoms is still the most promising theory of its kind.

Besides the coiling-and-uncoiling movement, the important thing to note is the " critical stage ". An operation in Nature is commonly of a certain type within certain limits, but beyond them it passes into another type. There is a critical temperature (32°F) at which water becomes ice; another (212°F) at which it becomes steam. In all physical operations we can recognise such critical stages which mark " new " transformations or appearances or directions. In vital and psychic phenomena also we have critical stages. Increased stimulation produces increased sensation (of a certain kind) up to a limit; beyond it, it produces either no sensation or sensation of a different kind. The Mutation Theory of the Origin of Species (by Hugo De Vries) holds that new species are born out of old species suddenly like " monstrosities "; implying that the motions in the germ-cell overstepping a certain critical value change the character of the germ-cell itself and thus produce a new species, just as under similar conditions a new atom may be evolved out of a given atom (*e.g.*, in radioactivity).

There is a further important thing to observe. In the operations of Nature, a new Principle of Control is introduced after each critical stage. When for example at 32°F water is transformed into ice, " something " appears amidst the molecules of H_2O to bring about their new shuffling or configuration; when again the germ-cell of the " anthropoid ape " " mutates " into the anthropic germcell, a new Principle of Control appears which develops it, physically and mentally, into a man rather than into an ape which is the starting datum. I need not take further illustrations, but simply note that the new Principle of Control is a new disposition of Power (Śakti) by which an old Form is transformed into a new; when, for example, by changing the " atomic number " the modern chemist hopes that he will be able to transmute a " base metal " (say mercury) into gold, he is searching after a new Principle of Control. Behind every

stable special "form" in Nature there must be a special Principle of Control: a Principle of Control evolves and maintains a special rūpa and nāma in the Spiritual Ether which is in itself without rūpa and nāma. In the Veda we call each definite Principle of Control (in the sense of a Form of Citśakti) a Devatā. Thus, all the special sense-capacities have their Devatās. The shābdic means whereby a special Principle of Control may be introduced (or invoked), is Mantra. The visual representation or optical diagram of the actual disposition of stress (Power) which constitutes a given Principle of Control, is its Yantra. And the Kriyā in general (including Mantra and Yantra) whereby a Principle of Control may be brought about or called into play, is Tantra. Kriyâ here means 'functioning,' whether in the body or in the mind. When, for example, in Homa we produce fire by the mutual friction of arani, we are invoking a Devatā.

Recapitulating we find that in the understanding of the world-process the following points are worthy of special note:

(1) It is a finitising process—differentiating and then integrating, and then differentiating again.

(2) It is rhythmic—moving from maximum veiling to maximum manifestation and back (coiling and uncoiling).

(3) In this process there are certain critical stages at which new forms are evolved.

(4) At each critical stage there appears a new Principle of Control.

(5) A Principle of Control is the builder and sustainer of a new form.

(6) Since the world-process runs on Samaṣti and Vyaṣti lines, we must have a graded series (hierarchy) of critical stages and Principles of Control on both the lines.

(7) A critical stage represents a "plane" in Nature; a devatā has his adhikāra corresponding to a given plane. Suppose we take three planes in descending order—A, B, C. Then, the Principle of Control corresponding to A, has adhikāra not only over A, but also over B and C; that of B, has adhikāra (jurisdiction or competence) over B and C; that of C over C alone. *Cf.* the relations of Īśvara, Hiraṇya-garbha and Virāt on the Samaṣti line.

(8) A Principle of Control on a given plane in the Samaṣti line has control over the Vyaṣti Principle of Control on the same plane.

These properties necessarily follow from the fundamental nature of Cit. Cit is Eka, Pūrṇa and Abādhita (Svādhīna). The less it is veiled, the more will this fundamental nature express itself. Now, veiling may

involve this—the Whole is hidden and only a part displayed (finitisation); and the part displayed may be more or less obscured, *e.g.*, the jāgrat-mind of man is a Vyaṣti mind, but it is more articulate (vyakta) than his svapna-mind which in its turn is more articulate than his Suṣupti-mind. We have this principle: the higher the plane, and the less restricted the sphere, the more patent the essential nature of Cit. Therefore, the plane being the same, a Samaṣti Principle will have control over the Vyaṣti Principle (because the sphere of the latter is more restricted, so that there has been greater veiling); and the extent or sphere being the same, a Principle on a higher plane will have control over a Principle on a lower plane. Thus, Vyaṣti Prāṇa will control Vyaṣti-deha; Vyaṣti-Manas, Vyaṣti-Prāṇa. There may be also, in some cases, dual control or diarchy. For instance, my mind does not seem to have complete control over the *whole* working of Prāṇa in my body; only *a part* of such working appears to be voluntary. In this case, the remaining part (which seems to be involuntary) is under the control of the Samaṣti-Manas (or Generic Mind), which control, may, after sādhana be transferred to the Vyaṣti-mind in proportion as the latter assimilates itself to the Cosmic-Mind by pushing back its limitations.

Without further discussing the details we may note that the critical stages or planes are broadly *five—viz.*, the five koṣas of the Śruti (Ānanda-maya, Vijñānamaya, Manomaya, Prāṇamaya and Annamaya). They constitute a descending series of Controlling Agencies. The lower five cakras of the body as the seats of the five tattvas (kṣiti, ap, tejah, marut, vyoma) illustrate this principle of higher and higher control. As we have pointed out, a higher Principle, because it is essentially Cit, will display to a greater degree the essential nature of Cit (unity, wholeness and freedom) than a lower one. Thus, Prāṇa is more unitary, coherent and spontaneous than matter which it controls. But even matter, being essentially the same as Prāṇa, cannot be *wholly* discrete, disorganised and "determined" (inert): it is only *approximately* so. There must be a trace of unity, organisation and spontaneity (freedom) even in the material atom. The fact that the atom is a "system" is suggestive of this. Physical science works by abstraction or limitation of the data; *e.g.*, there is *really* no "rigid" body in Nature satisfying the definition of it given by Dynamics. Science deals with Fact-sections and not with the Fact. No matter-particle is therefore "dead" and *absolutely* inert.

Suppose we consider the mechanism of a matter-particle. It is like a Chinese puzzle-box—having various concentric sheaths. It *has* all the

five koṣas. But in it all except the annamaya (gross) koṣa are yet coiled up (*i.e.* involved, potential). One koṣa alone is uncoiled (evolved, actual), and we have motions proper to this koṣa. Physical Science deals with some of these motions (approximately), and we have the "dynamical theory" of matter. Ordinarily we have no suspicion of the four other koṣas involved in the material atom. Now, suppose the motions in the outermost crust or koṣa of matter reach a certain critical stage (by reason of their adṛṣṭa or the assemblage of "subtle" stresses determining them, only *some* of which Physical Science can *approximately* compute); then, when this critical stage has been attained, the next inner koṣa (*i.e.*, Prāṇa) which had hitherto been coiled or involved, will "wake up" and begin to uncoil and evolve itself. The moment this happens, the so-called "dead" corpuscle will begin to appear as a living corpuscle. According to the principles explained before, a new Principle of Control, hitherto dormant (not absolutely dormant however) will appear on the scene. Its appearance will be marked by certain phenomena not clearly noticeable before—the vital phenomena. The living corpuscle will now seize upon the particles of C, H, N, O, build protoplasm, differentiate and integrate it in sundry ways, reproduce itself, and so on. In fact, by virtue of the uncoiling of the second koṣa, a new set of motions manifests itself, which was unmanifest so long as *its* plane or "scene" was folded up. So far as the play of forces is concerned, this question of "scene" is important; *e.g.*, I have stored up in me the saṃskāras of 84 lacs of births (*i.e.*, kinds of birth) through which I have passed; but in my present human life, the scene is suitable for the play of only some of those countless saṃskāras and unsuitable for the play of the rest.

In a similar way, the motions in the Prāṇic koṣa, by virtue of their adṛṣṭa, may reach another stage at which the third or mānasic koṣa may evolve itself. Here again a new Principle of Control is introduced. In the plants, the mānasic koṣa, though given, is undeveloped; so that the vital processes of the plant do not appear to be controlled by the saṃkalpa of the plant itself; impulses and instincts as mental activities do not clearly appear to govern plant-life. In the animals the mind-koṣa uncoils itself; in the man and other higher beings, the Buddhi-koṣa also. They are Lower Antah-karaṇa and Higher Antah-karaṇa respectively.

It should be observed, however, that the critical stages or koṣas are not absolute boundaries in Nature.

Like the colours in a rainbow, they give us but "working" and approximate boundaries.

Nor is it correct to regard the koṣas as absolutely " closed curves " without mutual influence. They do, and cannot but, influence one another.

Nor again should we restrict the scope of the transformation of energy to particular kośas only; *i.e.*, it should not be said that the energy in the material plane and that in the Prāṇic or Mānasic plane do never transform into one another. The theory of the fundamental unity of Energy will not justify it, nor will facts warrant it. When, for example, the Cāndogya says that the food eaten goes to build the mind, the water drunk to build the prāṇa, it is not speaking quite in a figurative sense. The doctrine of Conservation of Energy (as an *à posteriori* generalisation) did not take into account the vast magazines of energy now discovered in the atoms; the proof of the doctrine to-day is therefore far too difficult. We can hold the doctrine only by taking Energy *as a whole* in all its different forms (physical, prāṇic, mānasic, etc.). We hold it then as an *à priori* principle.

Suppose there is a material system consisting of the three atoms, A, B, C. Suppose also that the physical energy which they contain between them is 100. This amount excludes the vast energies which may be interned *within* the atoms themselves. 100 represents only extra-atomic energy such as heat, etc. Now, suppose by any means I am able to draw upon the energy which is contained *within* A or B or C. Since the stock is practically inexhaustible, I shall be able to do a vast deal of " work " by such intra-atomic energy; but I need not touch any part of the 100. This 100 still remains 100, though out of the given material system I am taking vast amounts of energy. Physical Science till lately knew only the 100; and stated its doctrine of transformation and conservation of energy on that basis. In fact, when we dive down to the Ether-elements themselves which compose matter, matter practically becomes dematerialised, and there material energy and vital energy may lose their " castes " or class-distinctions.

The root of the whole matter is—To what extent does a given Form release or unveil the nature of the Spiritual Ether (Cit) of which it is a mode?

We have seen that Matter as a Form of existence is more completely than any other a veiling and binding Form—though even in it we must have clear traces of unity, organisation and freedom, as Science by her discovery of atomic systems and the spontaneous " evolution " of those systems is beginning to show. What it thus restrictedly manifests is the

nature of the Immense (Brahman) and the Perfect (Pūrṇa) in which everything is grounded. Life manifests or reveals the Ground more unreservedly; and it is a controlling Principle in relation to Matter inasmuch as it is a Form more expressive of the unity, wholeness and freedom of That of which it along with Matter is a Form. For the same reason, also, Mind and Spirit are still superior controlling Principles. But they are all grounded in the one Immense Whole. Hence all the Forms, though distinct in their respective spheres, point to a deeper, essential unity by reason of which their operations form one common, cosmic stress-system. They can have no absolute boundaries. Not only do they condition but they transform, as regards their "matter" and "energy," into one another. They are alike in all essential respects. To take only one example: As in the atom, we have the polarity of the static and the moving charge of electricity, so in the living body, the static coiled Prāṇa-śakti at the Mūlādhāra exists (as the Tantra points out) relatively to the dynamic Prāṇa-śakti distributed over and working the bodily tissues.[1] To those who see the All, there is no difference except formal when Life is materialised, or when Matter is vitalised, or when Spirit is materialised, or again when everything is spiritualised.

[1] See Arthur Avalon's "Serpent Power" where this matter is more fully explained.

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

FOREWORD

REFERENCE is made in the Text to some similarities and differences between European philosophical systems and the Vedānta. It may prove convenient however to summarise here some recent tendencies in Western psychology and their bearing upon Indian doctrines on the same subject.

The fundamental peculiarity of the Advaita Vedānta, and therefore of its Śākta form, is the distinction which it draws between Mind and Consciousness in the sense of *Cit*; a word for which there is no exact equivalent in any European language. I propose to deal with this term in a future volume but will meanwhile describe it as the Unchanging Principle of all Experience, and which is the common source and basis of both Mind and Matter. *Cit* is the infinite Whole (*Pūrṇa*) in which all that is finite, whether as Mind or Matter, is. This is the Supreme Infinite Experience, free of all finitization which is Pure Spirit as distinguished from Mind and Body. Finite experience is that which is had through Mind and Body, which are the products of the finitizing principle of *Cit* which is called Supreme Power or Mahā-śakti. Because of this, the World is Power, being the manifestation as Mind and Matter of the Power which is the dynamic aspect of the Fundamental Reality or *Cit* as Śakti, or Supreme Consciousness-Power. Power being the principle of negation or finitization of Consciousness, its product or manifestation as Mind and Matter is unconscious (*Jaḍa*) for in so far and to the extent that anything is not Pure Consciousness (in the sense of *Cit*) it is unconsciousness or *Acit*. It is because Mind is a

manifestation of a principle of unconsciousness that the Whole (*Pūrṇa*) which is without section (*Akhaṇda*) or a continuum as the Ether of Consciousness (*Cidākāśa*) is experienced by the individual centre or *Jīva* as the not-whole (*Apūrṇa*) and as a section (*Khaṇda*). This is pragmatic or conventional (*Vyavahārika*) experience as contrasted with the transcendental (*Pāramārthīka*) experience or Experience-Whole.

The existence of a supreme unitary experience is not a matter with which Western psychology is concerned, though in metaphysics there have been Monistic Systems. According to Vedānta however the question whether *Cit* is a fact or not, is not a subject of speculation only but a matter of actual experience as the *Samādhi* of perfected *Yoga*.

I may note, however, here some tendencies or conclusions which favour the Vedāntic view.

As the reduction of Matter to *quasi*-material Ether and that of Energy to Stress in Ether is going on in Science, we notice a marked tendency in psychology (as in Herbert Spencer, Wundt, Ladd, etc.), to regard the common basis of Mind and Matter (psychosis and neurosis) as spiritual rather than material.

As above stated, the common basis in Indian doctrine (by which I mean that here dealt with) is spiritual, that is *Cit*, the Ether of Consciousness (*Cidākāśa*) from which Mind and Matter issue and in which they are. "Ether of Consciousness" (*Cidākāśa*) does not of course mean that *Cit* is Ether but that *Cit* is, like the physical Ether, in being an all-pervading Continuum in which all things are and which penetrates all things. In Veḍānta, Mind and Matter spring from one source (*Cit*) and exist in parallelism, the one having the same reality as and being the co-esssential of the other.

It is now commonly held that there is both an Unconscious and Conscious Mind. The first is described by Freud as consisting of all that realm of the Ego which is unknown

and cannot be spontaneously recalled by the subject and which is made manifest, and then often in a disguised form only, in special psychic conditions such as dreams and trances and can be evoked only by special methods. It is now recognised that a large part of our psychic life remains and operates in the Unconscious so that we are perforce unaware of it. Conscious Mind consists of that part of our psychic life of which we are aware. Unconscious and Conscious Mind are but two aspects of the one Entity the Psyche. It has been said (Bow " Psycho-analysis ") that the term " unconscious " is open to certain objections. Since we can only be aware of anything by means of Consciousness nothing that we are aware of can be in any realm but that of the Conscious: hence the term " Unconscious Mind " becomes meaningless. That is so on this theory, but not in Vedānta to which it makes some approximation. This approximation consists in the admission that Mind can be unconscious though it is added that it is also in another aspect conscious. The Vedānta and Sāṃkhya say that Mind, as such, is always an unconscious force and operation. It derives its appearance of being conscious because of its association with the Conscious Principle or *Cit*. It finitises *Cit* for the individual consciousness. What is called in the West " unconscious mind " is that state in which Mind ever associated with Consciousness, is yet not in the field of awareness owing to the density of the veiling principle of *Tamas*. In this realm of the Western Unconscious Mind are all the *Saṃskāras* or tendencies acquired in the course of the life-history of the individual of which he becomes aware if and when the density of the veil is lessened.

According to Sāṃkhya-yoga a *Saṃskāra* is a sub-conscious or subliminal (*Sūkṣmarūpa*) continuation of what was once a conscious activity (*Vyapāra*) whether cognitive, affective or conative. A conscious activity when gone through does not absolutely end there: It simply passes into a potential and

hidden (*Avyakta* and *Sūkṣma*) condition below the threshold of consciousness. It goes on *ad infinitum* more and more below the level of the ordinary consciousness. This for pragmatic reasons lights up only between certain limits. Stimuli and brain excitements of certain degrees of intensity only evoke response. But the activities do not leave when pragmatic consciousness fails to notice them. They go on.

Thus the course of any activity (*Vyāpāra*) in mental life displays itself when above the threshold of consciousness as conscious activity and when it sinks below the threshold it is called a *Saṃskāra* or tendency or potential due to unconscious mental operations. But each term, whether tendency or potential, implies *Prati-bandhaka* or constraint for why should it be tendency or potential only unless some influence keeps it down? It requires to be released from restraint to come up again which release takes place through a stimulus (*Udbodhaka*, *Vyañjaka*). If mental activity be regarded as a form of *Pari-spanda* or vibration in the Mind-stuff, the motion does not cease when it becomes hidden (*Avyakta*) to consciousness. It still continues, though not with sufficient intensity to evoke conscious response. It is easily understandable that the more recent the impression may be, the easier is its recall. Some forms of Western psychology at any rate now recognise that Mind may be unconscious. It will gain further consistency by regarding all mental operation as unconscious, deriving its apparent consciousness from association with the Spiritual Principle which is the one and only illuminator. Though psycho-physical parallelism (*i.e.*, between psychosis and neurosis) is maintained, the tendency is less to-day to regard consciousness as merely a function of the brain. Hence, many now think that there is a consciousness wider and deeper than cerebral consciousness. Thus the possibility of "ejective" consciousness, disembodied consciousness, etc., is beginning to be recognised by many.

The present tendency is to regard the "subliminal consciousness" as constituting the most important and active part of our mental life. Thus the "threshold of consciousness" is only a pragmatic limit and not an absolute boundary of consciousness. According to Vedānta, Consciousness *per se*, that is in the sense of *Cit* is boundless. The individual is a centre in that boundlessness whose limits are determined by the combination of Mind and Matter which constitutes it as such individual. The individual again is aware of certain mental functioning in himself and the greater portion at any moment exists as *Saṃskāras* not present to consciousness.

Again the continuity of Animal Mind and Human Mind (in point of development), and the possibility of the latter's further development into Super-consciousness are now recognised. In fact, the relations of normal, abnormal and subnormal mental lives are now more correctly understood. The study of these different species of Mind (genius, lunacy, childhood, criminality, hypnosis, trance, etc.,) is perhaps leading to the recognition of a Generic Mind (Hiraṇyagarbha) which is in different modes of manifestation. Using Consciousness in its popular sense there is subconsciousness, consciousness and superconsciousness or Yoga consciousness. Super-mind is Brahman. Further, Mind can no longer be treated in watertight compartments.

The "atomistic" view of sensations, etc., which go to make up complex perceptions, etc., is now discarded. Mental life is now recognised as a *continuum*. The distinct perceptions, ideas, etc., are only the pragmatic "fact-sections" of the undivided whole of experience. (W. James, Ward and others.)

Psychology again, on the whole, demonstrates the unity and continuity of all mental life. Psychic life is a continuity in the sense that at any given moment it is determined by all that has previously happened and is happening. This is well

established Indian Doctrine. The whole doctrine of *Karma* and *Saṃskāra* is based on this continuity. Mental Life is again one. Thus "Faculties" cannot now be treated as quite separate. Instinct, Intelligence, Reason, etc., are now treated from a more organic point of view. The departmental view of Mind is out of date. The division into "faculties" has a practical use as had in the Indian system the classification of the *Tattvas* which constitute the *Antahkaraṇa*. But though the working of Mind shows various aspects the *Antahkaraṇa* is at base one.

The Cartesian dualism of Mind and Matter (with no possibility of interaction) is commonly discarded in Modern Psychology which tends more and more to regard them not as merely "parallel aspects" but as co-essentials. I have dealt with the subject of inter-action in the Text. The Cartesian position which denied to the finite Mind any effective control over Matter, and which was developed by many nineteenth century physiologists into this position, namely that Man is an "automaton" (Huxley), his consciousness and will having no real control over his brain and nervous system, but only recording and registering what may be going on in the brain, etc., as the result of physico-chemical changes—this position, is now being steadily given up. The Causal efficacy of consciousness is now recognised as in Vedānta. The distinction of Primary and Secondary qualities in sense-perception is disappearing. Either all of them are actually in the Thing or none of them are actually in the Thing. One of the latest developments (*viz.*, Neo-Realism) tends to place all of them in the Thing, as the Vedānta does. This subject I have developed in an earlier volume of this series ("Reality").

The Mind at the time of birth is not a *tabula rasa*, but a store-house of tendencies and pre-dispositions. This is a common position now. This is also the Vedāntic position according to which Man is born with his inherent *Saṃskāras*.

Emphasis has rightly been laid on the pragmatic view of reality. Thus Western Psychology is coming to recognise *three* orders of Reality (*a*) Transcendental, *i.e.*, what exists independent of this particular experience; (*b*) Pragmatic, *i.e.*, what is useful to us and serves a practical purpose (*Vyavahārika*); and (*c*) Phenomenal or Apparent.

Next, what is called "The New Psychology" in the West (cf. E. Boirac's "Psychology of the Future," and "Our Hidden Forces") is establishing Mind as a Force, capable of energising in uncommon ways, and hence ushering in the Philosophy and Practice of so called "occult powers" and Yoga.

Lastly the fundamental Cosmic Impulse to evolutionary movement is not to-day blind physical "force," but modern thought tends to regard it more and more as a spiritual stress. Thus the *élan vital* (Vital Impetus) of Prof. Henri Bergson is neither physical force nor vital force in the ordinary biological sense; it is something more fundamental. This Impetus is at the back of Creative Evolution.

This last Matter opens up an exposition of the whole Śākta Doctrine. According to this teaching the Universe is a Dynamism—an expression (and therefore necessarily finite) of Śakti and an infinite reservoir of Power or Śakti. It is Auto-dynamic as such expression of Power. The ultimate Reality has two aspects—one static (*Cit*) and the other Kinetic or *Śakti* which is both *Cit Śakti* that is efficient cause as Supreme Will and *Māyā-Śakti* or instrumental and material (*Upādāna*) Cause. Before the manifestation of the Universe, *Cit* and its Power or Śakti were as one. Power was the mere potency of a future Universe. This general potency, or tendency holds within itself all the particular tendencies or *Saṃskāras* which are both the product and the producers of *Karma*. The impulse to manifestation is the display of Supreme Will which arises on the "ripening" of those tendencies

towards manifestation. The Ultimate Reality which is Pure Consciousness or Spirit—thus vests itself from out its Power with a psychical and a physical body which is the Universe consisting of the totality of the individual Minds and Bodies in which the Source of all Power is immanent. The whole machinery of *Prakṛti* in the Sāṃkhya is automatic and *Śakti* is self-acting both as to the original creative impulse as also as regards all in which this impulse manifests.

Calcutta
20th July, 1922

J. W.

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS MIND

(*Mānasī-śakti*)

§ 1

THIS subject resolves itself into a consideration of the nature of "Mind" as contrasted with Matter and their relation to one another.

The fundamental difference between Western and Eastern psychology is that the former *does not*, and the latter[1] *does differentiate Mind from Consciousness.* On the contrary Western psychology interprets Mind in terms of Consciousness, that is Consciousness is the distinctive character of Mind. Where Mind and Consciousness are used as equivalents the one of the other, ordinary experience is of course meant and not pure *Cit* or supreme unconditioned Consciousness.

The Western "Mind" is something for which there is no adequate Sanskrit equivalent since the notions are different. When I speak of Mind in Vedānta I refer to what is explained later as the "Inner Instrument" (Antahkaraṇa) as distinguished from the "outer instruments" (Bāhyakaraṇa) or

[1] In Sāṃkhya and Vedānta. It is the unchanging principle of all experience in mind and body which are its modes. Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, though distinguishing Manas as the instrument and Ātmā as the substratum of Consciousness, does not recognise Pure Consciousness as Cit. Even the consciousness of its Īśvara is not pure (Śuddha) in the sense of being Nirviśeṣa. It is Saviśeṣa, with infinitely rich content.

senses on the one hand, and on the other hand from Consciousness of which both mind and senses are instruments.

The term Mind bears a narrower as well as a wider meaning in the *Śāstras*. Thus in the saying "from where speech together with mind (*Manas*) withdraws failing to reach" (referring to the Brahman) the word *Manas* (mind) is evidently used for the whole "Inner Instrument". In strictly philosophical literature however, the term *Manas* is almost always used in a defined sense so that it cannot be translated into "Mind" as understood by Western psychologists. It is only then one function of the inner instrument. Indian "Mind"[1] is distinguished from Western Mind in this that the former as such is not Consciousness but a material force enveloping Consciousness, the two in association producing the Consciousness-unconsciousness of Western Mind. Pure Consciousness (*Cit*) is not an attribute of Mind. It is beyond Mind being independent of it. It is immanent in Mind and is the source of its illumination and apparent Consciousness.[2]

In the older Western schools "Consciousness" was used in the more limited and personal sense of the mind's direct cognisance of its own states and processes; the perception of what passes in a man's own mind. But it was later and is now used in a wider sense and the question is now raised whether Consciousness is co-extensive with mind. In this wider sense it is used,[3] in general antithesis to Matter, to cover that phase of reality which does not permit of exclusive interpretation in terms of matter in motion, but allows or requires the hypothesis of something analogous to conscious

[1] Western "Mind" is the Indian Antahkaraṇā-vacchinna Caitanya, *i.e.*, Cit (Consciousness) as (apparently) conditioned by Antahkaraṇa which as Jada or unconscious Process is of and in the condition, *viz.*, Antaḥkaraṇa and not in that which seems to be conditioned, *viz.*, Cit. Manas which is sometimes translated 'Mind' is only part of Antahkaraṇa.

[2] That is in Sāṃkhya and Vedānta.

[3] Baldwin Dict., *Sub-voc.*, Mind.

process. It is further said that there may be even unconscious mental modification, in which case Consciousness is not co-extensive with mind. Here we have something, either intelligence, feeling, or will, not in personal individual consciousness, without which however the flow of consciousness would not be what it is. The recognition by present-day psychologists of two forms of mental life, conscious and sub-conscious (sub-liminal) seems to contain the germs of the distinction, which India has always held, between Mind and Consciousness. This belief in two forms of mental life—conscious and sub-conscious (sub-liminal) is held by many psychologists.

This view is in consonance with Vedānta which calls the latent and sub-conscious a *Saṃskāra* and adds a third, *viz.*, Super-consciousness that is beyond ordinary consciousness, whether latent or patent, which is pure *Cit.* In this view ordinary consciousness is latent or patent, below or above the threshold of ordinary experience, and pure Consciousness or Cit, though immanent, transcends both as the Supreme Experience (*Saṃvid*) in which the other two are held. As between Consciousness and Mind, Western psychology regards what Vedānta calls a condition [1] that is mind,[2] as the more essential part, inasmuch as it holds that Consciousness may not be an inseparable property of the mind, many functions of which may lie in unconsciousness. Mind[2] is thus that of which consciousness is a separable condition—the opposite of the Vedāntic view according to which Consciousness is that of which Mind is a separable condition. Consciousness is *Cit.* It is more or less *veiled* by Mind to which, whatever unconsciousness (in whatever degree) there is, is due. To use one of the expressive metaphors of the Vedānta, Cit, is like a lamp which the Mind envelops as a screen, sometimes revealing it by its transparency, sometimes concealing it by its opaqueness,

[1] Upādhi that is something imposed on consciousness.

[2] Antahkaraṇa.

and thus always conditioning its illumination both as regards its quality and quantity.

According to many Western psychologists, who in this follow or approximate to the Buddhist theory, "Mind" means conscious process, that is the changing series of impressions (sensations) and ideas, a continuous flow or stream. Of what? We may leave the question unanswered, either because it assumes what is denied, or what at least is supposed to be unknown, or we may answer with the older schools that there is a simple mental substance or Soul which experiences in us —thinks, feels and wills and underlies all the varied modes of Experience. It is thus that which exists as a permanent unity behind the phenomena of mind or its processes. From the other and materialist standpoint a "Mind-stuff" and "Mind-dust" is postulated. In either case Consciousness is a function and attribute of Soul or Mind-stuff, the fundamental distinction between Consciousness and Mind not being recognised. J. S. Mill's view that mind is the permanent possibility of experience may be said to vaguely hint at a transcendental principle. According to the Vedānta, that principle is Pure Cit of which both mind and matter are limited *modes* of Its Power. All psychical functions therefore, whether as intellect, feeling, will and the like are limited modes. *Cit* is pure Consciousness Itself. Mind is a real or apparent negation or limitation or determination of that. Mind in fact, in itself, that is considered as apart from Cit (from which in fact it is never separate) is an *unconscious force* which in varying degree obscures and limits consciousness, such limitation being the condition of all finite experience. *Cit* is thus Consciousness. Mind is Consciousness *plus* Unconsciousness, the intermingled Consciousness-unconsciousness which we see in all finite being. Mind is both substance and process. It is substance as the mind-substance or Antahkaraṇa, and it is process as the modifications or *Vṛtti* of that substance. The process takes

place in and of Mind. It is not a process of Consciousness. The substance again of both Mind and Matter is *Cit*, the Supreme Consciousness and Pure Experience Itself. Mental process is a veiling or (relative) unveiling of Cit which is itself unchanged. Consciousness appears however to undergo change because of the modifications of mind of which it is the changeless *substratum*.

§ 2

It will be convenient here to discuss in greater detail the nature of *Śakti* or Power as Mind before dealing with the question of their relation to, and interaction upon, one another.

The European and Indian theories of the relation between, or interaction of, Mind and Matter may be thus summarised.

We may take first the dualistic theories. The Vedānta agrees with the Cause Theory in so far as the latter holds that conscious process and nervous process are causally related, provided we substitute for the word 'conscious' the word 'mental'. The process is not in Consciousness but in Mind.[1] The mental is a subtle quasi-material [2] process. It holds that both processes, psychical and material, have a common ground in Consciousness and thus escapes the difficulty in conceiving interaction between things of a wholly different nature as Mind and Body are commonly supposed to be. It differs, therefore, from psycho-physical parallelism in that the latter offers no explanation of the relation between psychosis and neurosis. It asserts, as stated, not a mere concomitance,

[1] Process is of and in the condition, namely, Antahkaraṇa and not in that which seems to be conditioned or Cit.

[2] Bhautika. It is difficult to find a rendering of this. "Material" is used only in the negative sense as denoting something which is not wholly immaterial, which is Cit or Spirit alone.

the nature of which is unexplained, but a causal interaction between Mind and Matter rendered possible by their common ground. It differs again from any system of Pre-established Harmony in that there is not merely synchronistic change, but an action by Matter on Mind and by Mind on Matter which is possible for the reason stated. It therefore also differs from any theory of Occasionalism according to which no influence passes from one to the other, but on occasion God intervenes when the one changes to bring about change in the other. In this connection however it may be noted that Malebranche's theory that " we see all things in God " seems to adumbrate the Indian doctrine which says that the Mind is enabled to perceive Matter because both are forms of Supreme Power (Mahā-śakti) which is an attribute of the Supreme Consciousness.

Turning then to Monistic Western theories—these hold that Mind and Matter are parallel manifestations of one underlying Substance. They are not two substances in interaction, but this interaction is the outer form of the inner ideal unity of consciousness. Each particle of matter has a mental aspect. " It is as if the same thing were said in two languages." Western science thus vaguely feels that there ought to be a unity behind mind and matter but does not yet *know* where that unity has to be found, and so uses metaphors and language which from the Vedāntic standpoint appear vague. From this standpoint we must first clearly distinguish between worldly experience and Yoga-experience. According to the former there is in fact duality. We cannot escape that. From this dualistic standpoint there must be an interaction because if we assume two things we must assume an interaction between them unless we put the problem aside. Yoga-experience transcends this duality, as Pure Consciousness, for which however we have no warrant short of experience of this state. Relatively there is the duality

of Mind and Matter and their interaction. In the state beyond relations there is Pure Consciousness. In the mixed and graded Consciousness-unconsciousness which constitutes world-experience it is Consciousness (which, as above described, is 'the underlying substance' of which mind and matter are manifestations) which perceives according to the nature and workings of the unconscious Mind and Matter in which it manifests. Consciousness is the ground of Knower, Knowing and Known. The Double Aspect theory endeavours to avoid inconsequence by referring both series conjointly to the causation of a single substance.

But here again we must distinguish. Pure Consciousness[1] as such is neither efficient nor material cause but Consciousness-Power is both.[2] The former as pure *Cit* or Indian Consciousness is the changeless and processless background of all changes and processes. Though not itself changing it contains the ground[3] and possibility of all change. This alogical position is expressed in Śākta doctrine by saying that in one aspect It remains what It is, yet in another It is changing to become the world. This is the Power or *Śakti* or *Vimarśa* aspect. The first is the Being, the second the Becoming aspect. Therefore in world-experience, Indian Consciousness is the unchanging Principle of all changing experience. Through its power it appears as Mind and Matter. It is against this static background that all changes occur. Activity is in Mind and Matter, now veiling now revealing unchanging *Cit* by their material processes as Psychosis or Neurosis. It is simpler, as stated later, to ignore these divisions and to say that Consciousness is the static aspect of Power (*Cit-śakti*), the kinetic aspect of which (*Māyā-śakti*) produces Mind and

[1] Cit, Jñāna-svarūpa, Cidākāśa, Saṃvid, etc., the Śiva or Prakāśa as opposed to the Śakti or Vimarśa aspect.

[2] As Cit-Śakti the efficient (Nimitta) and as Māyā-śakti the material (Upādāna) cause.

[3] Adiṣṭhāna.

Matter, both in differing degrees being veilings by Unconsciousness of Consciousness.

According to Pan-psychism all matter has a rudimentary life, and mind and matter has thus a physical aspect. This is so. But in what sense? In so far as any thing or process is or can be an *object* of consciousness [1] it is *Jada* or non-conscious. The term has a psychological basis. Thus an object of consciousness may be either objective or subjective. What Western science calls Matter or quasi-material is an instance of the former. But the "inner instrument" [2] or Mind (including the Self) can be an object of Consciousness and is therefore as such *Jada*. In fact even Prakṛti-śakti as the Causal Stress which evolves the world is from this standpoint *Jada*. Pure consciousness or *Cit* beyond mind, though manifesting in the operations of the latter, is in its transcendental aspect alogical. Thus the first polarity which appears in Consciousness is that of the Knower and Known.[3] When this polarity appears, *Cit* splits up as it were into two parts or poles—one part still remaining *Cit* (*i.e.*, Knower) the other appearing *as though it were* not-*Cit* [4] or *Jada* that is as the Known.[5] In the latter, *Cit* as it is in itself [6] is veiled. The veiling principle which is Power or Śakti is manifested as the various tendencies [7] of the material Cause [8] in various combinations. When Cit is enveloped by the material Principle [9] in what is mainly its revealing tendency,[10] we have the Inner Instrument [11] which corresponds to the Western Mind *minus* Consciousness. When it is enveloped by the material principle [12] in what is mainly its activity-tendency [13] we have

[1] Jñeya (object known) as opposed to Jñātā, the Knower.
[2] Antahkaraṇa.
[3] Jñātā, Jñeya, knowing being Jñāna.
[4] Acit.
[5] Jñeya.
[6] Cit-svarūpa.
[7] Guṇa.
[8] Prakṛti-śakti or Māyā-śakti.
[9] *Ib.*
[10] Sattvaguṇa or the Sattvika veil.
[11] Antahkaraṇa, *i.e.*, Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Citta, Manas.
[12] Prakṛti-śakti or Māyā-śakti.
[13] Rajoguṇa or the Rājaśika veil.

Life;[1] when it is enveloped by the material Principle[2] in what is mainly its veiling tendency[3] we have Matter in the Western sense.[4] When therefore we speak of Matter as *Jada* we do not mean that it is unconscious in the sense that it is *in itself* unconscious and without mind or life, but in the sense that it is an *object* for consciousness, something in this sense other than it is as knower. The first primary (logical) operation by which *Cit* becomes so disposed as to remain *Cit* in one part and *appear* to cease to be *Cit* in another part is *Sṛṣṭi* or Becoming called "Creation,"[5] and that which is obtained out of *Cit*—the "Other" the *Jada*, the object—is *Bhūta* or Matter. Therefore Mind and Matter are both in the general sense Bhūta.[6] *Cit* however never really ceases to be such, not merely in the pole which is still the Knower[7] but also in the other pole which is veiled so as to appear as non-*Cit*.[8] Thus the Tāntric rite called *Bhūta-śuddhi*,[9] is, philosophically considered, the removing of the Veil by the realisation of the Mantra: "He I am";[10] that is the Universe is first identified with the "I"[11] and then this with the Pure Consciousness or *Cit*. It is thus the placing of the Self in the return-current.[12]

From the above it follows that Western Mind,[13] Life and Matter are at the root one, firstly because the

[1] Prāṇa.

[2] Prakṛti-śakti or Māyā-śakti.

[3] Tamoguṇa or Tāmasika veil.

[4] Mūrtta jadadravya.

[5] The term "Creation" is here avoided owing to its associations with dualistic systems as the creation of something new from nothing as opposed to development of the actual from the potential.

[6] Bhautika: and therefore "material" either in a gross or subtle sense. Specifically, Bhūta = sensible matter.

[7] Jñātā or Cetana.

[8] Acit.

[9] Literally, purification of the elements of "Earth", "Water," etc., in the body as to which see my "Śakti and Śākta" and "Serpent Power".

[10] So'ham.

[11] Aham.

[12] And not, therefore, the idle and superstitious mummery which some have ignorantly supposed it to be. Before blaming-criticism is given, endeavour should first be made to understand.

[13] Antahkaraṇa.

primary basis in all cases is *Cit* and secondly because the Veiling Principle[1] which works them out is composed of the same factors[2] in all cases though in different degrees. Matter is Cit heavily veiled and inert, Life is Cit more lightly veiled and active. Mind is still more lightly veiled and active,[3] and becomes in its developed and complex processes the revealer of the Self to the self on the mental plane, whence passage is made to the Self, beyond which there is nothing.[4] Both the life-aspect and mind-aspect may be the subject of direct perception by special means either of science or Yoga. A block of stone is perceived by the natural eye as inert lifeless matter. To that eye neither the signs of life nor mind are revealed. Both however may (given the appropriate means) be inferred from certain recognised signs of them. When these signs are perceived, it is said that there is a living and thinking object presented to mind. The ordinary sense-organs may be insufficient to found an inference of rudiments of life or mind say in a stone. But science extending natural faculty by its delicate instruments, or Yoga by its process of Saṃyama[5] may enable the observer to perceive that on which the inference of life and mind is established. À *priori* the conclusion may be established by the ontological theory or *à posteriori* on the theory of evolution. Though at root Matter, Life and Mind are one, yet as Matter and Mind they are phenomenally different. One must assume therefore in all objects the same causal interaction of their psychic and material aspects, more or less rudimentary as it may be, as we find in man's nervous processes with their corresponding psychoses.

[1] Māyā-śakti. [2] The Guṇas Sattva, Rajas, Tamas of Māyā-śakti.

[3] The activity of mind is compared to mobile mercury the " Semen of Śiva ".

[4] Puruṣāt na paraṃ kiṃcit sā kāṣṭhā sā parāgatih.

[5] Concentration (dhāraṇā, dhyāna, samādhi).

§ 3

What then according to Indian views is the nature of Mind?

It may be defined, in the first instance negatively, as that part of our subjective life which in itself is not Consciousness, though it appears to be conscious through association with the latter. This distinction is maintained throughout the the Standards. Whether there is such a state as Pure Consciousness which is Mindless is established secondarily by *Śruti* or Veda as authoritative proof[1], or directly, by actual personal experience.[2] This is a matter with which I will deal under the heading of Consciousness-Power (*Cit-Śakti*). As Consciousness in Itself is immeasurable or Immense (the meaning of Brahman), and as man's consciousness appears to be limited, otherwise he could not have finite experience, what limits it is a Force which, as such, is different from the Consciousness it limits. In the first Standard or Nyāya-vaiśeṣika, Mind is an unconscious entity (*Dravya*) separate from the Self (*Ātman*) by conjunction with which and the senses, the Self has conscious experience of objects. In the second Standard or Sāṃkhya-Yoga, Mind is a Force separate from and independent of Consciousness which it apparently *finitises*: or as in the Śākta doctrine, it is a form of *Māyā*, which is one with, and not independent of, Consciousness, being a Power of Consciousness to remain what it is and yet to contract itself into being a centre of limited experience; or it is neither the first nor the second but a form of *Māyā* which itself is an inscrutable, unexplainable mystery.[3]

However related to Consciousness, it *is* fundamentally a mystery. Taking it as a fact of which we are aware we can also analyse it into its functions and the mode of

[1] Āpta-Pramāṇa. [2] Pratyakṣa as Aparokṣajñāna or Sākṣātkāra.

[3] As in Māyā-vāda-Vedānta.

their working. These functions are fully explained in the Sāṃkhya which in this respect is the basis of Śākta doctrine. Mind is through the sense organs (*Indriya*) affected by the objects which it selects (as *Manas*,) refers to itself the personal experience so enjoyed (as *Ahaṃkāra*) and then determines (as *Buddhi*). The one Mind does all this, but is variously named according to its various functions as separate principles or *Tattvas*. In actual experience or functioning of the *Tattvas* in the fully evolved world, the knowing process commences with the last evolved subjective principle or the senses. The object of knowledge first knocks at this gate to be introduced within and to become subject to the inner operating principles, the last of which to so operate is the determining faculty or *Buddhi*. But in the cosmic evolution of the Principles or Tattvas themselves, the order is reversed and the last to function in the evolved world becomes the first to appear according to either a temporal or logical *prius*. A logical analysis of experience establishes this. The general basis of experience, to which in the functioning of the individual mind reference is made last, must necessarily in the cosmic evolution appear first. It is also clear that the evolving principles have also a more abstract significance. Thus the I-making or individualising and centre-making Principle (*Ahaṃkāra-Tattva*) in individual experience is that aspect of the mind which refers its operations to that particular individual. Whereas in the cosmic sense it is the tendency to individualisation which manifests later as the individual centre.

Though the mode of evolution is given differently in the Sāṃkhya [1] and Māyā-vāda Vedānta [2] and there are other

[1] The order of evolution is Prakṛti, Mahat or Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra. Then co-ordinately Manas and Indriyas (10) and their subtle objects (5) Tanmātras, and from the latter the five forms of gross sensible matter (Bhūta). These with the Puruṣa make 25 Tattvas.

[2] The evolution is from the Apañcīkṛta or unmixed Tanmātras or subtle matter: from the Sāttvik part of these, the Tattvas Buddhi, Manas

differences,[1] the description of the faculties generally holds good in Māyā-vāda Vedānta. Though Śaivas and Śāktas accept the twenty-five Tattvas of Sāṃkhya they add eleven others preceding Puruṣa and Prakṛti, the whole being known as the Thirty-six Tattvas, which are higher forms of Consciousness evolving for the production of Puruṣa-Prakṛti and will be dealt with under the title Power as Consciousness (*Cit-Śakti*). The Mind (as *Antahkaraṇa* or the Yoga-darśana Citta) is neither all-pervasive [2] nor atomic and partless [3]. It is not therefore eternal [4], has a beginning [5], and has a limited extension,[6] that is, it is a thing of finite dimensions. It is radiant, transparent, light,[7] like the Solar rays[8], right and mobile.[9] It is a kind of "Radiant Matter." [10] In Vedānta it is called *Bhautika* because it is a mode of the unmixed *Bhūtas* [11] from varying aspects of which are derived according to the Māyā Vedānta both Matter and Mind. Therefore these two are essentially similar [12]. Mind (Antahkaraṇa) is not rigid that is

and the five intellectual sense-organs; from the Rājasik part the five Prāṇas and the five active organs; from the Tāmasik part, gross sensible matter.

[1] *e.g.*, Memory (Citta) is a separate faculty in Vedānta and is included in Buddhi by the Sāṃkhya. The Citta of the Yoga-Philosophy = Antahkaraṇa of Sāṃkhya and Vedānta. Prāṇa (Life) is a separate Tattva in Vedānta but not in Sāṃkhya.

[2] Vibhu-parimāṇa.

[3] Aṇu-parimāṇa. It is therefore Madhyama-parimāṇa.

[4] Nitya. [5] Sādi. [6] Sāvayava, paricchinna.

[7] Taijasa, having a predominance of Sattva-guṇa or the revealing aspect of Substance-Energy, the aspect in which it reveals consciousness.

[8] Ravi-kiraṇa-vat. [9] Laghu and Cara.

[10] To use the term of Sir W. Crookes, applied by him to matter in the fourth state.

[11] Apancīkrita or Sūkṣma-Bhūta. It is derived from their Sāttvika or revealing aspect, as Matter is derived from their veiling or Tāmasika aspect. According to the Sāṃkhyan scheme, adopted by Śakti-vāda, both the senses and subtle objects (Tanmātra) derive from a common source (Ahaṃkāra) or self-arrogating and individualising principle.

[12] See last note. The Chāndogya Up. says that the lowest units (aniṣta aṃśa) of the food (anna) eaten go to build up the "body" of the mind.

having the same configuration always, but elastic.[1] *It actually goes out like a ray* (though not in the act of knowledge altogether leaving the body) to the object of perception, envelops it, and *takes its form.* Some may call this materialism, but the Vedānta holds not that mind is derived from matter in the physical sense but that they are fundamentally and essentially one, that is Pure Consciousness (Cit) stressing or energising one way or the other. They are different modes of the one Power (Śakti) as Substance-Energy.[2]

§ 4

We may now consider in greater detail the nature of Mind, its functions and their process. According to the pluralistic first Standard or Nyāya-vaiśeṣika, the *Ātman* or Self is all-pervading, immense,[3] the ground,[4] and agent[5] of knowledge. It is thus the seat of consciousness. Beyond this we cannot say. It has the attribute of consciousness when conjoined with *Manas* or "Mind," which is something quite different from it. It is an atomic[6] or infinitesimal, unconscious instrument[7] of knowledge. The Self, working with it, is conscious. It is the means whereby perception becomes possible and may thus be called the Inner Sense.[8] It works in co-operation with the outer senses which are made of the same material as the objects which are sensed. Like is known by like. The atomic character of *Manas* is inferred from the fact that perceptions or experiences arise serially and not simultaneously. Sensations are thus experienced, though several objects may be presented simultaneously to several

[1] Saṃkoca-vikāsa-śīla.

[2] The Māyā-śakti of Advaita-vedānta and Śaktivāda corresponding to the Mūla-prakṛti of the Sāṃkhya.

[3] Vibhu. [4] Āśraya or Adhiṣṭhāna. [5] Kartā.

[6] Aṇu. [7] Karaṇa. [8] Antarindriya.

sense organs. If *Manas* were all-pervading it would be always in contact with the different sense organs, and through them, with the various objects, so that it might attend to and admit all these objects at once. But experience shows (it is said) that it does not. On the contrary it acts like a turnpike gate through which only one sensation at a time can enter. It has been aptly compared[1] to a door-keeper, who admits one person at a time and keeps others out. It is thus conceived as concentrated into a point. It is true that one may seem to have a number of different sensations (induced by different sense organs) at once but there is here (it is said) only an appearance of simultaneous activity. Manas is not only very small but exceedingly light[2] so that it can pass very quickly from object to object, so quickly indeed that its successive attention and apprehension appear as a simultaneous activity.[3] It may be objected: May we not explain both serial and simultaneous apprehension by conceiving *Manas* as a substance with parts which may be contracted and expanded? In such a case when several sensations are to be apprehended at once, the Manas expands and thus puts itself simultaneously into connection with several sense organs. When however one at a time has to be received, it contracts itself into a point and connects with only one sense organ. In such a case we need not assume any mistake. This suggestion of an elastic mind is rejected on the ground that it gratuitously assumes a substance with many parts which increase in expansion and decrease in contraction. It is in the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika partless and unextended.[4] This partlessness is inferred from the seriality[5] of attention and apprehension.

[1] In the Commentary to Ṣatcakra-nirūpaṇa. See "Serpent Power".

[2] Atilāghavāt.

[3] Thus a spark of light if made to rotate rapidly in a circle appears as continuous circle of light.

[4] Aṇurūpa.

[5] Ayaugapadyāt.

The process of perception is in a general way as follows: It is either internal[1] or external.[2] In external perception[3] these connections must be successively established—(1) the contact of the object with the appropriate sense organ,[4] (2) the Manas or the inner organ of apprehension must attend, and (3) offer the sensations to the self or Ātman.

Because of its atomicity (*Aṇutva*) *Manas* can attend to only one at a time, but it can attend quickly in succession because of its lightness. As a gate in action, it introduces the sensations one by one to the Self to be known, felt, and owned by the latter. *Manas* is itself unconscious,[5] partless,[6] atomic[7] and hence eternal[8] and unchanging. It simply plays the part of the Usherer, either admitting or refusing. It is instrumental in the production of knowledge but is neither its ground[9] nor agent.[10] Without the third step or offer of the sensation to the Self there is no knowing, and in particular no referring, of an experience to the Self—apperception as Western Psychology sometimes calls it.

The Self according to this system is possessed of fourteen attributes[11] of which Cognition (*Buddhi*),[12] Feeling (*Sukha-duhkha*; agreeable and disagreeable) and Will (*Icchā*) are counted first.[13] The Self has three kinds of activity as knowledge, will, and action.[14] Cognition is divided into experience (*Aṇubhuti*) and representation or collection (*Smṛti*): and the former into direct perception, inference, analogy, knowledge

[1] *e.g.*, "I am happy" Aham sukhi.

[2] *e.g.*, Ayam ghatah "here is the jar".

[3] Bāhya-viṣaya-pratyakṣa.

[4] Indriyārtha-sannikarṣa.

[5] Acetana.

[6] Niravayava. [7] Aṇu. [8] Nitya. [9] Adhiṣthāna.

[10] Adhyakṣa. [11] Guṇa. [12] From *Buddha* = to know.

[13] Cf. G. F. Stout: Classification of experience into cognition, interest, and the latter into feeling-attitude and volition.

[14] Jñāna-śakti, Icchā-śakti, Kriyā-śakti.

due to authentic testimony.[1] This Standard is distinguished by the multiplicity of its ultimate entities and its non-recognition of pure *Cit* as the essential nature of the Ātmā. Consciousness is an attribute of the Self. A close examination of this matter reveals a greater connection with the other Standards than thus appears on the surface. For according to them also, knowledge of objects only takes place through the contact of object, senses, and *Manas* with the *Ātmā*. The Self in itself is called by them *Cit* but that *Cit* is wholly different from the apparently limited consciousness and is in fact indescribable by the latter or any other term.

Mental life does not consist of conscious processes alone. Many states and operations of *Antahkaraṇa* exist and go on in sub-liminal consciousness. It is to the dynamism of the sub-liminal or sub-conscious states and operations of *Antahkaraṇa* that the name *Saṃskāra* is given. The Western Cerebralist would explain the dynamism of memory and sub-liminal operations by cerebral modifications or cerebral motions. But cerebral modifications or motions, though they may be the physical counterparts, are not the physical *bases* of those states and operations, since these can exist even when the *Antahkaraṇa* becomes dissociated from the body. Modern Spiritualists claim that disembodied Spirits can put themselves into rapport with ourselves, and thus prove that they carry recollections of the life they lived as ordinary men on earth. How can this be possible if the brain be the physical *basis* of memory, etc.? The Śāstras claim that it is possible (and modern instances of such psychic phenomena are in evidence) that one can remember, whether spontaneously or through special voluntary effort, the incidents of one's previous births (*Jātismara*). How again could this be if the brain instead of the *Liṅgadeha* (Subtle Body which, according to

[1] Pratyakṣa, Anumiti, Upamiti, Śabdaja or Expert, including Revelation.

Śāstra, leaves the physical body at the time of death) were the basis of memory, etc.? The dynamism of memory and sub-liminal processes in general will have therefore to be explained by the mechanism of the *Antahkaraṇa* itself, which mechanism is called the system of *Saṃskāras*. Since *Antahkaraṇa* (Mind), *Prāṇa* (Life), and *Bhūta* (Matter), are co-essential with one another, the latter two have also mechanisms corresponding to *Saṃskāras*. For instance, what are called Tendencies and Potential Energies of Matter may be called their *Saṃskāras*.

Now, in the First Standard (Nyāya-vaiśeṣika) the Saṃskāras inhere in the *Ātman* and not in *Manas*, which is simple and *aṇu*, and cannot therefore be the basis of a system of tendencies, subtle and potential energies. It also makes the *Saṃskāras* destructible: though unlike the Buddhistic systems it makes them *relatively* stable or persistent; Time, disease or a last recollection (*Caramasmaraṇa*) can put an end to a *Saṃskāra*. But from the dynamic standpoint of the two Higher Standards, the *Saṃskāras* are Forces and as such must be persistent. From the standpoint of Sāṃkhya, a *Saṃskāra* is Tendency, while a *Vṛtti* is Action: both are *Vyāpāra* (energising) of *Antahkaraṇa*. Between Tendency and Action, however, it recognises no distinction in *kind;* it is only a distinction of *degree* and of relation with respect to normal consciousness. That is to say, when a *Vṛtti* sinks below the threshold of normal consciousness and *continues* as a subliminal action, it becomes a *Saṃskāra*. A *smṛti* or representation is thus the coming up on the level of consciousness (subject of course to temporal and other conditions) for a past presentation (*vṛtti*) which has never ceased to exist. The Second Standard makes the curve of life a *continuous* line which is, in parts, above and, in parts, below the normal line of consciousness. Mental life = *Vṛttis* + *saṃskāras* = actual presentations + possible representations = actions + tendencies (which are *avyakta* or subtle actions).

There is cyclic causation between *Vṛttis* and *Saṃskāras*; they cause one another. And this cycle is beginningless and endless, though at the time of the dissolution or creation or *Mukti* (liberation) the *Vṛttis* and *Saṃskāras* may lapse into *Prakṛti* or *Māyā* and so cease to have any *effect* on the *Puruṣa* or *Ātman*. With respect to the *Mukta-Puruṣa* or *Ātman*, they are effectively non-existent, they cease to exist. Bondage means subjection (through ignorance) to the causal cycle referred to above, Liberation means disengagement from the cycle. If bondage were based on *fact* as distinguished from *Avidyā* or ignorance of fact, then there could be no possible escape from the cycle, for, in itself, the cycle can have no absolute beginning or end; hence both Sāṃkhya and Vedānta make the association of the Self with the cycle not a fact, but an ignorance of fact,—an ignorance of what It is and what the cycle is. The moment knowledge of this comes, the cycle goes. Śakti-vāda regards the *whole* as Fact that is Self and the Cycle; the ignorance of Self of what It is and what the Cycle is; Its knowledge; Its bondage and Its liberation. In any case, so long at least as liberation has not come, *all Saṃskāras* lie in *Antahkaraṇa* as latent activities, not only of this birth but of all previous cycles of birth. In a given type of birth (say, human), however, only those *Saṃskāras* are called into play which are appropriate to that particular type; other kinds of *Saṃskāras* lie dormant then. Like forces, *Saṃskāras* aid or inhibit one another; as mutually aiding and inhibiting forces, they constitute what is called *Vāsanā* (from *vas* to lie or inhere)—the very Background of our conscious mental life.

§ 5

The second Standard or Sāṃkhya-Yoga recognises pure Consciousness or *Cit* as the *Puruṣas* who differ from the *Ātmans* of the last Standard, in that they are attributeless. *Puruṣa* is pure Being or Consciousness. He is not *Kartā* or agent.

Experience is not his but another's. He simply manifests and without it there is no manifestation. With it is associated the changing Unconscious Principle of Nature or Prakṛti—*Natura naturans* as Spinoza would have called Her. Though associated with those *Puruṣas* or Spirits who are not freed from Her influence, She is yet separate from and independent of them. Consciousness and Unconsciousness (as mind and matter) are two distinct Realities, for the system is dualistic. This *Prakṛti* is constituted of three Factors and displays itself in three aspects and moments, as that which reveals Consciousness (*Sattva-guṇa*), that which veils Consciousness (*Tamo-guṇa*) and as the Principle of activity which moves either to suppress the other (*Rajo-guṇa*). Prakṛti is primordial Substance-Energy in which the factors are in a state of Equilibrium. In creation the equilibrium is disturbed by a kind of catalytic action in which the *Puruṣa* or Consciousness does nothing, but Nature, eternally active, commences to play as various forms before him the Seer. The forms so produced are called *Vikṛti* or transformations and correspond to *Natura naturata*. Homogeneity of Substance-Energy becomes heterogeneous as various collocations of the one Substance-Energy. In the first Standard the *Saṃskāras* or Tendencies inhere in the *Ātman*: in this Standard they inhere in the natural unconscious Principle or *Prakṛti* and on creation are realised.

From *Prakṛti*, which is an ultimate and not a derivative principle, issues *Buddhi* the determining principle whether in thought or action. As a transformation of *Prakṛti* there first issues the Cosmic *Buddhi* or *Mahat-Tattva*.[1] This is the stage at which Energy previously undifferentiated, assumes a definite direction[2]

[1] Sāmyāvasthā.

[2] Here and *post*, I refer to a paper on Mind by Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya. See also Prof. J. N. Das Gupta's work on Yoga-śāstra and as to the definition of the faculties J. C. Chattopādhyāya's Kashmir Śaivaism. In the Śākta system a posture, attitude or aspect of Power is Mudrā.

and posture [1] towards a defined line of evolution.[2] This condition of directedness is aptly expressed by the term determination (*Adhyavasāya*). Here, where we are dealing with the state of Energy prior to the appearance of the individual, it is in the nature of cosmic volition. *Mahat-Tattva* is the stage in which the tendency towards individualisation takes a direction or rather resolves (*Adhyavasāya*) to take a direction. But what direction? This is as yet implicit in *Mahat*. It is merely a determination as such to changing in a particular line, the line itself being still undecided. It is a massive (hence the term *Mahat*) cosmic resolution in which the "how" and the "what" of the operation are yet implicit. In cognition too a vague and massive experience commonly precedes a definite and articulated experience. It is as if *Prakṛti* says to Herself this: "I shall no longer remain as equilibrated Energy, but I will change in a definite direction: what this direction will be is seen later." *Buddhi* as this massive, inarticulate, cosmic resolution is not to be identified with the individualised will, though it is the ultimal basis of it. *Buddhi* is determination, decision [3] after deliberation in the nature of volition. Deliberation,[4] decision and volition are, from this standpoint, unconscious processes, which become conscious only by incidence thereon of the illumination of Consciousness as the *Puruṣa* or *Cit*. From the point of view of evolution, *Buddhi* is a state of mere presentation, consciousness of being only without thought of "I" (*Ahaṃkāra*) and unaffected by sensations of particular objects (*Manas*, *Indṛya*). In short, abstract from

[1] Posture of Supreme Power or Mudrā (in the highest sense of the word). Mudrā in the Tantra-Śāstras such as Trikhaṇda-Mudrā also belong to worship as ritual gesture and posture.

[2] To borrow an analogy from mathematical language a scalar quantity (having magnitude but no direction) becomes a vector quantity (having both magnitude and direction).

[3] Niścayātmika.

[4] Adhyavasāyātmikā buddhih (Sāṃkhya-Pravacana, II, 13). Buddhi is thus also called Niścayakāriṇī.

mind every other of the faculties hereafter stated and you have *Buddhi* as their basis. In the individual it is implicit in everything which is derived from it and includes all intellectual and volitional functions which are not theirs. It is thus the principal Tattva. It is the Basis of all Knowing, Feeling, Willing. Its special function is " determination " which is the last in the cognitional, affectional and volitional process. We must also include all three, the " departmental " theory in this matter being erroneous. Really there is one Mind with several functions, to which are given various names. A man is said to " determine " (*Buddhi*) who having perceived (*Manas*) and thought 'I am concerned in this matter' and thus having self-arrogated (*Ahaṃkāra*) comes to the determination 'this must be done by me'.[1] " Must be done " here does not refer to exterior action only, but to mental action[2] also, such as any determination by the way of forming of concepts and percepts (" It is so ") and resolutions ('It must be done'). It is the thinking principle which forms concepts or general ideas and is in Sāṃkhya the seat of Memory.[3]

From Buddhi issues[4] *Ahaṃkāra-Tattva* or as Patañjali calls it *Asmitā*, the function of which is *Abhimāna* or self-arrogation. From the cosmic standpoint *Abhimāna* is the name for that stage of evolution in which Prakṛti first individualises Herself.[5] The tendency to individualisation, which is the sum and substance of Ego, becomes explicit and a fact in the stage of *Asmitā*. To use physical analogies, it is the appearance of

[1] Kartavyaṃ etat mayā (Sāṃkhya-Tattva-Kaumudī, 23rd Kārikā).

[2] Mānasī-kṛyā. Action according to Indian ideas is not merely physical. The mind is constantly active.

[3] In Vedānta this is a special faculty as Citta.

[4] The earlier Tattvas are both Prakṛti (Producer) as regards what follows and Prakṛti or produced as regards what precedes.

[5] We may get an idea of what this is like by comparing with it the state of rising from sleep in which one has first a vague experience of mere being and then of an " I ".

a centre or nucleus or axis of operation in the cosmic self. Thus in the nebular hypothesis, to explain the solar system, for example, we require either a centre of condensation (older hypothesis) or an axis of spiraline movement (new hypothesis). That centre or axis is the Ego of the nebular cloud. So long as this centre or axis has not appeared we have no beginning of actual evolution of the cosmic dust or vapour into systems of heavenly bodies.[1] Asmitā, as a creative cosmic principle, should not be identified with an individual Ego which is constituted of subsequently evolved principles in the form of sensorium and senses. It is the individualising Principle in nature, the Cosmic Ego which unfolds itself into a multiplicity of individual Egos. As a cause[2] is the subtle state[3] or potential condition of its effects and not merely their sum total,[4] Cosmic Ego is the subtle state of all the manifold Egos, conscious and unconscious, whether in sentient beings, or material things which make our world of experience.

The individual *Ahaṃkāra* is the personal consciousness which realises itself as a particular "I," the experiencer. It arrogates to itself the experience offered by Manas and has the consciousness "I am so".[5] "I-making" is self-arrogation,[6] that is that realisation of oneself in relation with the objects of experience as a personal "I," affecting or affected by others. This is the "I" of empirical consciousness. Having so arrogated it passes on the experience to be determined by *Buddhi*.

From *Ahaṃkāra* issues a double[7] stream of evolution namely *Manas* and the *Indṛyas* (lower mind and senses) on the

[1] Of course Prakṛti or Mahat do not correspond to Nebular Bodies. The latter appears on a lower plane. Previous to that Asmitā had already manifested itself in a superior plane.

[2] Kāraṇa. [3] Sūkṣmāvasthā. [4] Samaṣti.

[5] Ahaṃkāra literally means "I-making" (faculty). [6] Abhimāna.

[7] One line dominated by Sattva whence issue Manas and Indṛyas, the other by Tamas whence issue the five Bhūtas; Rajo-Guṇa helping both

one hand and the five *Tanmātras* or Generals of the Sense-particulars on the other, evolving in their turn gross sensible Matter. Here the Principles of the subject and its faculties of mind and sense having been developed, necessarily their objects, first as subtle and then as gross, appear over against them.

The functions of Manas are (*a*) attention, (*b*) selection, (*c*) synthesising the discrete manifold of the senses. Attention must co-operate with the senses before the latter can "give" the experiencer anything at all.[1] Nextly, at one and the same minute the experiencer is subject to receive a countless number of sensations which come to, and press upon, him from all sides. If any of these is to be brought into the field of consciousness, it must be selected (*Saṃkalpa*) to the exclusion or rejection (presupposing *Vikalpa*) of others. The process of experience is the selection of a special section from out of a general whole and then being engaged in it so as to make it one's own, either as a particular object of thought or a particular field of operation. Thus its function is said to be *Saṃkalpa-vikalpa*; that is selection and rejection from the material provided by the senses of perception. When, after having been brought into contact with the sense-objects, it selects the sensation which is to be presented to the other faculties of the mind, there is *Saṃkalpa*. This presupposes a previous attitude of indecision, indiscrimination or oscillation which is *Vikalpa*. The activity of *Manas* cannot be revealed to the experiencer except through the operation of *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi*. The images built up by *Manas*, through unconscious operation, cannot affect of themselves the experiencer,

the Sāttvika and Tāmasika evolutions (Parināma) by virtue of its impulsion. In the Tantras (cf. Śāradā-Tilaka 1-18) we find a threefold division of Ahaṃkāra into Sāttvika or Vaikārika which is the group of 11 Devas of the Senses, Rājasika or Taijasa which is the Manas and Indṛyas and Tāmasika or Bhautika which is the Tanmātras, the origin of the Bhūtas.

[1] See J. C. Chatterji's "Hindu Realism". And so in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka-Up., 13-2-7, it is said: "My Manas was diverted elsewhere therefore I did not hear."

so as to move him in any way until and unless the experiencer identifies himself with them by *Ahaṃkāra*, that is by making them his own in feeling and experience. Lastly, as Western Psychology holds, the senses give not a completed whole, but a manifold—the manifold of sense. These " points of sensation " must be gathered together and made into a whole. These three functions of attention, selection or discrimination and synthesising the discrete manifold belong to the leader of the senses or *Manas*. It is leader, for without it the other senses are incapable of performing their respective offices—and as these senses are those of perception and action,[1] Manas, which co-operates with both, is said to partake of the character of both cognition and action. Just as *Manas* is necessary to the senses, the latter are necessary for *Manas*. It is the seat of will and desire as the desire to perceive and act, and therefore exists in association with the senses. Through association with them it appears as manifold, being particularised or differentiated by its co-operation with that particular instrument which cannot fulfil its functions except in conjunction with it. When *Manas* has functioned it passes its experience on to *Ahaṃkāra* which refers that experience to the individual Ego.

The function of *Manas* has to be understood in contrast with that of the intellectual organs[2] the function of which is simple apprehension of sound, touch, colour, taste and smell without conscious discrimination and assimilation or classification. When an object comes into contact with a sense organ we have at first simple apprehension like that of a child or one stupefied.[3] It is the sort of perception which can be

[1] Jñānendṛya and Karmendṛya.

[2] Buddhīndṛya or Jñānendṛya. The term Indṛya literally means a Linga of Indra or Ātman, an index or Upādhi of it. Here it means-Sāttvikāhaṃkāropādānatvaṃ indṛyatvaṃ—that is what is evolved from the Sattva-prevailing Ahaṃkāra. Buddhi and Ahaṃkāra though practically Lingas of Ātman are not themselves Indṛyas.

[3] Saṃmugdha.

expressed by an interjection like "Oh". It is undiscriminated and unassimilated (unclassed) knowledge.[1] Then the internal organ Manas attends, discriminates and classifies.[2] Manas is ranked with the ten sense-organs. It partakes of the nature of both kinds (*Jñāna* and *Karma*) of sense-organs. All the three (*Buddhi*, *Ahaṃkāra*, *Manas*) however are called *Antahkaraṇa*,[3] that is internal (*Antah*) organ or instrument of *Vyāpāra* or action (including knowing and feeling) in the most general sense of the term.[4]

Unlike the first Standard this view allows simultaneous as well as serial action of the inner organ and senses. On this Professor Pramathanātha Mukhyopādhyāya writes: "I think the Nyāya-vaiśeṣika view is only a first rough sketch of the ways of our mental life. Experience is a nameless unity, an alogical mass, an undefined universe to intuition. This is the "Fact". Then by the process of moving attention (attention moves because it is pragmatic) this mass is dissected into several elements which are the abstract "fact sections," that is colours, sounds, tastes, ideas, memories, anticipations and so on. Thus the Fact is *not* obtained by a synthesis of previously known and recognised fact-sections (that is by association) but the former is the original *datum*[5] out of which the sections

[1] Nirvikalpakaṃ.

[2] Its function as Vācaspati says, is indicated by "Idaṃ evaṃ naivaṃ," "It is this, not that".

[3] Kriyate anena iti karaṇam. "Karaṇa" is that by which something is done. This something includes feeling and knowing. There are thus four kinds of Karaṇa according to function (Vyāpāra-viśeṣa) namely (13 in all), Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Manas and the ten Indṛyas.

[4] Thus the function of Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Manas is Adhyavasāya, Abhimāna and Saṃkalpa-vikalpa respectively. These make the Antahkaraṇa or Inner Organ. Then there are the outer organs, *viz.*, organs of intellect (Jñānendṛya) the function of which is Ālocana or sensation and the organs of action, the functions of which are speaking, grasping, etc.

[5] This is a fundamental notion of Vedānta according to which we start with everything *viz.*, the Pūrṇa or whole. As full Consciousness itself it appears as limited modes of experience. As the great Life (Prāṇa) it vivifies all particular breathing organisms. It is the original *nidus* of Power whence all varied forms of matter issue.

are obtained by moving and exploring attention impelled by *Saṃskāras*, that is obtained by dissociation. Most modern psychologists adopt this analytic view of experience. It follows therefore that the massive whole, the universe of fact can be taken in at once. It is a seamless but not a featureless unity. Scarcely can it be called an unity, for it is not a numerical fact at all. It is alogical, unreachable by the categories. We start therefore with the *whole* in which the parts are imbedded. Nor can we have this by means of a *Manas* which is atomic (*Aṇu*). The latter is set up to admit feelings and sensations one by one and piecemeal; but elementary feelings and sensations, sharply discriminated from one another, appear subsequently by an analytic operation upon an alogical whole of experience which intuition already has given. How did intuition give it? Could it have been intuited by an atomic partless Manas? Then again what is precisely meant by a single elementary feeling? Ordinarily a sound-sensation is regarded as one and as different from a colour sensation. Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika recognises atmospheric vibrations as the objective *stimuli* of sound-sensation. The vibrations are rapidly succeeding pulses of agitation. We have a great number of pulses in a short time.[1] Each pulse acting singly upon the ear will produce a shock of feeling. Hence when a sound has been heard for one minute only, there has been really heard a great number of individual sounds, each separately attended to and admitted by *Manas*. Theoretically of course the *Manas* can do all this. But this assumption if made to apply to the whole affair of experience, would put a needlessly fantastic appearance on it.[2] I think then on the whole that

[1] The ether waves of modern physics would count several hundreds of billions in one second.

[2] Compare on this point the view of W. K. Clifford who posits an atom of feeling (not conscious) as the counterpart of each elementary nervous shock induced by each individual objective stimulus (*e.g.*, a single wave of luminiferous ether). These atoms of feeling do not aggregate and

experience should not be limited to seriality alone: though in the economy of mental life we have certainly to recognise a distributive and discriminative principle. This principle of distributive (as opposed to collective or massive) attention prefers to address itself to the sections of experience one by one and when confined between two objects commonly oscillates between them.[1] Preferential regard to one section is *Saṃkalpa* and the act of oscillation *Vikalpa*.[2] And this regarding and oscillating principle is *Manas*. Preferential regard is the bestowal of emphasis on a portion of a given continuum[3] by which the portion becomes especially vivid and interesting and the rest veiled. In such preferential regard therefore there is not absolute engagement with one to the exclusion of others. It is merely the apex of a curve of presentation. Similarly in oscillating, the objects only alternately rise and sink as regards emphasis, as attention vibrates between them: there is commonly no complete withdrawal from the other when attention dwells upon one. So much as regards common experience. In it there is undoubtedly a tendency to monovalued (referring wholly and exclusively to one) attention: we require such attention in the interests of our practical life. The Nyāya view of *Manas* takes the limit of this tendency in the mathematical sense. In other words it conceives *Manas* as the perfection of this tendency: thus the normal *curve* of

compound themselves below the threshold of Consciousness but each forces itself up into Consciousness where they all compound and blend together as one sensation. See his Lectures and Essays and for criticism W. James " Principles of Psychology ", Vol. I.

[1] See Prof. Pramathanātha Mukhyopādhyāya's " Approaches to Truth ".

[2] Manas is called Saṃkalpa-vikalpātmaka. In Vedānta, stress is sometimes laid on the *vikalpa* aspect; thus Vedānta-Paribhāṣā places the characteristic of *Manas* in *Saṃśaya*, and Pañcadaśī in *Vimarśa* (meaning doubt or indecision).

[3] *e.g.*, on the star Sirius in a clear sky.

presentation dwindles into a point,[1] thus carrying to a theoretical limit a tendency that is certainly unmistakable in our normal experiences."

"Besides that distributive and oscillating principle (which may be called *Manas* though we need not go so far as to conceive it as literally *Aṇu*) we have to recognise in our mental life a principle of intuition or massive experience. The whole *Antahkaraṇa* or Inner organ (involving *Buddhi*, *Ahaṃkāra* and *Manas*, as assumed by Sāṃkhya and Vedānta) will better explain life by their respective activities than the simple atomic inner sense (*Antarindṛya*) *Manas* alone as assumed by the Nyāya-vaiśeṣika. We have however, not wholly discarded the atomic view of *Manas*. We interpret it as the absolute limit of a tendency to distributive and oscillatory attention which normally operates in life but not to an absolute degree. Nyāya will apply the absolute limit itself to the explanation of ordinary knowledge (*Jñāna*) and has therefore to dismiss simultaneous apprehension as an illusory appearance."

The senses co-operate with *Manas*. Sensations aroused by sense-objects are experienced by means of the outer instrument (*Bāhyakaraṇa*) as contrasted with the Inner Instrument (*Antahkaraṇa*) which are the gateways through which the *Jīva* or individual receives worldly experience. Their function is *Ālocana* or sensation. An *Indṛya* or sense is not the physical organ such as eye or ear, but a faculty of the general mind, ultimately *Buddhi*, operating through that organ as its instrument. The outward sense organs are the usual means whereby

[1] Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya gives the following example: Thus instead of saying while eating an orange I have a massive experience of taste, smell, sight, muscular effort and sound together, in which the first two probably occupy the apex of the curve of presentation and the rest lie somewhere in the slopes, it says that I have and can have one sensation only at a time (Manas being Aṇu) and that the Manas on account of its lightness passes rapidly between the different succeeding sensations and thereby produces the illusory experience of co-existent apprehension.

on the physical plane the functions of hearing and seeing and so forth are accomplished. But as they are mere instruments and their power is derived from the mind, a Yogi may accomplish by the mind only all that may be done by means of these physical organs without the use of the latter. So it is said that a hypnotised subject can perceive things even when no use of the special physical organs, ordinarily necessary for the purpose, is made. By the instrumentality of the senses things are perceived and action is taken with reference to them. They are not however sufficient in themselves for this purpose. They cannot work unless in co-operation with their chief, the *Manas*. Thus unless there is attention there is no sensation at all. To be absent-minded, as the term is, is not to know what is happening. The mind is always and unconsciously being affected by what is happening, but these do not rise to a conscious level unless *Manas* functions as attention and selection and synthesises sensation.

The Senses are of two classes in which there are each five. The first class are organs of sensation and perception (*Jñānendṛya*) working through the sensory nervous system namely hearing by the ear, feeling as touch by the skin, seeing by the eye, tasting by the tongue and smelling by the nose.

The Antahkaraṇa together with its functions constitutes an organic unity, so that neither the different aspects of it, nor their respective functions are to be set in sharp contrast to one another. The fact that they derive from a common root precludes any exclusive scheme of partition. The question therefore is merely one of relative emphasis. In this way, the *Manas* presents and discriminates; *Ahaṃkāra* owns or arrogates to itself; and *Buddhi* decides and resolves. These are the three principal stages and forms of mental functioning: some object is presented; it is owned; and then action is taken with reference to it. Besides these, we may have a function by which past impressions are recollected: this is

Citta, according to the Vedāntic classification. While this is clear it must be observed that, in a careful psychological analysis, the processes, *viz.*, presentation, apperception (self-arrogation) and resolution will be found to involve and presuppose one another. Just as *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*, though always acting conjointly, are often referred to separately, according as one or either of the other two *predominates*, so also is the case here. *Manas* presents and discriminates, but it also does, though not prominently and consciously, what *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi* do; that is to say, when *Manas* acts, the whole *Antahkaraṇa* acts through it, though its functioning may have its emphasis, during such action, upon discriminating presentation. That it is so can be shown by psychological analysis. Discriminating presentation does involve an element, though sub-conscious, of both owning and acting (*i.e.*, the functions of *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi*). In other words, when *Manas* acts, we have the actions of the other two *implicit* in it, which analysis may bring out. What is true of *Manas*, is also true of *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi*: while these latter act, the whole Antahkaraṇa acts. None can act in isolation. During the working of *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi*, the places of emphasis have shifted; what was implicit in *Manas* has now become explicit. This follows *à priori* from the principle that they have a common root and have the same essential constitution; so that what is in the one is also, though in a different bearing, in the others;—an application of the principle that what is here is everywhere, and what is not here is nowhere. It follows also that one can be made to do the work which the others can normally do. Thus the sense-organs which *normally* exclude one another as regards their function, may be made to do the works of one another; *e.g.*, the sense of touch can be made to see.[1] In modern hypnotic experiments also, such *exchange* of

[1] Gautama, the compiler of the Nyāya-Sūtras did this, and accordingly he is also called Akṣapāda, *i.e.*, one who saw with his feet.

sense function is sometimes observed. All this is possible because the sense-organs have a common root, and because the *Jīva*, in his entirety, functions through each, though the modes and emphases of operation are different in different organs. Much more is this true of the organs of the Antahkaraṇa. The second class of senses are senses of action, which are the reactive response which the self makes to sensation, working through the motor nervous system, namely mouth, hands, lips, aṇus, and genitals whereby speaking, grasping and holding, walking, excretion and procreation are performed, and through which effect is given to the Jīva's desires. These two classes are afferent and efferent impulses respectively. The fact of there being a variety of actions does not necessarily involve the same number of Indṛyas. An act of "going" done by the hand (as by a cripple) is to be regarded really as an operation of the Indṛya of feet (Pādendṛya) even though the hand is ordinarily the seat of the Indṛya for handling.[1]

§ 6

In the next part, I will examine exclusively the concept "Matter". Here however a few words are necessary. None of the six systems regards Matter from the Physico-chemical standpoint of science but from the psychological standpoint which regards its effect on the mind and senses. It has been said [2] that the division of matter from the standpoint of the possibility of our sensations, has a firm root in our nature as cognising beings, and has therefore a better rational footing than the modern chemical division of matter into elements and compounds which are being daily threatened by the gradual advancement of scientific culture. They carry with them (the author

[1] Tantrasāra Āhnika 8. The Kashmirian work of that name and not the Compendium by Kṛṣṇānanda-Āgamavāgīśa.

[2] The Study of Patañjali by Prof. Surendranath Dasgupta, p. 178 (University of Calcutta).

above mentioned observes) no fixed and consistent rational conception as the definitions of the ancients did, but are mere makeshifts for understanding or representing certain chemical changes of matter and have therefore only a relative value. Gross matter, as the possibility of sensation, has been divided into five classes according to their relative grossness corresponding to the relative grossness of the senses. These divisions are called "Ether" (*Ākāśa*), "Air" (*Vāyu*), "Fire" (*Tejas*), "Water" (*Ap*), "Earth" (*Pṛthivī*). The English names are merely literal translations of the Sanskrit words. It must not be understood that *Pṛthivi* is Earth in the ordinary English sense of the word, and so with the rest. Gross, that is sensible matter is, in all the systems, called *Bhūta*. All the systems posit certain elements of which it is composed. These are called by the First Standard *Paramāṇu* that is extremely small points of substance and, when massive enough, stimuli of sensation. Their place is taken in the second and third Standards by the *Tanmātra* or Generals of the sense-particulars that is Universals. The respective characteristics of these are compared later.

Philosophy has drawn a distinction between primary and secondary qualities, and regards in such case the former set alone as really inhering in matter and elements of matter, whilst secondary qualities are only effects produced upon a percipient subject by the primary set. The Indian systems recognise no such partition, holding that the arguments which prove that some of the properties are objective will also prove that the rest are equally so. If the external and sensible world exists it cannot consistently be maintained that any of its properties are subjective.[1] The material minima or *Paramāṇus* possess both set of qualities. All the qualities, primary or secondary, are in the thing, and matter therefore is what it

[1] See *ante* "Reality". The Guṇas, Karmas, and Relations exist in the things themselves.

appears to us to be, subject to individual imperfections (*Doṣa*) in perception. It is seen perfectly as the Universals and combination of universals in yoga-consciousness. On this ground all the systems are thoroughly realist.[1] The minima again originate all these qualities in sensible matter because they themselves possess both.[2] The general properties[3] of sensible things are those which are never absent from any one of them. These may be perceived by more senses than one, and in masses of things only differ in degree and not in kind. These correspond to a certain extent with the so-called primary qualities of matter. There are however special qualities which are distinguished from the former in that they are perceivable by a single sense only, and they differ in masses of things not in degree only but in kind. They are therefore essentially different from one another and correspond to some of the so-called secondary qualities of Western Philosophy. These are touch and feel, colour and form, flavour and odour.[4] There are things from which one or the other of these qualities can never be eliminated so long as they exist as those things. The distinctive quality is of their essence.[5]

As the *Paramāṇus* are supersensible and non-spatial entities they are incapable of any distinction from one another in regard to size, shape, weight, density, or any other form of measure. But they may be and are classified with reference to the qualities which they produce in the different forms of sensible things that are themselves the product of the *Paramāṇus*.

[1] Thus greenness is in the leaf and not in the perceiving subject. See "Reality".

[2] It is a fundamental maxim of this standard that the qualities (guṇa) in the effects (kārya) are due to the previous existence of them in the Cause (kāraṇa). So it is said (Vaiśe. IV—1—3) *Kāraṇa-bhāvāt Kārya-bhavah*, which as the Upaskāra of Śaṃkara Miśra explains, means *kāraṇa-guṇa-pūrvakā hi kārya-guṇa bhavanti*.

[3] Sāmānya-Guṇa.

[4] Sparśa, Rūpa, Rasa, Gandha.

[5] Musk can never be imagined as without odour so long as it remains musk, while pure water need not have any smell at all.

The Naiyāyikas hold that the only differences (*Viśeṣas*) between the four classes of minima are their differing *Adṛṣṭas* (V. post). Therefore, according to the latter one Point of a particular class cannot have a form (*Rūpa*) different from that of another *Paramāṇu* or Point of the same class. According, however, to the Vaiśeṣikas, each Point, even of the same class, is believed to have its own particular, individual characteristics (*Viśeṣas*). Thus to explain the actual particulars, Viśeṣas are put into the *Paramāṇus* themselves, thus practically robbing them of the universality which they ought, in theory, to possess. The partless Points of subtle matter like their gross aggregates or sensible matter, (for matter is throughout whether as molecular mass or atom the same) exist in the all-pervading continuum or Ether (*Ākaśa*) and are, therefore, subjected to the action of two other entities and forces, namely, *Kāla*, a general principle of movement, and *Dik*, a principle which holds things together in a particular position, which forces, by their operation, give rise in the percipient to the notions of relations called Time and Spatial Position. The *Paramāṇus* have severally no immanent dynamism though they have energy of position. They receive their initial motion from the First Mover or God: though as entities, they are eternal and are, therefore, not created by Him.

We here pass from the pluralism and metaphysical realism of the first standard to the Dualism of the second, and from it to the Non-dualism of the third standard which is that here adopted. These systems I have shortly described elsewhere,[1] and I deal here only with their concept of Matter. Both the second and third standards replace the *Paramāṇus* by what they call the *Tanmātras* which are five in number, namely, "Ether," "Air," "Fire," "Water," and "Earth," that is objective motions and forces which give rise to the five sensations of hearing, touch, sight, taste and smell. They are

[1] See "Reality".

Generals of the Sense Particulars, or Types or Universals. *Tanmātra* means literally "that only" or "thatness". The "thatness" or General of the sense particulars is of each of the five classes. The mingling of these *Tanmātras* which like the *Paramāṇus* are super-sensible, and their combinations when so mingled go to make up gross sensible matter or *Bhūta* by the accretion of Mass or *Tamas*. The nature of the *Tanmātra* is little understood.

In order to understand what a Tanmātra is we may take this sheet of paper. 'What is it?' It is a particular form (*rūpa*) seen by the eye, a particular cause of sensation as touch (*sparśa*) and has a particular odour (*gandha*) and so forth. Subjectively, the paper = this particular form, touch and odour. But what is it objectively or in itself? Scepticism says it is unknown and unknowable. Agnosticism says the thing in itself is an X which is unknown. Realism says the thing in itself resembles the paper as known or perceived. To what extent does it resemble? Scientific realism says that the resemblance holds only as regards what are called primary qualities. Hindu Realism in all the three standards does not restrict the resemblance to the so-called primary qualities alone, *i.e.*, the paper in itself has real form, real odour, real touch and so forth. But has the paper in itself a particular form and so forth which a subject may perceive in it? Different subjects may have different perceptions of the paper. The same object may be perceived differently under different circumstances. A Scientist by his apparatus may perceive in his way, what the ordinary man does not. A *Yogi* may have still another perception and so on. All these different perceptions of one and the same thing cannot be real. Hence it is said that the real form and so forth of the paper in itself are such as are perceived by a Standard Subject possessing an Absolute Eye and so forth. This standard or ideal subject is that aspect of Consciousness which is called

Hiraṇyagarbha, a plane which Yogīs may reach. They see both the *Tanmātras*[1] and the combination of *Tanmātras* which when they become sensible or *Bhūta* constitute the gross bodies of all particular beings. These are then seen perfectly, that is without any defect (*Doṣa*) which is due to the action of inherited tendency (*Saṃskāra*) of any kind. For it is to be remembered that man's mind is never *tabula rasa* but a complex of impressions and therefore tendencies produced by previous actions (*karma*). The ordinary man's perception of the paper is of the paper in itself perceived subject to the limitations of the defects (*doṣa*) in him.

Examining this perception of paper we find (1) that it is gross (*Sthūla*) in the sense that it is patent; (2) that it is particular giving us mere sense particulars; (3) that it is a complexus of form, odour and so forth, *i.e.*, heterogeneous; and (4) that it is variable according to the circumstances and instruments of perception. A man's actual sense-datum possesses these four characteristics. Upon an analysis, however, with a view to discover the elements which underlie this sense-datum, it becomes clear that the elements to be real, *i.e.*, to be real elements of the paper in itself, must present the following characteristics: (1) they must not be gross but subtle (*Sūkṣma*); (2) they must not be particular but generic or universal. Thus, if we take a particular form and colour such as whiteness of this paper, the very elements which make up this whiteness ought not to be particular. The particularity must arise out of the particular grouping (*Saṃyoga*) of the elements. Particularity may also be due to the speciality of the instruments of a given subject's sense activity. If the elements themselves be particular, then they are not elements and they are not, as the Pātañjala-Yoga-Śāstra says, *Aviśeṣas*.[2]

[1] The Tanmātras are seen by Yogis by that form of Yoga-dṛṣṭi which is called *Savicāra Saṃprajñāta-Samādhi*.

[2] See Pātañjala-Sūtra, II. 19.

(3) They must not be complex; they must be simple or homogeneous in quality: otherwise, they are not elements. Thus each distinct species of colour must in itself be conceived as homogeneous in quality.[1] (4) They must not be variable, *i.e.*, they must be such as exist for a standard or ideal subject. It is these generic, simple, subtle and standard or ideal elements of our particular, complex, gross and variable sense-data which are the *Tanmātras* which again are the material causes of gross, sensible matter or the *Bhūtās*. Simplicity and subtlety, however, do not necessarily suggest that those elements are atomic. Being the elements of sense-data, they are necessarily of five kinds—sound, touch, form and colour, taste and smell —(*Śabda*, *Sparśa*, *Rūpa*, *Rasa* and *Gandha*). But each is a family or class name. Thus, the sound universal or *Śabda-Tanmātra* means an hierarchy of generic sounds beginning with the *summum genus* or '*Om*'[2] down to the *infima species* (Ka, Kha, Ga, etc.). It excludes, however, the mere particulars, such as the sound Ka and other sounds as actually spoken by this man or that. The same applies to touch, form, taste and smell. There is a logical as distinguished from a temporal evolution from the *summum genus* to the *infima species*. The further evolution under the action of Consciousness as power (*Cit-Śakti*) of mere sense-particulars from the orders of the *Tanmātras* or Universals is the creation of gross sensible matter (*Sthūla-Bhūta*).

What, then, is the World of the Universals as experienced by those who attain to it[3] that is, to those whose mind is a Standard

[1] Thus "apple green" must always be of the same shade and the same shade throughout whereas the particular "apple greens" vary.

[2] The Mantra Oṃ is the approximate Natural Name and sound of the first general and massive movement in the evolution of the universe. From this come the particular heterogeneous movements; just as from Om come all the particular letters, which are themselves sound aspects of particular movements. See my "Garland of Letters".

[3] Śaṃkarācārya discusses the universals which he calls Ākṛtis or persistent Types under Vedānta-Sūtra, I, 3, 28. He speaks of Devatā

Mind? In the first place then, a thing really is as it appears. It is seen perfectly free from all the defects which attach to minds which are not Standard Minds. It is thus, in this sense, a perfect world. But from this perfect standpoint what are physical and moral ugliness, physical imperfection and vice? It must be remembered in the first place that 'ugly' and 'vicious' are terms of man's aesthetic and moral judgments which on account of his imperfections (*Doṣa*) are neither just nor correct measures of ugliness and vice. In the standard of perfect perception, the ugliness or viciousness of a thing or action must be absolutely just and in correct proportions. Thus from a man's standpoint, he may either over-estimate or under-estimate both. He may either see ugliness or vice where there is none. To a Standard Mind everything will be in the fulness of its bearings and therefore ugliness or vice seen perfectly is an absolutely just and correct estimate of either. From the perfect standpoint again, neither in the ordinary sense may ever exist, for from that standpoint everything is a play (*Līlā*) of the Perfect Consciousness (*Cid-Vilāsa*) of the *Saccidānandamayī-Śakti*.

It must also be remembered that ugliness and beauty, good and evil are relative. What is beautiful to one pair of eyes may be hideous to another. One has only to remember in the former connection the varying ideas which exist upon the subject of woman's beauty and her fashions. The figure of Kālī-Devī is repugnant to the European. The Indian is drawn towards it. To him on the other hand the Christian's references to the "blood of the Lamb," the purification (of Mithraic origin) by blood, are sickening and repellent. As regards good and evil, what is fear and pain in the deer is joy and pleasure in the tiger, which devours it. The act of the

Types, Sound Types, etc. From the Indian standpoint the universals are *ante rem* as existing in the creative "Mind" of God *in re* as the thing perfectly perceived and *post rem* as images of finite constructive thinking, as mental abstractions from the particulars.

assassin who stabs a Ruler in the dark may bring the light of liberty to his people. The betrayal of Judas, infamous as it was in itself, was yet for the Christian a necessary stage in God's scheme for the redemption of mankind and so on. Like the child's jig-saw puzzle what appears crooked, unintelligible in the part may be harmonious in the whole.

If we compare the *Paramāṇu* and *Tanmātra* we find certain similarities and certain differences. Whilst the first is an abstract and rigid model, the latter is a more concrete one and more easily usable. In fact the higher Standards attempt to complete and clear up what the First Standard leaves incomplete and implicit. Thus comparing the points enumerated in the description of the *Paramāṇu* (*a*) The *Tanmātras* are elements of sense experience regarded as objective, that is categories of sense experience objectified. (*b*) They are simple as elements of sense experience, but are not simple in relation to the individualising principle in consciousness (*Asmitā* or *Ahaṃkāra*) from which or under the action of which they are derived. (*c*) They have origination (*utpatti*) and dissolution (*laya*), though there is no absolute destruction of them. They originate from the Principle named and are dissolved again into it which is again dissolved in the mental principle *Buddhi* and that again into the psycho-material cause of all (Prakṛti) or in the one Consciousness (*Cit*) according to the Sāṃkhya or Vedānta respectively. Therein they exist as potency. (*d*) Universality which is logically involved in the *Paramāṇus* is fully brought out in the *Tanmātra* which is manifestly a category. (*e*) A Tanmātra is not necessarily something "atomic" and "partless". To conceive it one need not conceive it as a Point. It may be extended or massive, only that mass must not be heterogeneous and variable in quality. It may thus have any magnitude varying from the point (*Aṇu*) to the infinitely great (*Mahat*). In fact a given magnitude, whether infinitely small or infinitely great,

is not an inseparable proprium of a *Tanmātra.* Whilst we should not say that a *Tanmātra* has no magnitude, we should not also say that it has always a given magnitude. Thus whilst a *Paramāṇu* has no magnitude in the sense that it is only a point, a *Tanmātra* may be said to have no magnitude in the sense that it is not necessarily bound up with any magnitude.

It must be noted also that the Tanmātra has also objective magnitude, though not in the ordinary sense. A mental object (say an image) is not a subjective phenomenon only: it is in the mind but at the same time it is a real otherness as a condition of stress and strain in the universal ether or cosmic stuff. It can thus be transmitted from mind to mind.[1] Therefore as a stress and strain form it must have some magnitude, and regarded as a condition of the cosmic stuff this may be called objective.

An essential difference between the *Paramāṇu* and *Tanmātra* consists in the fact that the former is an eternal, independently existing, objective reality. It is as equally real as the Mind which perceives it and lasts as long as the Mind lasts. But the *Tanmātra* like the mind is not eternal but a product of the individualising principle of consciousness (*asmitā*) or (*ahaṃkāra*) which is again a product of that tendency in the Cosmic Consciousness (*buddhi*) which is realised in the next stage as a limited self-conscious centre, and which tendency again is a transformation of the Supreme Power (*Mahā-śakti* or God's Will) as both material and efficient cause, known in Śākta worship as the Mother. Since the Mother-Power is the material cause of the universe, all its effects as particular objects therein, are forms of Her power. She is present in, and as, all things, which are themselves possessed of an inherent Dynamism by which they are evolved, maintained and

[1] See "Reality" dealing with Perception and the Mind-Ray.

dissolved again into their Supreme Cause. As that Cause is Pure Consciousness and Experience (*Cit* or *Saṃvit*) all that exists is a form of that. Mind is a limited form of Consciousness as the finite subject. Matter is a limited form of consciousness as the finite object. At base they are one Power. In pure Consciousness a movement takes place which, at first knows itself as its own object, that is, as part of itself, and then as different from itself. This difference itself, as object, unfolds from within itself, on the rise of cosmic memory, the Generals of the sense-particulars and the particular sensible matter. Mind and matter are themselves ultimately twin aspects of the one Consciousness as Power: as *Cit-śakti* and *Māyā-śakti*.

The Mind or subject is one form of stress and strain in the cosmic substance. Matter or object whether gross or subtle is another. Both Mind and Matter are forms of the one Substance. In their ground they are one. Both subtle and gross matter are objective to the mind, in the sense that they are other than, and objects of, its operation. But the objects vary firstly, in that gross matter consists of particulars and subtle matter is the Universals. Secondly, gross matter is what its name means namely matter made massive by increment of *Tamas*. By reason of this massiveness it becomes perceptible to the senses which subtle matter as *Paramāṇu* or *Tanmātra* is not. The movement towards manifestation is throughout both a coarsening and a becoming more definite, particular, and heterogeneous. These characteristics are shown on both sides of the duality into which the one substance bifurcates, namely Mind and Matter. Popularly we think of gross sensible Matter as something occupying space outside the body. This attitude is the result of the increasing definition, particularity, and coarsening of both mind and matter. They thus recede more and more from one another. In the case of subtle matter the two sides make nearer approach.

Perception (*Pratyakṣa*) is explained in the second Standard as follows: The *Puruṣas* or Spirits are many and their nature is pure Consciousness. *Prakṛti* is one and is indescribable except as the unconscious Source of Mind and Matter, which are as unconscious as their origin. *Puruṣa* and *Prakṛti* are two separate independent realities. Experience is of two kinds. It is either the pure experience of the *Puruṣa* dissociated from *Prakṛti*, or the limited experience of the *Puruṣa* in association with *Prakṛti*. The result of such association is an apparent combination of consciousness and unconsciousness—" apparent " because Consciousness is ever unchanged and unaffected. The apparent combination of the two is the individual being or *Jīva*. Outer objects (*Arthas*) affect the sense-organs (*Indṛya*). The *Manas* attends to and thus selects one or other from the field of objects and places it before the other faculties of the Inner organ namely the I-Making (*Ahaṃkāra*) and determining (*Buddhi*) faculties.[1] *Sattva* or the factor manifesting consciousness prevails in the latter and there is determination (*Adhyavasāya*).[2] This modification (*Vṛtti*) of *Buddhi* is unconscious.[3] Hence for knowledge it is necessary that the illumination of Consciousness should fall on Buddhi and its function upon which they appear *as if* conscious.

A similar account is given in the Yoga-śāstra of Patañjali where *Citta* is the general term for the Inner Organ. The external object acts through the sense-channel on *Citta* and this occasions it to unconsciously evolve.[4] *Sattva* is said to be

[1] Antahkaraṇa, that is Buddhi, Ahaṃkāra, Manas.

[2] *e.g.*, In a dim light my sight merely apprehends an object I know not what. Manas attends and makes it out to be an enemy aiming his weapon at me (here discrimination and classification have been made). Then I refer this to the self (Ahaṃkāra) and see that I am the object of his intention. Then finally I make up my mind (Adhyavasāya) by Buddhi to avoid his weapon by moving away. As to the nature and trueness of perception, see " Reality ".

[3] Acetana.

[4] In Sāttvika-pariṇāma as Vācaspati has it.

" transparent " and manifesting.[1] Hence it takes on the form of the external object,[2] a fact of importance to remember when dealing with the rationale of the rituals which are concerned with the transformation of *Citta*. But as evolution of *Citta* is unconscious, the light of *Puruṣa* is reflected on the state of *Citta*: or the reflection of *Citta* is cast on *Puruṣa* or they cast reflection on each other.[3] By such reflection there is an *appearance* of the state of *Citta* looking like a conscious state, a state of *Puruṣa* himself. As long as there are modifications (*Vṛtti*) of the *Citta* or Mind the *Puruṣa* becomes falsely identified with *Vṛtti* which is not his own. This is a virtual and not real identification. In non-yoga state the *Puruṣa*, though still really pure, appears to be impure on account of the virtual image of *Citta-vṛtti* or mental modification falling on it. Yoga therefore is the stoppage of all modifications of the Mind,[4] when the witness or *Puruṣa* shines in his own pristine purity.

In modern parlance Consciousness and Mind are not two different things. This Standard assumes them to be two separate and independently existing things. " Reflection " and so forth merely means that interaction between Consciousness and unconscious Mind and Matter takes place without affectation of the former. Consciousness never ceases to be what it is, but its association with unconscious mind gives the latter the appearance of consciousness, and at the same time Consciousness seems to be limited as the object which it illuminates. We are conscious but know that our consciousness is limited. There is some force which apparently limits it and which appears as mind and matter. A more attractive view is that taken by the Monistic Śākta doctrine of Power: Being is one

[1] Svaccha and Prakāśaka.

[2] Bāhya-vastūparāga.

[3] According to various views, the latter being that of Vijñāna-bhikṣu.

[4] Yogash citta-vritti-nirodhah (Patañjali).

with twin aspects—as Consciousness and as the Consciousness-Power whereby it appears to contract consciousness as Mind which is then presented with its co-relative Matter. It is Consciousness which appears through its Power as unconsciousness and not unconsciousness which through reflection (*Ābhāsa*) appears conscious.

A modification or *Vṛtti* is in Sāṃkhya and Māyā-vāda-Vedānta an *actual transformation* of the Mind-Stuff (*Citta*) but is only an imputation so far as pure consciousness (*Cit*) or *Puruṣa* is concerned.[1] The *Antahkaraṇa* of Sāṃkhya = the *Citta* of Yoga: and this bears no parallelism to the Nyāya *Manas*. The *Citta* is not partless and therefore unchanging. On the contrary being a transformation (*Vikāra*) of the Natural Principle *Prakṛti*, it is composite,[2] ceaselessly changing. Even in final dissolution[3] when it lapses into *Prakṛti*-stuff this latter has still homogeneous change as distinguished from heteropathic change.[4] The essential character of *Prakṛti* and all its derivatives is change and unconsciousness, just as unchanging consciousness is the nature of the Sāṃkhyan *Puruṣa* and Vedāntic *Cit*.

In later Vedāntic works a considerable part of the Sāṃkhya doctrine has been assimilated. Thus *Prakṛti* of the latter appears as the *Māyā* of the former, though not of course as an independent principle, for the Vedānta of which we write is

[1] Cf. Yoga-sūtra (2. 20) Draṣṭā dṛśimātrah śuddho'pi pratyayānupasyah. The witness, though only Seer and pure, appears to own and enjoy the Pratyayas or Vṛttis.

[2] As Sattva, Rajas and Tamas.

[3] Mahā-pralaya, and also in what in Yoga is Nirbīja-Samādhi.

[4] By the first or Sadṛśa pariṇāma is meant ' Change in its own given condition '. The changed state is equivalent to the changing state, *e.g.*, in Mahā-pralaya, it is in the state of equilibrium (Sāmyāvasthā) of Sattva, Rajas and Tamas and changes so as to maintain this state of equilibrium: the change not upsetting the equilibrium. But in creation (Sṛṣṭi) Change is not of this character but Visadṛśa-pariṇāma. One relation of the Guṇas changes into another different from it and so on.

monistic. In the same way the notion of Prakṛti as constituted of three factors or *Guṇas* is accepted. Still more is this the case with Śākta doctrine, which is based on the Sāṃkhya with this difference, that it also denies that *Prakṛti* is an independent principle. There is one Brahman of two aspects static and kinetic. As pure unchanging Consciousness It is the one Śiva who takes the place of the plurality of liberated selves. Active Consciousness is the Power which effects change and appears as changing unconscious mind and matter. It is the One Supreme Power or Śakti (*Mahā-śakti*, *Ādyā-Śakti*) who takes the place of the independent Sāṃkhyan *Prakṛti*, though the name *Prakṛti* is retained. She is the Divine Mother (*Aṃbikā*) of all. As the Power of Consciousness or Śiva, or more strictly Consciousness *as* Power, She has two aspects—Her supreme or own (*Svarūpa*) aspect in which She is (as is Śiva) Pure Consciousness[1], and an aspect in which She appears as the universe. As such She is *Māyā-Śakti* constituted of the three *Guṇas*.[2] It is She then who appears in and as mind and matter, who is both the Form which is these and the Spirit which ensouls them. The Sāṃkhyan Prakṛti has been personified but without ground. Rather is *Prakṛti* a dark impersonal form, a veil, a mystery, like the *Māyā* of Śaṃkarācārya's Vedānta.

To the Śākta on the other hand the Mother of the world is a Divine Person, the Supreme "I" (*Pūrṇāhaṃ*) in which all other limited Egos are. She is not and cannot be some independent Principle, for She is the Power of Śiva and Power and Power-holder (*Śaktimān*) are one. Man is threefold as Spirit, Mind, Body. As Spirit he is Śiva who, in Himself, is pure Consciousness. As Mind and body he is Śiva as Power, or "God in Action" or Śakti. That Power

[1] Cidrūpā or Cinmayīśakti. This is Parā-Śakti.

[2] Triguṇa-mayīśakti. These Guṇas are gross forms of Her as the Powers of Knowledge, Will and Action.

contracts consciousness in those subject to it.[1] The same Power in the liberating aspect expands man's consciousness until it becomes infinite and one with Hers. *Māyā-Śakti* is the Mother Herself as the World-Creatrix. *Avidyā-Śakti* is the Mother in the form of man and all other beings and things. These are a mixture of Consciousness-unconsciousness, for in this world neither exists alone. There is no pure consciousness (for that means no world,) except for the Yoga-Experience which transcends world-experience. Nothing on the other hand is absolutely unconscious, for Consciousness is immanent in all beings and things. What seems to be unconscious is the Mother hiding Herself under the veil of forms: the thicker the veil (the more of Tamas Guṇa as the Hindu would say) the more apparently unconscious a being or thing appears to be. All is Consciousness. All is Brahman. All is the Mother whose power it is to obscure Her changeless Self in changing forms of Mind and Matter. Consciousness is the Mother-Power in Its supreme nature (*Svarūpa*). Mind is a veiled form of that Power. Matter is a more densely veiled form of the same. Throughout we are in union with the Supreme I (*Ahaṃ*).

Here we pass from the mere philosophising of Sāṃkhya to Śākta worship. So far however as its philosophical basis is concerned, it agrees, subject to modifications mentioned, with Sāṃkhya and generally with ordinary Vedāntic views as to the nature of Mind and its faculties and Matter and its properties.[2] Consciousness is of course distinct from Mind.

[1] This is Avidyā-Śakti (ignorance). The Devī or Mother as Māyā is not affected by the Power She wields. What is in Her called Māyā is in the individual, subject to it, Avidyā.

[2] I am here concerned only with the nature of Mind and its faculties. There are differences both as to essentials such as Māyā, Vivartta and Parināma (see as to the distinction, Vedānta-paribhāṣā, Vedānta-kalpa-taru-parimala in Sūtra 1—2—21' and Siddhantaleśa of Appaya-dīkṣita); cosmogony through Apañcīkṛta Bhūtas (See Rāghavabhatta Comm. on Śāradā-Tilaka, 1—27 as to this, Trivitkaraṇa and the nature of bodies

The former is mindless Being. Mind however does not exist otherwise than in association with consciousness with which it is intermingled. Indian Mind = *Antahkaraṇa* or Inner organ = the three species of subjective activity or functioning, *viz.*, *Buddhi*, *Ahaṃkāra*, *Manas* above described, illumined by Consciousness.

Consciousness is the causal body, for out of it is evolved Mind and other elements of the subtle body, sheathed in Matter as the gross body. Between mind and matter there is no *esssential* difference. They are each forms of the one Substance-Energy or Supreme Power, variously veiled and in differing collocations. There is no real partition [1] between "unextended" mind and "extended" matter. Both are abstractions of concrete experience which in itself is always extensive and even Immense (hence the term Brahman which is infinite Consciousness or Experience) and unbounded. One section of this we call subjective (Mind) and another section objective and external (Matter). But Extensiveness or Massiveness belongs to both. Experience is always extensive in the sense that experience is always an universe composed of many elements of feeling, ideas, and so forth in which our practical interest emphasises a few features and veils the rest though given.[2] The experience of the limited or Measured (universe) is actually (though not pragmatically) that of the Unmeasured (Brahman). Man is thus always experiencing Brahman without recognising it. (The teaching of Monistic

of Devas, water and earth-dwellers, etc.) and details such as inclusion of Prāṇa amongst the Tattvas, Citta (memory) as a separate Tattva and so on.

[1] Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya favours me with the following (summarised with some observations of my own) note on extensiveness and extension which represents views expressed in his "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder", portion of his work on Indian Culture.

[2] Thus when I say that I am seeing *a* star I am actually seeing many though one prominently. Besides at that moment I have also other kinds of sensations (sounds, smells, touches, etc.), which I ignore because they happen to be irrelevant to my present purpose.

Vedāntic and in particular Śākta teaching [1] is that we must ever recognise this. If man's experience is thus unified with Brahman then the world is a true source of enjoyment, and liberating timeless Bliss is in this way, and according to the perfection of such recognition, attained. It is said in the Tantras that the world was created in and by Bliss. The birth of the world gives no pangs to the World-Mother. It is the separation from and ignoring of Her which is pain in the creature.)

Apart from what was stated previous to this interposition, "Extensive" does not mean immense or unbounded necessarily. It means an experience that has a field having any magnitude and not therefore a point. Any experience (whether a mental image or an outer perception) has a field more or less wide. Experience is always *Vibhu* or all-extensive though by practical veiling or ignoring, this *Vibhu* appears to contract into more or less measured fields: and this sort of seeming or pragmatic contraction can even approximate to the other end of the pole, the *Aṇu* or atomic point which is an ideal limit. [The term "seeming" indicates the Māyā-vāda view. According to the Śākta standpoint, there is a real contraction (*Saṃkoca*) as manifested Power of an unchangeable Power-holder. This antinomy it does not pretend to solve. This distinction does not affect the matter in hand.] For when a man thinks that he is attending to a point his experience is not really exhausted in that point.

Experience then has ever a field and perhaps an unmeasured field though this is practically ignored. By "field" is not meant an outer field always: it means a mass or tissue of experience which can be analysed into parts. A partless experience would be atomic or *Aṇu*: but this is an ideal limit only: ordinarily at any rate every experience has parts. An

[1] "Particular" because to it everything *is* Brahman in the fullest sense. Its Māyā being Brahman itself as Power.

experience may be homogeneous or heterogeneous as regards its constitution.[1] Psychology also attributes extensiveness to sensations.[2] Organic feelings such as headache, heart-palpitation are felt to be less extensive than feelings of general uneasiness such as fatigue, sleepiness, hunger and so forth. Thus extensiveness is a property regarding which sensations and also ideas may be compared with one another.

Summarising the above we may say that the ground of all experience is the Ether of Consciousness, or *Cidā-kāśa* as Vedānta calls the Supreme or Perfect Experience. The Experience itself is felt or intuited as an Universe to which no definite bounds can be set. Within this universe, we seize upon (swayed by pragmatic interests) a definite portion or section [3] and bring it into prominence and veil or ignore the rest, though given. Then we think and talk as though this selected part or section were the whole Fact. Thus I say "I am experiencing a particular pain now," and so on. This section also is a field in the sense explained: it is a definite measured field. This field may tend to contract more or less closely into a point.

Whilst extensiveness belongs to both mind and matter, in the latter case it takes a new form, involving as it does suggestions of muscular effort or rather of tactuo-muscular sensations. Here extensiveness becomes extension. Any mental state has its extensiveness or voluminousness besides intensity

[1] *e.g.*, I am sensing or imaging this white sheet of paper. This is homogeneous experience. It has parts or elements and therefore it is a field. An experience which is a mixture of sounds, colours, and smells, etc., is heterogeneous. This too has parts.

[2] *e.g.*, the roar of distant thunder is felt to be more extensive or voluminous than the screech of a parrot. The palm of the hand placed on the back of another is felt by that other as more extensive than the tip of a finger so placed.

[3] As Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya appropriately calls it, since the Vedāntic name for the Supreme experience or Brahman is the Whole (Pūrna). It is *Akhanda* that is without sections.

and protensity or duration. Its extensiveness is not essentially different from that of a material object, say a block of stone; the latter only explicitly involves suggestions of tactuo-muscular experience, such as up and down, near and far, right and left, inwards and forwards. *A priori* also this ought to follow. *Cidākāśa* is immensity of consciousness or awareness. All forms of existence, whether subjective or objective, are *Cidākāśa* or supreme, infinitely full, and entire Consciousness veiled variously by Māyā-Śakti. (From the Śākta standpoint it is Consciousness as Power veiling itself.) Hence all the products of Māyā can only be carved out of, and must be imbedded in, that Immensity.

And all, whether mind or matter are in essence one, for they are at root varying transformations of the one Power. Both the senses (*Indrya*) and their chief *Manas* on the one side and the subtle matter, which by addition of mass (*Tamoguṇa*) becomes gross matter, derive from the same principle[1] of apperception or *Ahaṃkāra* which issues from *Buddhi*, as the latter does from the Finitising Principle or root of all things, which considered as a Force, is Prakṛti (and as a Personal Power an aspect of the Mother of the universe—Her Infinite Womb). Mind is that Immensity veiled in a way. Matter is also that same Immensity veiled in another way. It is true that mental activity has in some cases to be conceived as being focussed, as converging in a point and diverging from a point. So far as that is true, the Nyāya view of the inextended *Manas* which is atomic (*Aṇu*) is also relatively true. But this should not be taken to mean that *Buddhi* and *Manas* are essentially different from Matter and that their contrast is given by non-extension and extension respectively.

It has been supposed that the mind is not in space and that therefore it has neither extension nor motion. Space is

[1] So in the Vedāntic scheme both mind and matter are derived from differing aspects of one set of Tanmātras.

regarded as something external to it. *Ākāśa* as Space is not essentially distinct from ultimate Reality or Brahman. The quasi-material Ether (*Bhūtākāśa*) is merely the Ether of Consciousness (*Cidākāśa*) veiled in a way. The immensity of the former is the immensity of the latter, though of course the immensity of Experience or *Cit* is the fuller Immensity (*Pūrṇa*) of the two.[1] Mind then exists, operates and moves in space,[2] a statement which has an important bearing on Yoga, and occultism, such as thought-transference.

§ 7

All Psychology recognises the trinity[3] of Knower or Subject (*Jñātā*) Known or Object (*Jñeya*) and Knowing (*Jñāna*)[4] which is stress or interaction between the two. All these are however sections[5] of Consciousness,[6] so that in perception we have not to deal with foreign matter as commonsense thinks, but it is merely a transaction between one Fact-section and another: between one condition of Consciousness or Experience and another. The first is Consciousness conditioned by Mind (*Antahkaraṇa*); the second is Consciousness conditioned by the material object in relation

[1] See P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya's " Approaches to Truth " and " Patent Wonder ". Śaṃkara in his Bhāṣya on the Vedānta-Sūtra *Ākāśastallingāt* distinguishes of course between the primary (Mukhya) and the secondary sense (Gauṇa) of Ākāśa and says that the Ākāśa of the Sūtrā is not Bhūtākāśa but Brahman Itself, but he says that the term in the secondary sense too is applicable to Brahman because the latter is similar to Ākāśa in many essential respects such as immensity (Vibhutva) and the like. Ākāśa is thus representative of Brahman, " Khaṃ Brahma " as the mantra runs. In some of the developments of Navya-Nyāya (Neo-Logic) too, Ākāśa, Kāla, Dik instead of being regarded as separate entities, are identified in substance with Paramātman or Parameśvara (*e.g.* by Raghunātha Śiromani).

[2] Even Nyāya-vaiśeṣika which regards the Manas as Aṇu ascribes Vega or movement to it.

[3] Triputī.

[4] Mātri, Māna, Meya is the gist (Saṃkalitārtha) of Śakti.

[5] Avaccheda.

[6] Caitanya.

to which the mind energises or functions: and the third is Consciousness conditioned by the functioning of mind. Consciousness being polarised into "I" (*Ahaṃ*) and "this" (*Idaṃ*) there is an interaction between the two. Mind (*Antahkaraṇa*) is with parts[1] and can move in space. Mind is a changing and differentiating thing. Mind is capable of moving from place to place and assuming the form of the objects of perception.[2] *This going out to an object and taking its shape*[3] *is actual.* The mind (I speak of Antahkaraṇa) is a radiant and transparent and light[4] Substance and can travel like a ray of light out through a sense organ. Mind is thus an *active force*, a form of the general Active Power or Śakti.[5] As the brain, the organ of mind, is enclosed in an organic envelope, solid and in appearance closed, the imagination has a tendency to picture it as being isolated from the exterior world, though in truth it is in constant contact with it through a subtle and constant exchange of secret activities.[6] These exist as unconscious psychological phenomena some of which rise to the level of consciousness.[7] The mind is not according to Indian ideas (as it has been sometimes regarded in the West) something, static, passive, and merely receptive. It takes an active part in perception both by reason of its activity and the nature of that activity as caused by its latent tendencies (*Saṃskāras*). Cerebral activity further takes place

[1] Sāvayava. Mind is created that is has a beginning. What is created is not partless, for creation is a putting together of parts.

[2] Artha, Viṣaya.

[3] Viṣayākārākārita. See Bṛhad.-Up., 4-3-7; Śvetāśvatara, 3-18; Kaṭha-Up., 2-21.

[4] Taijasa.

[5] Every modification (Vṛtti) of the root Natural Principle is active and moving, just as its source is. There is nothing static in nature. The mind in particular is always undergoing conscious or unconscious modification (Vṛtti).

[6] See La realité du monde sensible par Jean Jaurés cited in Emile Boirac "La Psychologie Inconnue".

[7] Leibnitz appears to be the first in the West to formulate the conception of such phenomena or as he called them "insensible perceptions".

not only in the mind itself, but radiates into space beyond the limits of the human organism where it makes for itself a sphere of action. This activity may display itself either in perception, the matter with which we are here directly concerned, or in such occult phenomena as thought-transference, magnetism, healing and so forth.[1] Here the mind not merely *knows*, but particularly through the faculty of all generates a motor force upon exterior objects. Consciousness (*Cit*) is everything:[2] but it has been veiled in the universe. It is revealed in those things in which mind is, or to which it goes out and which it illumines. Because Mind is the revealer of Consciousness it is the highest manifestation, in varying degrees, of the nature of the Supreme Power. Consciousness is eternally self-manifest. It is reflected however only by that which is capable of such reflection, just as the sun is reflected by a mirror. The Mind is thus a refiner of the veil,[3] which enables man to manifest consciousness in varying degree until by Yoga and elimination of mind, passage is made into Mindless Consciousness.

The following well-known passage from Vedānta-paribhāṣā gives an account of perception. "As water from a tank may flow through a channel into a plot of land and assume its shape (square, triangular or any other form) so the radiant mind (*Taijasa Antahkaraṇa*) goes out through the eye or any other sense organ to the place where an object is and becomes transformed into the shape of that object. This modification of the *Antahkaraṇa*-stuff is called *Vṛtti*.[4] Such

[1] Here we may instance a form of initiation (Dīkṣā) to which I have referred in "Serpent Power" (A. Avalon).

[2] Sarvam khalvidaṃ Brahma "All is Brahman" and the Brahman-Svarūpa is Cit. The form is Śakti or Power of Cit or rather Cit as Power.

[3] In Buddhi Sāttva predominates and in Vedānta it is derived from the Sāttvikāṃśa of the Tanmātras.

[4] The movement (Saṃcaraṇa) and going out ("lelayate bahih") does not apply to Cit which never goes, but to an inner stuff, which though ordinarily connected with, and dwelling within, the gross body,

going out is subject to certain conditions. The object must be *Yogya*, that is must satisfy certain conditions in order that it may at all draw out the *Antahkaraṇa* to itself.

On this and in this connection Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya observes: "Western psychology gives us a one-sided view of Perception: an external stimulus acting upon a sense organ (*e.g.*, an ether-wave acting on the retina). The more vital side of the picture is however given by the above account quoted: the mind goes out as a radiant energy and takes the shape of the object. In the Vedānta view the stress is laid on this side of the affair, though the object's part is also recognised in the stipulation of *Yogyatā*. (For the mind does not go out everywhere and always but only certain conditions are fulfilled, among which we may suppose the tapping on the nerves by objective stimulation, the action on the body, to be one, the mind's *Saṃskāra* or predisposition or interest in a given perception to be another, and there may be other subtler conditions.) Thus the Vedānta view would appear to be a fuller view of the matter than the commonly accepted psychology of perception in the West. The 'jump' from the neurosis to the psychosis is a pretty long jump and an inexplicable one in Western psychology. The affair is explained only up to the stimulation of the *Annamayakośa* (the peripheral organs and the brain); but there is no suspicion of the really important steps in the process, *viz.*, the re-action of the *Antahkaraṇa* and the *Prāṇa* (vital principle) on the *Tāmasika* (veiling) crust of the object. Really, object = subject = the interaction = Consciousness differently encrusted or veiled. The *Antahkaraṇa* is believed to be a stuff that being *Sāttvika* (Consciousness-revealing) and *Taijasa* (radiant) can

can extend and contract and go out and take the shape of objects. In ordinary experience the connection with the body is maintained. In Yoga the body may be left altogether and entry made into another body. There is also an occult power or Siddhi of producing a projection of the self known as Cāyā-puruṣa.

go out and invade the *Tāmasika* (veiling) crust of consciousness in the form of object (*Viṣaya-caitanya*), envelop and infuse it by its own luminosity (somewhat like the X-rays which are themselves ordinarily invisible, but make opaque things transparent) and thereby discover the essential identity between itself and the object: *it is the finding out of this essential identity* between Consciousness as Knower (*Pramāṭṛ-caitanya*) and Consciousness as the Known (*Viṣaya-caitanya*) and that between Consciousness as Knowing (*Pramāṇa-caitanya*) and Consciousness as object (*Viṣaya-caitanya*) which makes the substance of Perception according to Vedānta."

(In terms of Śākta doctrine *Mātṛ*, *Māna*, *Meya* or Knower, Knowing, Known are the gist (*Saṃkalitārtha*) of the term Śakti. It is these three which are referred to in the triplication of the Supreme Point or Bindu in which Consciousness commences to contract and thus subjectify itself as the Knower of objects.)

In perception there is a feeling of *directness* or *immediateness*. This feeling of directness [1] is and can be the import of *Cit* or Consciousness or Brahman only. Thus in any direct apprehension of objects we are really face to face with Consciousness or Brahman Itself.[2] All differences (*Bheda*) are so many barriers set up by the magic of the veil which is Śakti as *Māyā:* in each act of perception a barrier is momentarily removed so that the underlying and essential unity is recognised. As Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya well says "*Perception is thus an act of owning:* the self owning another which it has disowned in practice (*vyavahāra*)". As however he is careful to point out, this act of owning or identifying in common perception is rather a confused sort of recognition, not possessing the clear import of such ownings as "*Tat tvam*

[1] Aparokṣatva.

[2] *i.e.*, each perception is a Brahma-sākṣātkāra or realisation of Brahman in a way.

asi" (That thou art) "*Aham Brahma*" (I am Brahman), *So'ham* (He I am) or as the Śāktas also say *Sā'ham* (She I am). It is a kind of unconscious owning in actual fact, philosophically recognised by reflection, but actually realised by the supreme experience of identity to which these sayings refer.

Immediacy or intuition or direct cognition[1] (*Sākṣātkāṛa*) may relate to two aspects of perception, *viz.*, the Knower, or to the object or the Known. How then is the sensation-complex on *Vṛtti* intuited? A sensation is a state of the *Antahkaraṇa*: how then do we become directly aware of it?[2]

The conditions of a direct perception or intuition of a sensation-complex or Vṛtti are (*a*) the *Vṛtti* must be *Yogya* (must satisfy the conditions), for every *Vṛtti* of the *Antahkaraṇa* is not that; (*b*) the object must also be *Yogya* in relation to its appropriate sense-organ in order that the particular sensation may be cognised; (*c*) there must be occupation of the same position in space[3] by the *Vṛtti* and the object; (*d*) lastly *Vartamānatā* or the object being present actually at the moment of the *Vṛtti* is another condition of direct cognition. Otherwise there is only recollection or anticipation. The Mind-Ray goes out to where the object is, envelopes it, takes its likeness and this objective double constituted of Mind-stuff (*Antahkaraṇa*) is the Vṛtti. Thus when a jar is seen, the double or *vṛtti* must also be projected and localised there: without such projection and localisation there is no sense perception, though there may be recollection or imagination. Such projection and localisation are also recognised by Western Psychology, but then it does not say that this going out and taking the shape of the object is actual. By actual going out, enveloping and so forth the essential identity between subject and object is recognised which is the essence of perception. Western Psychology leaves this essence of perception unexplained.

[1] P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya.

[2] this is Jñāna-gata-pratyakṣa.

[3] Sāmānādhikaraṇya.

On this it is to be observed that *Antahkaraṇa Vṛttis* may be unconscious or rather subconscious. This corresponds to unconscious ideation or unconscious mental modification of some schools of Western Psychology. To engage the *Antahkaraṇa* and to be in it is not therefore the same thing as being cognised. The revealing power of the *Antahkaraṇa* has its degrees. The *Antahkaraṇa* of an ordinary man can reveal matters, whether things or processes, only within certain narrow limits; but by *Sādhana*[1] these limits can be more and more widened and this process is called *Sattva-shuddhi*. Thus *Yogyatā* or competency in (*a*) and (*b*) is relative to the state of purification of *Antahkaraṇa*. The ordinary experiencer does not cognise directly (though he can roughly infer) the *Saṃskāras* or tendencies laid in the *Antahkaraṇa*, but it is claimed that a Yogin can, and when he does he remembers his past and future cycles of birth. Again a colour-sensation for example of a certain requisite degree of intensity, duration and remoteness only rises into consciousness. We are blind to sensations (they are sensations in so far as they are modifications of *Citta* or *Antahkaraṇa* and not of the cerebral tissues only) lying beyond our normal limits of sensational intensity. But in clairvoyance and Yoga these subliminal sensations may be known. Referring to the third condition, it is necessary that the *Antahkaraṇa* should go out to where the object is, envelop, and pervade it with its own innate transparency and thus establish the equation between itself[2] and the object.[3] When the *Antahkaraṇa* does not go out to the object and establish the equation there is inference, but no direct cognition. This process may be compared with what Western Psychology describes as a localisation of sensation.

[1] Process by which the result desired (Siddhi) is attained.

[2] Antahkaraṇa-vṛttyavacchinna-caitanya.

[3] Viṣayāvacchinna-caitanya.

"Occupying the same position in space"[1] is laid down as an essential condition.

There are rules also for the direct perception (*Pratyakṣa*) of the object itself as distinguished from the mental state in relation, dealt with as above. It may be premised that Vedānta, though maintaining the essential unity (everything is *Cit*) of perceiver, perception, and perceived (the object in itself or the thing in itself as Kant would say),[2] yet distinguishes them from each other on account of their separate *Upādhis* or veilings. They are thus the same and yet are not the same. They are the same in so far as they are ultimately Śiva or *Cit*, and they are the same in so far as they are also the one Power or Substance-Energy which is *Śakti*. But as manifestations thereof they vary. Vedānta is not agnosticism because the thing as it is (not of course fully) is directly intuited by us: we do not simply know the *appearance* of a thing: we get at the underlying Reality which is *Cit* and which is the same as in us. It is however agnosticism in relation to the nature and working of *Māyā*.

The conditions under which the object itself is intuited are (*a*) the equation between *Antahkaraṇa* itself and not merely its modification (*Vṛtti*) and the object must be shown: that is the latter must be known as possessing an existence[3] not essentially distinct from that of the subject.[4] For this it is necessary that there should be a *Vṛtti* in the subject or *Antahkaraṇa* resembling the object: for this going out to the object is necessary; (*b*) the object must be *Yogya* or fit for the subject's intuition as before.

In plain language: when I see a jar and know that I directly perceive it, I must first have the object exciting

[1] Ekatrāvasthānaṃ.

[2] A Bauddha or modern sensationist would regard a thing as nothing but "a cluster of sensations" localised and objectified. Vedānta does not subscribe to this. See "Reality".

[3] Sattā. [4] Pramātṛ.

through the physical[1] and vital[2] sheaths the *Antahkaraṇa* (which is the mental sheath),[3] which then goes out to it. The *Antahkaraṇa* temporarily removes, so to say, the gross (*Tāmasika*) crust or veil of the jar and thus brings out the essential unity between the consciousness "imprisoned" in that inert "other". It is thus the knowing (as perception and not in the Yoga sense) of the equation between self and other. In Consciousness (*Cidrūpiṇī-Śakti*) there is a veiling which is Consciousness-Power which again is *Māyā-Śakti* in association with *Cit-Śakti*. This veiling ranges from the slightest to the heaviest, according to the predominance of the Factors of Power. The former is Mind at its highest, that is consciousness lightly veiled: the latter is gross matter in which Consciousness is most veiled. Outgoing activity here slows down and becomes, so far as any further advance is concerned, a static crust. At each end and throughout there is the same Consciousness (*Cit-Śakti*) and Substance—Energy (*Māyā-Śakti*)—the one Mother of worship. But as we proceed from Buddhi to gross sensible matter through the various faculties and senses, *Sattva* or the Factor of Power as the Illuminator becomes less, and *Tamas* the Factor of Power as the Veiler becomes predominant. The wholly veiled object is presented to the less and less veiled senses, *Manas*, *Ahaṃkāra* and *Buddhi*, when the Self which is in the form of *Buddhi* recognises itself in fact, though it is not consciously affirmed in the form of object. Cognition is then a kind of *recognition*, the self knowing its self-form. Ecstatic knowing (*Samādhi*) or spiritual knowing in Yoga is the experience by the formless Self of Itself. In the former both Mind and Matter are active. The latter is apparently inert but is only relatively so and is like all living forms a Magazine of Power. Both Mind and Matter are constantly active to affect one another. In 1842 Moser maintained that two bodies of

[1] Annamaya-kośa. [2] Prāṇamaya-kośa.

[3] That is the two sheaths Manomaya and Vijñānamaya.

whatever nature constantly imprinted their image one upon the other even when placed in complete obscurity.[1] For every manifestation of Power is active, Activity being the essential character of *Śakti*, as Rest is of Consciousness of which it is the Power. In fact the whole world is a criss-cross play of mutual influences, a fact the Hindu has long known.

As far back as 1814 before the more general recognition of occult as well as positive sciences to-day, Madame de Stael[2] when speaking of the rapports between metals and planets and the influence of these rapports on human life said "Why not give the experimental method a wider philosophical concept, which would embody the universe in its ensemble and would not turn up its nose to the 'nocturnal' side of nature, while waiting for more light". By occult phenomena we understand not something supernatural, something not related in a regular and constant form to the ensemble of the forces and laws of the universe which is throughout one, but as obeying one law governing all phenomena. It is in rapport to ourselves and not in themselves that they differ from the ordinary and constant sensorial phenomenon.[3] With these latter we are here concerned. But the obvious or gross (*Sthūla*) and the occult or subtle (*Sūkṣma*) or Cryptoidal Phenomena are governed by the same law. It may be said that these views make of mind a material thing. That in a sense is what the Vedānta alleges it to be. The Śiva-Saṃhitā[4] in conformity with the Chāndogya-Śruti says that the finest part[5] of the food eaten goes to build or repair the *Liṅgadeha* or mental body.[6] Mind however is not material in the gross sense that "Matter" is, but in a finer and *quasi*-material sense.

[1] Thus illustrated prints leave their image on glass made visible by the projection of vapour such as the vapour of mercury, iodine, chlorine, etc.

[2] De L'Allemagne. [3] Emile Boirac "La Psychologie Inconnue".

[4] V. Patala, 75-77. [5] Sāratamah aṃśhah.

[6] Tatra sāratamo liṅgadehasya paripoṣakah.

All is, in this sense "material" which is not Spirit (*Ātmā*).[1] Spirit does not interact. Mind and Matter which are forms of its Power do so. It is because they are at base the one and same Consciousness-Power that Mind can know Matter.

The one formless Supreme Self (*Śiva-Śakti-Tattva*) in which subject and object coalesce in the Knowledge and Love of the formless Self of and for Itself appears, through its power, as the subject-form which has knowledge and ignorance, like and dislike for the object-form, both of such limited forms being aspects, subtile and gross, of the Supreme Self. That Self is known in world-experience in every act of cognition and feeling. The transcendental Self is realised in the ecstasy of Yoga (*Samādhi*) when the Self "stands away from" its limited vehicles of Mind and Body. This is the Experience-Whole of infinitely rich content. All other experience is of sections of that Whole. The experience of the Supreme I is "I am this universe". The limited I identifies himself with a particular mind and body in it. To the Yogī the whole world is his body and therefore there is nothing outside him as in the case of those who experience through mind and body. This knowledge is bondage. They who surpass and are freed of it are mindless. But man must first use his mind. It is said "thinking of that which is nameless the stage is reached which is called Śākta"[2]: that is the inner state of which Matter and Mind are the outward expression.

The Vedānta does not teach any intuitionalism which discards intellect. On the contrary the Upaniṣad says (Br.-Up., iv. 5), "the self must be seen, heard, thought upon and deeply pondered. *Ātmā vā are draṣṭavyah, śrotavyo, mantavyo, nididhyāsitavyah*". It is not by discarding any part of the

[1] There are no degrees of or in Spirit. Difference exists between things due to their psychic and physical envelope. Brahman is therefore mindless (Amanah). This does not spell, as some have thought, unconsciousness, but freedom of Consciousness from the limitation of Mind.

[2] Śiva-Sūtra-Vimarśinī, X.

limited self that the Full Self is known, but by the development of the limited self in every part *and as a whole* into the Whole.

§ 8

All theory should suggest a practice whereby that which the former declares of value may be achieved through the latter. As I have elsewhere said the Indian quest is practical. Philosophising is not done because of mere intellectual curiosity but as part of a disciplinary system (*Sādhana*) enjoined for realisation by the limited self of its own unlimited and essential nature. That nature has its intellectual aspect and is expressed as Reason. For what is irrational cannot be spiritually true.

From what has been stated it has been seen that Man's essential nature enjoys perfect experience. For it is the Whole which is unlimited Being (*Sat*), unconditioned Consciousness (*Cit*), and perfect and unbroken Bliss (*Akhaṇda-Ānanda*). Mind and Body are an expression of its Divine Power whereby Consciousness is finitised in the individual centres. It is the essential characteristic of Power as such (*Śakti*) to negate or veil infinite being and infinite experience so that it becomes finite being and finite experience.[1] But the negation or veiling exists in degree. It is much less in the case of Mind than in that of Matter, which to the limited experiencer is that which is other than and apart from the experiencing subject. Again in the case of Mind the degree of veiling of Consciousness varies. There is no Matter in which Mind is not present, though patent or latent in varying degrees. This follows from the scheme of the involutionary principles (*Tattva*) from *Buddhi* downwards,

[1] So it is said "Negation is the function of Power" in Yogamuni's Commentary on Abhinava Gupta's Paramārthasāra (Niṣedha-Vyāpāra-rūpā Śaktih)—a very profound saying.

and the doctrine that the effect is the cause modified. From *Buddhi* the first psychical principle *Ahaṃkāra* is derived; that is *Buddhi* remains what it is as cause and is transformed into *Ahaṃkāra* as effect.[1] *Ahaṃkāra* or *Asmita* is the individualising and therefore centre-making principle. From it is derived subtle matter and from the latter gross matter. Therefore all matter is individualised or is a Self, in which the psychical principles from which it is evolved lie veiled. An atom of Hydrogen is a Self and a Man is a Self, though the latter is, and the former is not, a developed Self with fully realised Self-Consciousness. In the effect there is the cause and therefore in gross visible matter (*Bhūta*) there is that from which it is produced, *viz.*, subtle matter and the I-making principle (*Ahaṃkāra*) from which the latter is derived. In *Ahaṃkāra* again there is *Buddhi.* Mind however is so hidden and undeveloped in inorganic matter that its only expression is an extremely rudimentary response to stimuli made apparent by scientific experiment, such as those, now well known, of the distinguished Indian Scientist Sir Jagadish Bose. Yet even here it may be that one kind of "non-living" Matter may be more responsive than another.

All Matter as everything else is composed of the three factors (*Guṇa*) of the Natural Principle (*Prakṛti*) which is the source of both Mind and Matter. All Matter has then *Sattvaguṇa* in it, that is a Principle which reflects or manifests Consciousness. Differences however exist between the various kinds of Matter "non-living" and "living" as regards the degree to which the *Sattva* or manifestation of Consciousness is veiled by *Tamas-Guṇa*, or that factor in Being which obscures Consciousness by suppressing the *Sattva* which manifests it. The first stage of evolution or liberation of Consciousness is

[1] This doctrine is explained by the simile of "light from light". A second torch takes light from the first which yet remains itself undiminished.

the organisation of Matter by the vital Principle (*Prāṇa*). As explained earlier in "Life", *Prāṇa* is a guiding, directing, and, to such extent, intelligent principle which organises Matter into living forms with increasing degree of freedom and greater and greater display of Consciousness. There is Consciousness in the lowest living forms, but there it is greatly veiled by the aspect of Power (*Śakti*) which is the specifically veiling principle (*Tamas-Guṇa*). During the course of evolution, Mind which has been always present, however latent, is more and more developed until we arrive at the higher animals, the earliest primitive Men and then Man as he exists to-day.

The process is the *development* of Mind and *release* of Consciousness under the influence of what has been called the Vital Impulse, itself unexplained. According to the Śākta doctrine however, this evolutionary impulse is one form of the eternally recurrent rhythm which is observed in (amongst other things) breathing, namely an outgoing and indrawing breath. So in the Macrocosm, Being of its nature (*Svabhāva*) goes forth (*Sṛṣṭi*) as Power involving itself in Mind and Matter, and then evolves itself out of Mind and Matter, and again involves itself in a process which is Eternal. This is the throb of the Heart of Power (*Śakti*) who is called the Heart of the Supreme Lord.[1] As this process involves all dualities and therefore suffering, those who are liberation-seekers (*Mumukṣu*) strive to free themselves by various methods, some negative and others positive. The mass of men ignorant and careless are satisfied to enjoy the world and to take risks of suffering so unevenly distributed. With the former we are here concerned.

Mindlessness (*Unmani-Śakti*) that is experience unconditioned by Mind, and therefore Being in all its infinite freedom and fulness is the aim and end. Mind, owing to the predominance of *Sattva-Guṇa*, reveals Consciousness more than

[1] Hṛdayaṃ parameśituh

Matter does: for the latter is dominated by the Veiling Factor of Nature (*Tamo-guṇa*). But Mind reveals Consciousness by degrees, some minds more than the rest. The purer the mind the more it reflects or manifests (whatever simile we apply) Consciousness. The object then of the self-realising discipline or Sādhana is to purify the Mind so that it may manifest Consciousness. Purity of Mind is therefore to be sought. "Pure" and "Purity" are not used in their sexual sense only. This is only one and an elementary form of purity. It is obvious that if a Mind is dominated by sensuous desires and images it cannot reflect or show Spirit. For this reason the Tantras in specifying the qualifications of the proposed disciple exclude the lewd (*Kāmuka*) and the glutton. It must be pure also in respect of other matters, and therefore free of greed, anger, envy and all else which is the mark of the impure Mind. Such a Mind is incapable of understanding spiritual things. But the Mind must not only be pure in the sense of freedom from what is bad, but must be positively kind and good and free from error. Purification of Mind is called *Citta-śuddhi*. The Mind must be an efficient and trained instrument of knowledge. The Mind should be keen for, and fed with such, knowledge which is its appropriate food, and should if necessary be sharpened by the study of logic and the practice of debate. It should be made capable in this and other ways of understanding the highest metaphysical ideas. And so the disciple is recommended to study the sacred texts, Logic, and Metaphysic. At the same time there should be devotion to and worship of God as the Mother-Power (one with Shiva as unchanging Consciousness) who is called Lalitā, Mahākālī, Mahā-tripurasundarī, Mahākuṇḍalinī and by other names which denote only aspects of the one Reality as Power.

Ritual is the art of religion. The rituals are designed to secure realisation of Unity with Her. *Śākta-Sādhana* which term includes what is called in English "ritual," is based on

sound psychological principles with which I will deal in another volume. The ritual is an expression in action of the philosophical principles above described. Thus the whole evolving cosmic process is imagined in the rite called *Bhūta-śuddhi*, in which each of the lower principles is merged in the higher, until in imagination the abode of *Śiva-Śakti* is reached.[1] So also the *Śrī-Yantra* or Diagram represents both the body of the Sādhaka as the Microcosm and the whole universe.[2] All ordinary acts and functions become worship by dedication to the Mother-Power, and self-identification with that Power in all physical functions and acts. The *Sādhaka* then realises himself as the Mother Power in the form of himself.

A type of the worshipper's self-dedication is given in the Mahānirvāna Tantra (VI. 178—181).[3]

"Om—Whatever ere this I have done through the Mind, Vital Airs and Body, whether when awake, or in dream, or dreamless sleep, whether by mind, word or deed, whether by my hands, feet, belly or organ of generation, whatsoever I have thought or said—of all that I make an offering to Brahman. I and all that is mine I lay at the lotus feet of the Ādya-Kāli, *Om Tat Sat.*"[4] After saying this, dedication is made of the Self.[5] The instructed worshipper knows that the self is dedicated to the Self, and that the Self, in the person of the worshipper, has thought, said and done all that is offered.[6]

[1] So Pṛthivī is dissolved in *Ap*, *Ap* in *Agni* and so on in the special centres or *cakras*: in *Sādhana* imaginatively, in Yoga actually.

[2] See my Tantrarāja Tantra; also my translation of the Kāmakalā-vilāsa which deals with the Śrī-Yantra.

[3] See "Great Liberation."

[4] Om. That (Brahman) Being or Reality (Sat).

[5] Ātma-samarpaṇam. This is vilomārghya or offering of the Self as Arghya at the feet of the Devī.

[6] Thus when the Śākta-Vīra takes the Consecrated Wine, he offers it to the Mother residing in himself in Serpent form in the Mūlādhāra Centre at the root of the Spinal Column. But how does She drink it? By and through him who is a representative (*Pratīka*) of Her.

The unity of the self and Self is well brought out in the Mantra which is said over the elements in the circle of worship: "The act of offering is Brahman. The offering itself is Brahman. Into the fire which is Brahman offering is made by him who is Brahman. By him alone who is absorbed in the offering to Brahman is unity with Brahman attained.[1]

Not only must the Mind be purified, but care must be taken as regards what is offered to it. The Mind, as such, is never without an object. Care is therefore taken in the ritual to supply it with a good and divine object. As already stated the Mind goes out and shapes itself into what it knows. Therefore a divine object is presented to the Mind, so that it may shape itself into that. The Mind is, in its essential Nature, Consciousness. Mind as Mind obscures it. Endeavour is made by *Sādhana*, or worship and discipline, to lessen this obscurity by purification of the Mind as an obscuring force. *Sādhana* is external and internal or mental (*Mānasa*). When Mind is purified so as to manifest in high degree Consciousness, then the *Sādhaka* enters *Yoga* by the practice of which the Mind so increasingly reflects Consciousness that it disappears as the stars of the midnight sky in the blazing light of the sun at midday.[2] If it be asked how this is possible, the answer from the worshipper's standpoint is that all is possible by the co-operation of the individual and supreme Self. By worship there comes what is called the "Descent of Power" (*Śakti-pāta*) or Grace (*Anugraha*) which strengthens the individual effort.[3] In monistic Yoga the Self works without another. In both cases the Self is working and because it is the

[1] Mahānirvāṇa, VIII, v. 215.

[2] One of the questions is—does it, as limited centre remain in fact, even if it disappears to view. According to some it does, the saying being "Like a bird in the forest".

[3] In the same way the Sādhana-śakti of the worshipper is strengthened by the Mantra-śakti or power of the Mantra which he practises in Mantra-sādhana.

Self which works, and because that in which it works or its vehicles is a form of the Self, it is capable of modifying and transforming them. For the result of all successful *Sādhana* and *Yoga* is transformation. From the *Sādhaka's* or worshipper's standpoint there is worshipper, worship and worshipped. From the Yoga standpoint the transaction is wholly between the self and the Self and none other. The result (*Siddhi*) which is the attainment of the Experience-Whole (*Pūrṇa*) is gained by the use of all men's faculties of knowing (*Jñāna*) feeling or devotion (*Bhakti*) and good disinterested action (*Karma*). In each case one or other of these operate in greater or less degree. All lead to the same end.[1] But men are of differing temperament and their faculties vary in power. Some men will be drawn to the path of action, others to that of devotion and those whose intellect is highly developed may follow the path of knowledge or religious philosophising (*Jñāna-Yoga*). But whether it be one or another, the One Consciousness is at work through the will of the individual to transcend the limitations of the Mind, at length passing from the highest state of mental experience (*Samanī-Śakti*)[2] to that of *Unmanī-Śakti*[3] which is Mindless or full unlimited Experience, unrestricted by the limiting forces of Mind. This is *Cit* or Pure Consciousness—the Kūtastha-Śiva which is full, pure and Perfect Experience.

[1] And so it is said that there is no difference between Supreme Devotion (Parābhakti) and Jñāna.

[2] These terms mean "with Mind" and "without Mind" and are two aspects of Consciousness-Power. See "Serpent Power" and "Garland of Letters".

[3] *Ibid.*

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

PREFACE

THIS part treats of an important subject, for many persons find a difficulty in understanding the Vedāntic doctrine as regards Matter. Others affirm that there is no such thing as Matter. It can be easily understood if we remember that Matter like Mind is potentially in, and is actually a form of, the ultimate Reality which is the *Pūrna* or the Complete, the Full, the Whole, the infinite reservoir of Energy which appears as the Universe. It is there, as it is here. How? Not of course as the gross Matter which is the object of the finite experiencer. Such matter has no existence apart from the finite centre which experiences it. Then again it is asked "how and in what way?" Scientific or conceptual matter as now understood in the West is reduced to electrons and protons or units of electric charge which again are, according to some, strain forms in, and of, an ultimate substance or Ether, and which in any event are forms of Universal Energy. But what we objectively perceive as Energy is subjectively Will. Each limited centre is a manifestation of Energy and a source of it within the universal scheme of which it is a part. But that whole scheme is a manifestation of the Supreme Will, Power or *Śakti* appearing as the Universal Energy in all its various forms. Ultimately then Matter is Supreme Power or *Mahāśakti*. In dissolution Matter, whether gross or subtle, resolves itself into potentiality or tendency (*Saṃskāra*). It then is in the Power of the Supreme Reality as a tendency towards manifestation. Tendency of what? Of *Cit-Śakti* as the Supreme Experience. The tendency is Power

which is then one with *Cit*. What we call Matter is then the Self as its own object. The Self is subject and the Self is object. The object or matter is not, as in the case of the limited centre, something other than, outside of, and separate from, the subject. When the Self knows its object as other than itself there is creation or *Sṛṣṭi*. But "creation" is not for the first time. It is eternal and recurrent. Matter then is eternal, though it has two forms as seed and fruit. The seed is tendency in the supreme and infinite Reality to appear as Matter to the finite centre. It is potential energy or unmanifested Power. The fruit is that tendency realised as Matter and the Mind which experiences it. It always *is* as the power to become of Being, and recurrently *exists* as that Power manifested as psychic, vital and physical Energy in the form of Mind, Life and Matter. We do not thus let go of Matter (in one sense or another) at any time. The Finite Centre senses it now as something other than the Self. The Infinite Whole in which these centres exist experiences it as Itself. For the Power to appear as mind and matter is one with the Power-holder (*Śaktimān*).

In the same way Mind ever is as seed or fruit. As fruit it is limited *Cit* or Consciousness which has, as its objects, Matter and all forms constituted of it. As seed it is the Power (*Śakti*) which is then one with unlimited Consciousness (*Cit*). The complete I (*Pūrnāham*) is Experience as the Whole in which there is no separate subject and object but the Self knows and feels, that is loves, the Self, in which Self as Power is the potency of limited experience as the finite selves and their separate objects. The experience of the limited "I" (*Aham*) is an experience of a self as separate from its object or Matter which it knows and feels through Mind—a limiting force constituting the individual Consciousness.

Science by "dematerialising" "matter" has made a long step towards the acceptance of Vedānta: for gross matter

is reduced by some to Energy of and in some substance which is not gross Matter. Nevertheless it remains a quasimaterial object. Vedānta says that both it and Mind are forms of the one Power or *Śakti* which existing in those two forms is, in itself, one with the Power-Holder who is the Supreme Consciousness or *Cit*. Consciousness then as Consciousness-Power or Energy is at the back of everything. Since this book was written the English Edition of Professor Lewis Rongier's "La Materialisation de l'Energie" has come to my hands. This is a lucid resumé of recent physical investigations in which the view is taken that Energy is a substance which materialises as the sensible Universe which does not on that account lose the reality of the substantial characteristics which external perception and common sense have attributed to it.

There are some who disparage and condemn Matter and regard it as something evil and sometimes as unreal. From the following pages it will appear clear that this is not the Śākta View. For, in the first place, what is it according to such views? It is the Gross (*Sthūla*) form of the Mother-Power which evolves the Universe. It is the form in which the Ultimate Reality is *touched* and handled. In the second place, is it real? The answer developed in "Reality" (see *ante*) is that it is real, for it is a form of *Daivī Śakti* or Supreme Power which is real, being one with the Ultimate Reality itself (*Kūtastha-Śiva*) who is the possessor of such power. But neither it, nor any other form (and Form implies finiteness) has the reality of the Ultimate Real—*Ens Realissimum*—for the latter endures changelessly in past, present and future, whereas Matter as such is in each universe developed from Power, and at the end of the Universe is absorbed in the Power from which it issued. Matter is real in the sense—that it is a reality independent of human appreciation, that is, it is not merely a creation of the human mind. Dematerialisation means the reduction of gross, so-called ponderable Matter into

points of stress. What has been called ponderable Matter on the other hand has been described to be a form of Energy enormously accumulated in a narrowly circumscribed region of space. Nor again does Matter become unreal because recent Science has dematerialised it. It is not "illusion". "Illusion" is a misleading rendering of the word '*Māyā*' by those who did not know sufficiently Sanskrit or English or were possibly—misled by other phrases, *e.g.*, '*Mṛgatṛṣṇā*' ('Mirage')—a term to be found in *Advaitavāda* relative to the reality of the Supreme Brahman as compared with the passing Universe. *Māyā* comes from the root *mā* = to measure. *Māyā* is not "illusion" but power by which things are measured. *Mīyate anena iti Māyā*, *i.e.*, the principle of form or *finitisation*. But finitisation is not illusion. What is experienced by all normal experiencers cannot be an illusion in the English sense of that term.[1] Then is it Evil? Essentially it cannot be so, for it is a manifestation of *Daivī-Śakti* which is Supreme Consciousness as Power. Nor even considered abstractedly as Matter, *i.e.*, apart from its combinations—is it so?

As regards such combinations, it must be noted that according to Hindu views the gross material universe is a duality (*Dvandva*) of good and evil, of happiness and sorrow and of all other opposites which are themselves each relative. They are never absolutely separated from one another. Thus nothing is entirely good nor bad. Some physical things and events and some living entities are injurious and others favourable to man, and to some men and not to others or may be not favourable to any man but to some other living creatures, and so on. We do not complain of the matter of our body when in health. But we may do so in disease. The same ship which makes shipwreck in a storm to the misery

[1] Illusion is prātibhāśika sattā. Let it be here noted that the Vedānta does not speak of even this illusion as a form of unreality but as a form of Sattā or being for it is real while it lasts.

and death of its passengers has probably swiftly, safely and comfortably carried many others. Much evil is the cost price which we have to pay for what is good. Matter *per se* is neither good nor evil, but particular forms of it, or uses to which it is put, may be either good or evil relatively to some subject. In such case, it is the Mind which gives the direction which spells goodness or evil. The Universe of Mind and Matter is neither good nor bad. A Hindu is neither a pessimist nor an optimist in the ordinary sense of these terms. He sees that the world is a world of opposites, that duality involves such opposites and those who desire freedom from such duality, its risks and pains, seek liberation. This liberation is not, according to the method of the School, an "escape" from Matter, but a knowledge of what Matter really is and a Yogic transformation of the Self whose gross Vesture it is. By *Sādhana* and *Yoga*, Matter is recognised for what it really is, and thereafter there is, in consciousness, sublimation of Matter into its Essence.

I will in conclusion repeat what I have said elsewhere (Śakti and Śākta).

"And yet as extremes meet, so having passed through our present condition we may regain the truths perceived by the simple, not only through formal worship but by that adoration which consists of the pursuit of all knowledge and science after the husk of all material thinking has been cast aside. By this adoration, intellectual approach is made to the Brahman. For him who sees the Mother-Power in all things, all scientific research is wonder and worship. The seeker looks then not upon mere mechanical movements of so-called "dead" matter but at the wondrous play of Her Whose form all Matter is. As She thus reveals Herself, She induces in him a passionate exaltation and the sense of security which is only gained as approach is made to the Central Heart of things. For as the Upaniṣad says "He only fears who sees duality". Some day, maybe,

one who unites in himself the scientific ardour of the West and the all-embracing religious feeling of India will create another and a modern "*Chaṇḍī*" with its multiple salutations to the sovereign World-Mother. (*Namastasyai namo namah.*) Such an one seeing the changing marvels of Her World-play will exclaim with the Yoginī-hṛdaya-Tantra "I salute Her the *Samvid Kalā* [1] who shines in the form of Space and Time, words and their meanings, and in the form of all things which are in the Universe".

Deśakālapadārthārthātmā yad yad vastu yathā yathā,
Tattadrūpeṇa yā bhāti tāṃ śraye samvidaṃ kalām.

This is however not mere "Nature-worship" as it is generally understood in the West, (see observations at p. 7 of Dr. Helmuth Von Glasenapp's recent book "Der Hinduismus,") nor the worship of "Force" as the Bengali "reformer" of Hinduism, Keshub Chunder Sen wrongly took the Śākta doctrine to be. All things exist in the Supreme Consciousness which, in Itself, infinitely transcends all finite forms. It is the worship of God as the Mother-Power which manifests in the form of all things, which are, in the language of the Śākta Scripture, but an atom of dust on the Feet of Her who is Infinite Being (*Sat*), Experience (*Cit*), Bliss (*Ānanda*): [2] and Power (*Śakti*).

This part was commenced by me with the help of my friend Professor Pramathanātha Mukhyopādhyāya, but during its progress and at its conclusion, I found myself to be so greatly indebted to him that it has become a joint work and is issued as such. I mention this to explain why some portions of the work are written in the singular as also to exempt him from responsibility for views (if there be any) which may

[1] That is the Supreme and Perfect Consciousness.

[2] This Bliss is the Supreme Love of the Self for the Self. *Niratiśaya-premāspadatvaṃ ānandatvaṃ.* She is worshipped in Madhura-Bhāva.

not be his, and explanations of the subject which he might have bettered. In connection with the subject matter of this part I may refer to his essay on the Radio-activity of Matter, as also to Prof. Lewis Rongier's work "La Materialisation de l'Energie" the English edition of which ("Philosophy and the New Physics") only came to my hands after this work had been written. Prof. Rongier's general conclusion is—"abandoning the ether" (which is endowed with contradictory properties and which is declared defunct, without estate, a matter which has been here dealt with to some extent) "we are" (he says), "led to an entirely different theory, that of the materialization of Energy, emerging from the phantom realm of imponderables, to take substance, appearing as endowed with inertia, weight and structure and manifesting itself in two forms, one of which is called by virtue of long prescription, Matter and the other, Radiation." Here Energy (*Śakti*) is the principal concept.

The next part of this volume deals with the concepts of Causality and Continuity. It is followed by a separate volume "Mahāmāya" dealing with the highly important subject of Consciousness (*Cit*), and its Power (*Śakti*). Unless this term (*Cit*) is understood nothing in Vedānta or in its particular form—the Śākta-Āgama—will be understood.

J. W.

Bormes, Var
15th Feb., 1923

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS MATTER

(*Bhūta-śakti*)

§ 1

To begin with, we must distinguish between *Perceptual Matter* and *Conceptual* or *Scientific Matter*. Perceptual Matter is what possesses the sensible qualities of motion, impenetrability (that is limiting resistance or the limit where absolute resistance begins), weight, extension in space, colour, taste, smell and so forth. This is, for the psychologist, a certain group of sense-impressions objectified and localised in space. It implies a substratum of those sensible qualities (*i.e.*, a thing which supports sensible qualities and presents them to our senses), or an exciting cause of that group of sense-affections. Whether this implication of a substratum or thing as distinguished from (or as underlying) the sensible qualities or of an exciting cause as distinguished from a group of sense-effects, be legitimate or not, we do commonly review in thought Perceptual Matter in the manner described above. That is, when we *think* of Matter which we have *perceived*, we think of it as a thing which underlies certain qualities corresponding to certain sense-impressions and as an exciting cause of these latter. This is commonly how the perception of Matter appears when it is passed in review. In itself, the actual perception of Matter or Matter as *presented* is alogical (*anirvacanīya*), admitting of no such logical categories or thought constructions as Subject and Object, Cause and Effect, Thing and Attribute

and so on. But upon the *presentation* of Matter, thought construction [1] begins, the categories of the understanding (as Kant would call them) are set in operation, and out of this operation (mostly instinctive) the *presented* Matter emerges as *re-presented* Matter, *i.e.*, what we think, believe and describe as perceptual Matter. Thus we know presented Matter as a *substance* existing in *space*, *objectively* to us, moving in *time*, possessing certain *attributes* and *causing* certain impressions in us. All the ideas involved are logical forms or moulds into which the presented matter is cast by us, and the Matter thus informed or moulded is taken by us as the Matter of Perception. It is clear, however, that *this* Perceptual Matter involves conceptual elements. Whether these conceptual elements or thought-forms are or are not subjective forms only—*i.e.*, whether or not there are realities beyond our thought corresponding to these forms (Time, Space, Substance, Cause, etc.) is a question which is not here discussed. Thus, so far, we get two stages in the experience of Matter:

(1) The original, intuitive, alogical experience of Matter apart from the incidence of the thought-forms: this is Matter as we actually feel or apprehend it.

(2) Then we have that original datum of experience as treated by the Subject with his thought-forms: this treatment giving us what we believe, think and describe as the Matter of our perception.

This latter is believed by the Indian systems to possess, both the so-called "primary" and the "secondary" qualities.[2] The metaphysical reality of these is not here discussed, nor do we discuss whether the second or logical was already implicit in the first or alogical so that the second is only the "lighting up" of the first.

[1] Antah-Karaṇa-Vyāpāra.

[2] See discussion in "Reality".

After the second stage, the psychologist would put in "images" or mental rehearsals of the things perceived, *e.g.*, the mental reproduction of the smell, taste, colour, size, weight, etc., of an orange which has been actually handled and eaten. It is clear that in such images the primary as well as the secondary qualities of the originals perceived are copied, though with loss of vividness and the like. As these images are not relevant to our present purpose they are passed over.

But let us suppose that the so-called primary qualities (or some of them) alone are retained in ideation, and colour, taste, smell and sound are abstracted in thought. This would give us a sort of Conceptual Matter of which we have no perceptual equivalent. We now have, for example, a Matter which occupies space, moves in space and time, possesses mass and weight, resists movement, and so on. But *in itself* it may be without colour, taste, smell, heat and cold, sound and so forth. These last result from its stresses upon our sense-organs. The effects wrought in us may be for aught we know wrongly (we are here simply stating the scientific position) fastened by us upon the exciting external cause.

Now, this Conceptual Matter is Scientific Matter. Whether such Matter exists or not, we have commonly no perception of it. The Ether, Atoms, Centres of Force, Lines of Force and the rest with which Physics attempts to write a description of the mechanism of the world sensed by us are not objects of perception. And yet they are said to underlie and cause all our sense-experiences, and thus are at the root of all our sense-phenomena.

Physicists, again, are not impartial to all the so-called primary qualities. Some, like Descartes, would regard extension as being the essence of Matter. As Professor Tait, (in his book "The Properties of Matter") did, so one might give as a working definition of Matter: "Matter is whatever

can occupy space." Others, following in the footsteps of Leibnitz, might put the essence of things in Dynamism, *i.e.*, power to exert, and resist the action of, force. This Dynamic view is steadily gaining ground in modern scientific thought—Śākta doctrine is also a pure and universal theory of Dynamism. Śakti is Power; all is Śakti. Matter is now that which *moves*, as indeed were *all* things to Heraclitus, the ancient Greek Philosopher ("All things flow") and to the Hindus to whom the world was *Jagat* or "the moving thing" or again as they are to one of the philosophers of our day, Prof. Henri Bergson.

A comparison of the notions held concerning Matter by Modern Western Science and the six orthodox Philosophies of India [1] must take account both of fundamental differences as well as similarities. The former are apt to be overlooked by those who estimate Indian Philosophy (whether such estimates be high or low) by its conformity or non-conformity with Western Science. At the outset therefore some of the main points which should be borne in mind are noted.

Ancient India had its Chemistry and Alchemy [2] and most important among these were the so-called Tantrik and Mercurial [3] Schools. But all this is part of Science [4] as it was then known. The six philosophies dealt with the subject matter from a philosophical and religious standpoint.[5] From the latter standpoint it is of the first importance to remember that the Indian notion of Matter is based upon a *psychological* analysis of the actual experience of Matter, the element thus

[1] See "Reality".

[2] See Sir P. C. Ray's Indian Chemistry. Both Indian Chemistry and Medicine are indebted to the Tantras. It was these latter which added the metallic medicines to the vegetable drugs of the Āyurveda.

[3] Mercury is the semen of Śiva as Mica is the bija or seed of Śakti. 'Ārtava' or menstrual flow is Red Sulphur. According to Hindu notions not women only menstruate, but the whole earth menstruates in its season.

[4] Vijñāna.

[5] Jñāna.

obtained being substantialised, and not upon a *physico-chemical* analysis such as that of Western Science. Start is made with the actual perceptions of gross sensible Matter. The mind divides and subdivides until it arrives at the minimum psychosis which, objectively considered, may be called, to use an expressive term of a recent English work, " Psychon " which in Indian terminology is a Paramāṇu or Tanmātra, the supreme power producing both the sensible and the senses and the sensations which the former stimulates in the latter.

As regards Matter, the first standard agrees with Western Science in so far as the latter makes it or treats it as an extra-mental reality. There are however, important points of disagreement between the two also. In the first place, Western Science draws a distinction between primary qualities and secondary qualities and regards the former set alone as really inherent in Matter and elements of Matter, whilst according to it, the secondary qualities are only effects produced upon a percipient subject by the primary set. No one of the three standards recognises any such partition. In these standards things are as things what they appear to be. The qualities, primary or secondary, are in the things themseves. This question has been discussed earlier in " Reality ". The Hindu orthodox systems are, therefore, in an *epistemological* sense realist, under whatever class they may be said to come metaphysically.[1]

The second standard (Sāṃkhya-yoga) is metaphysically realist in so far as it affirms the reality of Mind and Matter in both gross and subtle form.[2] In the Monistic Vedānta both

[1] A reviewer of the latter book has thought that " its object was to defend all the Hindu systems against the charge of philosophical idealism ". This of course is not so. I dealt with the theory of knowledge. I was there contrasting Hindu doctrine with Buddhist subjectivism and referring to the reality of Matter to the individual experiencer.

[2] Both are forms or vikṛtis of the one Prakṛti.

Mind and Matter are as such real but are forms of That which is neither.'[1]

What then is Matter? It is of importance to note that former Western notions concerning Matter have been completely reversed in recent years. As we proceed backward in the later history of Western Science, we find less and less co-ordination between the Sciences and between the facts of any particular Science. The Universe presented the appearance of a heap of miscellaneous unconnected facts. Latterly, there has been an increasing tendency to the establishment of continuity and unity: and this is but natural, for the Scientific Mind working towards unity is, whether conscious of it or not, a step in the progress towards the realisation—"I am Brahman" (*Aham Brahmāsmi*). This unity of all things and the immanence of the Spirit in all things has ever been affirmed by India and represents one of the most valuable parts of its colossal philosophic and spiritual achievements. The general tendency is now towards some form of radical monism as a result of greater and greater co-ordination and unification of sciences and of science with Philosophy and of Philosophy with Religion. Summarising the main result of this scientific revolution, we may say that it consists firstly, in the teaching of the destructibility and *dematerialisation* of sensible matter existing in an *ethereal* medium; secondly, the *unification* of Matter and Energy in the sense that these are no longer considered different things but aspects of one and the same thing; and thirdly, in the acceptance of the doctrine which places the essence of matter in its *dynamism*. Matter in this latest view is not something inert merely occupying space but essentially dynamic with mobility as its fundamental trait.

Each of these affirmations which are considered later in detail were made by ancient Indian doctrine. To it gross

[1] This ultimate Reality is mindless (amanah). We have therefore here no concern with systems which regard Matter as Mind.

sensible Matter (*Bhūta*) issues in and from, and is again dissolved in, the Ether in the sense of *Ākāśa* and is in its ultimate sense not material at all. It is, to use the words of the Poet, "such stuff as dreams are made of". Matter (*Bhūta*) and Energy (*Karma*) are two aspects of the Ground Power (*Mahāśakti*). Matter is only a variety of Substance-Energy; what are called imponderable things or mere forms of energy being a subtle rapid mode of function whilst ponderable matter is a gross and slow mode of function of Universal Substance-Energy. The essence of things is dynamism which, in its causal sense, is the Supreme Power or Will (*Parā Icchā Śakti*) and, in the sense of effect, psychical (*Mānasa-Śakti*), vital (*Prāṇa Śakti*) and physical (*Bhūta-Śakti*) manifestations of such Will. What we know and are conscious of in ourselves as Will-Power is objectively observed as energy. We may measure energy as it is manifested within the universal system: but the sum total of energy is not as in the doctrine of "Conservation of Energy" a limited constant. There are no absolute bounds to the magnitude of energy which is the manifestation of the Infinite Power of Becoming (Śakti) of Being itself (Śiva). This dematerialisation and dynamic view of matter and unification of matter and energy as aspects of one substance together with the recent revival, though with added proofs, of the old doctrine of Relativity makes the notion of *Māyā* at least intelligible even to those who have hitherto derided it. But *Māyā* covers both Mind and Matter. Some have regarded extension as being the essence of the latter. Mind its antithesis was said to be unextended. The allegation that Matter is extended and that mind is not, is only a metaphysical theory. When dealing with any metaphysical or scientific theory, it will be useful to remember that the Vedānta does not admit of any absolute partitions whatever. The realisation of its standpoint in this respect is one of the chief keys to an

understanding of that system. The doctrine of the macrocosm (*Bṛhat-Brahmānda*) and microcosm (*Kṣudra-Brahmānda*)—expresses the same principle, so well-defined in the Viśvasāra Tantra in the words "what is here is elsewhere, what is not here is nowhere". (*Yad ihāsti tad anyatra, yannehāsti na tat kvacit.*) In each centre everything is in some manner, be it explict or implicit. Thus, it is said in the Mantra-Śāstra that all the letters of the Alphabet are in each of them. Thus, mind and matter are both Fact sections (as they have been aptly called) of Experience as a whole (*Pūrṇa*).[1] Matter is said to be that which occupies space which space, considered as substance, is the Ether in which the material world is. Mind, considered as a centre of stress and strain, postulates also a continuum in which it also energises, *i.e.*, the Ultimate Plenum (Pūrṇa or Pleroma) which is Infinite Consciousness and unlimited Experience. Mind and matter are two aspects as subject and object of one and the same Whole (*Pūrṇa*) which is neither and yet includes both. Matter and Mind are one in this that neither is, *as such*, Spirit since both are principles of unconsciousness. Mind can be said to be immaterial only in the sense that it has not the materiality of ponderable matter which is a gross and slow mode of energy-function. It is not, however, immaterial in the sense that Spirit as such is: that is absolutely so. Just as the recent experiments on Matter speak of emanations less and less material, semi-material, quasi-material and so forth between gross ponderable Matter on the one hand and the Ether which is not "Matter" on the other,[2] so we may say that since neither Mind nor Matter are as such Spirit, both are in essence "material," ponderable matter being wholly so and Mind being quasi-material in the sense of its being like

[1] By Prof. P. N. Mukyopadhāya in his "Approaches to Truth".

[2] That there is substance intermediate between Matter and Ether is said to be shown by the variability of the mass ascertained.

Matter an unconscious principle or Force veiling Spirit or Consciousness (*Cit*) but not grossly material as ponderable Matter is. Ether in the Indian sense of *Ākāśa* is derived from what may by called a " Psychon " [1] or an element of Psychosis as sense-experience regarded as objective. This Psychon again is a projection of certain fundamental psychic cosmic principles [2] which are themselves rooted in the fundamental Power of Becoming which is the Cosmic Will (Mahā-śakti).

§ 2

It will be useful here to shortly survey the immediate past and present notions of Matter held by Western Science, even though some conclusions are yet of an hypothetical character only. I refer to currently accepted and orthodox scientific teaching. For there have always been, as elsewhere, Alchemical and Mystical schools and lately systems of scientific monism which affirm unity in the form of a Fundamental Substance and its development into various modes of itself. As the great Giordano Bruno, who was burnt because of his doctrine, said in his treatise " Della Causa Principio Ed Uno " —" what in the principle is unseparated, single and one appears in externality in things, sundered, complex and multiplex ".

Firstly, let us consider the *de-materialisation* of Matter. Formerly the material universe was regarded as made up of compounded bodies, themselves constituted by the aggregation of simple bodies. These last were the so-called irreducible, chemical elements some eighty in number. The ultimate factors of compound bodies were the molecules or the smallest particles subsisting of those bodies which exhibited the properties of those bodies. The molecule again is a group of

[1] Or Tanmātra: to borrow a term of an English author whose name I forget.

[2] Asmitā, Ahaṃkāra and Buddhi, see *post* and 'Reality'.

atoms. The atom was, according to Newton, a hard, geometrical, impenetrable,[1] solid body incapable of deformation. Though infinitesimally small and indivisible, it was yet regarded as spatial and as having some magnitude. Like gross sensible matter of which it was the ultimate factor, it was held to be extended and to have mass or amount, weight[2] and was characterised by Inertia. There were as many different kinds of atoms as there were different elementary substances. Each of these substances was regarded as a separate chemical species which, like species in living beings, were invariable. An absolute break was thought to exist in each case between the different species of so-called inorganic matter, between non-living and living matter, and between Matter, whether organic or inorganic, and Mind. Carrying disunity and discontinuity further Theology postulated the greatest break of all between the universe of Mind and Matter and its ground as God.

The Hindus have, for at least some two thousand years, postulated a continuum in which discrete material things exist, *viz.*, a subtile substance and plenum called *Ākāśa*. This as Ether was put forward in the 17th century by the Scientist Huygens in order to explain the Phenomena of light. Some now accept it and some do not. Those who do so have regarded it commonly as a third thing distinct from Matter and the supposed Forces which animate the latter, though Energy exists both in Ether and in Matter which lies immersed in Ether and cannot be isolated from it. There were thus three separate indestructible and constant things, *viz.*, Matter itself, Ether itself and Energy in Matter and Ether. The duality of Matter and Energy, the indestructibility of the

[1] This was believed to be true not because it was demonstrated but because it seemed reasonable, as it was on the assumption of hardness. Clerk Maxwell called it nevertheless " a vulgar opinion ".

[2] The elements in the order of their atomic weights arranged from the lightest or Hydrogen to the heaviest Uranium.

former and the conservation of the latter were generally accepted doctrines.

It was then however observed that, as in living beings, there were both genus and species. Certain forms possessed a family likeness and therefore possessed similar properties. They can be divided into their respective families by their atomic weights. And so by what is called the Periodic Law of Mendeleef and Meyer the properties of an atom may be known from its weight. This law was established before the dissection of the Atom. Since then it has been suggested that the atomic weight of an element is proportional to the number and form of arrangement of the electrons or units of electric charge, of which the atom has since been conceived to consist. The arrangements according to the Periodic Law almost suggested, it has been said, a genealogical tree. Predictions of the properties of new elements which would fill up the missing links in the scale were subsequently verified by actual discovery. Earlier Chemistry noted the existence of bodies of seemingly identical nature, though differing in properties, called Allotropic. These allotropic states may be classed as different species of the same genus. The same metal presented itself in forms which could not be confused. On the other hand nearly a quarter of the simple bodies known are so similar, that without special investigation they could not have been isolated. Further investigation with instruments of greater precision showed (it was said) that between chemical as between living species there were transitional forms. There is a genus with several species, and there are some species so alike that chemical action could scarce distinguish them. Colloidal metals may even resemble in some ways organic substance. All this pointed to the same variability of chemical species as biologists affirmed as regards living beings. When it was discovered that the atom was not invariable or indestructible, it was affirmed that simple bodies

may be transformed even more easily on account of their greater simplicity than animal species. If Matter, as it is now held to be, is no longer indestructible and fixed, then the invariability of chemical species no more exists than of living species. We thus return to the transmutation of substances of the old and derided alchemists.

Spectrum analysis showed that the materials of the universe were throughout the same whether on earth or in the remotest stars. It was also by the same means observed, that the hottest stars are constituted of very much fewer chemical elements than the colder ones—a fact which suggested that the elements in the latter were evolutionary transformations of the former. These observations alone, however suggestive, were insufficient to prove the actual transformation of chemical elements into others with different characteristics which they possessed at certain relatively fixed states for so lengthy a period as to almost disprove evolution as the continuity of change in the elements. Then Sir William Crookes discovered the Cathode Rays. He called it a fourth state of matter and named it Radiant Matter, now considered by some to be electricity. To the three conditions of matter solid, liquid, and gaseous in which there is decreasing cohesion in the molecules was added a fourth state which was said to be as far removed from a gas as gas is from a liquid. Later on, the particles were called Corpuscles or Electrons or units of Electric charge. The latter made up the atom which was then regarded as a cluster of electrons varying in number and arrangement but identical amongst themselves, building up by such number and arrangement the different kinds of matter —the " elements " known to the chemist. Professor Crookes was then led to put forth the ancient idea (to which man has returned again and again) of a Primitive Stuff called Protyle from which all the elements were derived. The Phenomenon of the dissociation of matter was then more fully investigated.

Certain stages in the process of the dematerialization were noted. Radio-activity was established as regards all forms of matter, though most manifest in some radio-active substances such as the heavy Radium, Thorium, and Uranium. The first emission was a non-electrified product called by Professor Rutherford the "emanation," which to him was material gas and has also been said to be (le Bon)[1] semi-material. From it are produced the Alpha, Beta and Gamma rays. The Alpha rays are positive Ions of which the electron or atom or unit of negative electricity is the Nucleus. The Beta Rays are radiations of electrons formed of negative electric atoms which are identical with those of the Cathode Rays; and the Gamma rays are said to be analogous to the Rontgen or X-rays the nature of which are not known but which are neither Cathode, nor ether waves in the nature of light but which are (it has been suggested) pulses of electric and magnetic force manifested in the breaking up of the electron itself. These Rays are said to be less and less materialistic, the first being invisible atoms of matter or an intermediary having properties in common with a material body: the second being pure electricity freed of matter and the third as above described. As regards the unit of positive electricity there is more ignorance, but the opinion has been expressed that it also is freed of "matter". That there is substance intermediate between matter and ether is said to be shown by the variability of mass ascertained. One property of matter remains invariable namely the mass measured by the weight. But variability of mass or "mass-acceleration" is ascertained as regards particles emitted by radio-active bodies. The mass varies with the speed showing (it is said) that substances exhibiting such a property are no longer "matter," the mass of which is fixed and invariable.

[1] L'Évolution de la Matiére. See also the same author's "L'Évolution des Forces".

The Atom of matter has been described to be no longer an indestructible mass, but is a sort of solar system formed by a central group of nucleus charged with positive electricity around which negative electrons gravitate in closed orbits. The electrons are the same from whatever source they are obtained. Thus, it has been said, we find that the infinitely small which had been thought to be final has itself grown into a world. And naturally so, for each form of existence is a microcosm (*Kṣudra-brahmāṇda*) as the Śāstra teaches and the Brahman is both greater than the great and more minute than the little. (*Mahato Mahīyān Aṇoraṇīyān.*)

To sum up, Matter has been defined as that which possesses inertia, weight and mass. As so defined, matter is what is ponderable, but inertia in the ordinary sense is now denied. No matter is at rest since all is in continual movement (*Spanda*). On the contrary the atom is now said to be a reservoir of stupendous energy. Everything must be that if it be a form of infinite Power. The notion of inertia we get from superficial observation of molar masses. There is no rest anywhere beyond (in some conditions and for a time) an apparent absence of relative change of conditions between one particular molar mass and another. Even here each molar mass itself is disintegrating and its atoms are in continuous movement and dissociation. There is continuous molecular birth and death.[1] Whether again Matter has weight depends on certain conditions. It would cease to have weight if taken to the centre of the earth or placed at a suitable distance between the sun and moon. The attraction of the earth depends upon where it is. Would it, if so placed, cease to be matter? A measure was therefore sought independent of position namely division of the weight of the body at a given place

[1] Both Brahmā and Rudra are continuously at work. It is error to suppose that Brahmā created some years ago and is now doing nothing. See chapter on " Om " in my " Garland of Letters ".

by the value of gravity at that place, the quotient being called the "Mass". Moreover matter is said to dissociate into the imponderable Ether which cannot be weighed. In other words matter is ultimately something not weighable. It can be weighed only so long as it remains in that state in which it can be weighed. Mass again is the measure of inertia, that is to say of the property which enables matter to resist motion or changes of motion. In the case of ponderable matter this mass is not permanent. Variability of mass that is of inertia has been noted in the particles emitted by Radio-active bodies during disaggregation. The mass varies with their speed and this variation is relied on to show that substances which exhibit such a property are no longer "matter". The particles produced during the dissociation of matter possess a property resembling inertia, and in this are akin to matter, but this inertia instead of being constant in magnitude varies with the speed, and on this point the particular particles, though issuing from matter, are differentiated from its atoms. It has also been supposed that the corpuscle or electron which is said to be the ultimate element of matter is quite free from it. Moreover Ether into which matter is said (in disaggregation) to ultimately lapse, is, according to some theories, without mass, therefore Matter in its ultimate basis is without it. In other words the first law of motion which may also be expressed by saying that all matter has inertia or inability to move, or to change velocity or direction if it already has motion, only appears to be experimentally true of bodies whose magnitude and state we can ordinarily see. The notion is due to superficial observation of change of position of gross bodies. But further knowledge of the constitution of Matter itself has shown that the ordinary notion of the inertness of matter is not true. For Energy, called sub-atomic, is now found to be locked up in the atoms and if they have energy they must have motion of some sort, and are shown to be

in motion even when the molar mass of which they are the atoms appears to be in rest. In the same way it has been said that potential energy must in some way depend on motion. A French author (L. Houllevigue) after describing this process of dematerialisation asks " Are these things certain? One must beware of believing it. Tomorrow perhaps the wind of a new theory may sweep away all these hypotheses. We are upon scientific ground of too recent a date, for it to be possible to build solid structures." Since this was written, subsequent investigation has confirmed in considerable part what had previously been affirmed. It is however a fact that some parts of the theories set forth are regarded from a scientific standpoint as doubtful or as semi-certitudes or mere hypotheses. In some matters the " wind of theory " to which the author refers has veered towards older and rejected doctrines such as regards light the corpuscular doctrine of Newton, and as regards electricity that, whatever it be, " it is a thing and not a mere form of energy ". In other points the movement is towards a new outlook. Thus there is a school of chemists such as that of Franz Wald and Oswald who would give account of chemical processes not in the language and according to the ideas of the atomic theory, but in terms of Energetics, according to which matter is but a Centre of Force or a Complex of Energies found together at the same place. The former view is more akin to the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika system with its lasting " atomic " Paramāṇus deriving ultimately their motion from a First Mover and the latter to the Vedānta doctrine of Śakti which as immanent Power in and as all things is the source of their auto-dynamism.

But can the Mind stop at the electron? It cannot rest until it has become the whole[1] beyond which there can be nothing as it is all. Electricity itself is now believed by some to be granular or atomic in structure. The electric condition

[1] Pūrṇa.

is regarded as a condition of stress in Ether which is not in any sense Matter according to its scientific meaning and is that which is the subject of stress and strain. The Electrons are points or centres of energy in the ethereal continuum constituted by stress and strain centres not only in, but also composed of, the ethereal substance—vortices of and in the ether as it has been suggested. Regarded as such, they might be considered as the infinitely small:[1] but the stress when considered as an attitude of the universal system taken as a whole is infinitely great.[2] The infinitely little from one aspect is from another the infinitely great. Everything which lies between these two limits exists in varying grades of magnitude.[3] But the ideal limit or perfection of the continuum[4] is not Scientific Ether but is in Vedānta the Cidākāśa or Ether of Consciousness, of which as Power, in the form of efficient and material cause[5] all the psychical and physical universe is composed and in which its movements take place. Science however is not concerned with Matter other than as objective extra-mental Reality. Vedānta resolves both it and Mind into forms of expression of the Supreme Cosmic Will containing latent tendencies (*Saṃskāra*) towards manifestation as centres of limited will and experience.

What, then, is Energy? This is defined as 'capacity' for work. The ability which one body has to move another is sometimes called its energy. The energy which a body has, depends on its own amount of motion. Motion, again, is of two kinds—*viz.*, motion in a body of its constituent elements, motion which makes it what it is. Then there is

[1] Aṇu. [2] Mahat.

[3] The supreme exemplar of these two limits is the all-pervading Cidākāśa and the Point of Power or Bindu Śakti which the Śāstra describes as ghanībhūtā śakti that is condensed concentrated Power about to manifest.

[4] Mahat. [5] Cit-śakti and Māyā-śakti.

motion of the body as a whole from one place to another, that is, locomotive movement. This last may be communicated from without by another body in movement or may be self-initiated. The inner movements and self-initiated locomotion of living bodies is well-known. But molar masses of inorganic matter were observed to be at rest. They did not move unless something moved them, *i.e.*, motion was communicated to them from without by means of other bodies themselves in motion. It was assumed then that the ultimate constituent of Matter, the atom, was also at rest and incapable by itself of quitting the state of repose. The interior constitution of the Matter as a system of moving units was unsuspected. Inorganic Matter was then held to be inert—dead or brute Matter as it was called. Of itself it could not move.

Inertia was a property which enabled it to resist motion or change of motion. This had to be overcome by the application of energy in action or force. Matter might possess energy but for this it must have motion and this motion must be communicated to it from without through the motion of other moving bodies which had thus either received and passed on these movements or, in the case of living bodies, had generated them. All this was true enough as applied to molar masses of inorganic matter without power of self-initiative locomotive movement. But it ignored intra-atomic movement, the self-generated perpetual movement of the particles constituting the atomic system. There were thus two different things, however linked together, namely Energy in work or force and the inert Matter which it moved. Language was sometimes used in which energy was spoken of as if it were an entity or something which might exist though there was no substance to move. This, of course, is not so; for the two, namely, Matter and Energy are never dissociated. By the forms of our thinking we cannot conceive of one

without the other. We think of matter which moves and is moved. In a transcendental sense, substance in its ultimate meaning is that which is common to all which is and which acts. It has two modes, namely, the rapid mode of function which manifests as the imponderable energies called light, electricity, magnetism and the slow mode of function which manifests as ponderable matter. Matter the ponderable is a gross and relatively stable form of it. Heat, light, electricity and other imponderables represent subtile unstable forms of it. Both are forms of substance-energy in perpetual motion and manifesting such motion in organic matter as in all else. Matter is not, as formerly thought, incapable of possessing any energy but that transmitted to it and is on the other hand now held to be not inert but a reservoir of colossal intra-atomic energy or *Śakti*, and this must be so to the Śākta who believes that the minutest particle of inorganic matter is a limited form of the Mother-power, the potentialities of which are unlimited. All is in motion and though matter as a self may and does resist, yet mobility (Spanda) is its fundamental trait.

It has been said : [1]

"It would no doubt be possible for a higher intelligence to conceive Energy without substance for there is nothing to prove that necessarily it requires a support but such a conception cannot be attained by us. The essence of energy being unknown we are compelled to materialise it."

Both Substance and Energy however are necessary concepts of dualistic thinking. It is not possible to resolve either, as we understand them, into the other. It is only when they are transcended that their unity is found to be grounded in the Supreme Will as both efficient and material cause. It appears both as energy and matter, *i.e.*, energy inseparably associated with matter and matter inseparably associated with

[1] Le Bon L'évolution de la Matière 17.

energy. Similarly in the same way mind is inseparably coupled with matter and matter with mind, their unity being found in the Power of Consciousness which is neither and which transcends both.

Energy has been divided into many forms such as kinetic, potential, chemical, magnetic and so forth. It was first thought that all the various forms of energy were subdivisions of the first two and then that all energy was kinetic, even potential energy being in some way dependent on motion. What have been called " Forces " are various forms of motion of matter, or of the Ether each embodying energy. The ability which one body has to move another is sometimes called its energy, the energy which a body has depending on its own amount of motion. One form of physical motion or energy may be transformed into another, all being correlated. None of the forms is necessarily prior to any other. The various forms of Energy have been described as a closed ring of inter-relations within which motions are being exchanged by contact and radiation. If energy is conserved, so also is motion and matter, all three being constant. Physics which formerly counted several energies which it distinguished from each other welded them all into one great concept " Energy " of many forms and of which constancy was predicated.

Professor Emile Picard says [1] that for one school of scientists, Energy is not merely an abstract conception, without objective reality, but it has objective reality as much as and perhaps more than Matter and cannot be created or destroyed. Whether from the equivalence of different forms of energy one can draw the conclusion of their identity is for the experimenter a question which will be answered by each according to his different theoretic views.[2]

[1] " La Science Moderne et son état actuel," 136, 137.

[2] " Pour toute une école de savants, l'énergie n' ést pas seulement une conception abstracte sans existence ré-elle; elle a pour eux, comme la

The result of recent investigation is summed up in the following words by a writer in the "Times" reviewing recent theories of the nature of Matter:

"A monistic interpretation of matter has displaced the older view. And what are electrons, these new symbols of the physical conception of the material universe? They are spoken of as positive and negative, the one with a mass two thousand times that of the other and with a two thousandth part of its diameter. They are mathematical abstractions, their properties inferences from mathematical reasoning. In the last resort, matter has become a number, a measure, not a thing. *The metaphysician expelled from the physics of the last century has come back to his own.*"

In the result Matter in its ultimate form ceases to be the gross thing which it was formerly thought to be, and is not in such form, "Matter" in its ponderable sense at all. On the contrary, it is at base a subtile thing yet with some, however minute, degree of magnitude. This is not however to say that because Matter is subtile it is any the less real.

Indian Scripture carries the matter still further backwards. The First Standard to which Matter is also an objective extra-mental reality reduces however sensible Matter to Elements (*Paramāṇus*) which have no magnitude whatever.[1] In the Second and Third Standards both Matter and Mind are modes of one and the same Principle, Cause of

matière, plus peut être que la matière, une existence objective et. nous ne pouvons ni la créer ni la détruire. De, l'équivalence des différentes formes de l'énergie peut on conclure à leur identité. La question pour, l'experimentateur, n'a pas de sens. . . Et chacun peut y répondre diversement suivant ses vues théoriques." According to the Śākta standpoint there are phenomenally various kinds of Energy which are forms of the Divine Power (Daivī-Śakti) as the one Supreme Will.

[1] They have neither length, breadth or height. The smallest particle of tri-dimensional, and therefore theoretically perceptible, Matter being a Trasarenu *v post.* The "magnitude" of a Paramāṇu is Pārimāṇdalya or a mathematical point.

the psycho-physical (Prakṛti, Māyā). From the Vedāntic standpoint they are modes of the Supreme Power (*Mahā-śakti*) which, while it is in Itself pure unlimited Consciousness, is for the limited centre the fundamental Substance-Energy from which the limitations of Mind and Matter are derived. Matter then is the manifestation of the Power of the Supreme Will to appear as an *object* to a limited experiencing subject or Mind. But Matter does not appear all at once in the form of Gross, particular, sensible Matter. It appears first as the Generals of the sense particulars, that is as the world of the Universals and then, with the development of the gross physical senses, Matter, is experienced as the gross sensible particulars.

Both the world of the Universals and particulars [1] have their origin in a common Psycho-Dynamic Principle which is itself a product of the Cosmic Will.

§ 3

Before recurring again to the Matter of Western Science I will make a short resume of Indian Doctrine according to the three standards. For those who would understand Vedānta must also know both Sāṃkhya-Yoga and Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika. What is here described as Śākta doctrine is a form of the Monistic (Advaita) Vedānta of the Third Standard.

To Western Science, Matter is an extra-mental objective reality in the sense of that which exists in its own right independent of mind: that is experience or no experience it exists. This is akin to the view taken by the First Standard (Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika) though according to the latter the ultimate

[1] See as to these " Mind ".

elements of matter (Paramāṇu) which have been called " atoms " have no magnitude whatever.[1]

The " element " [2] of matter (the Tanmātra [3] of the second and third standards [4] is not an objective reality in the same absolute sense in which the true elements the (Paramāṇus) [5] of the first standard are believed to be. Taking objective reality, in its fullest sense, to mean that which is independent of experience, " experience " may mean either finite individual experience, whether conscious or unconscious,[6] or Cosmic Experience namely that of the Infinite Individuality (Parāhaṃtā). The *Paramāṇus*, as external, are independent of both. On the other hand the *Tanmātra* according to Sāṃkhya-Yoga is derived from mental functioning (*Buddhi-vyāpāra*) which need not be reflected on individual consciousness in all cases and is therefore independent of experience in that sense, for if it is not reflected in any particular consciousness, there is no *Tanmātra* produced for it. In Vedānta the *Tanmātra* is not independent of the Lord's experience, nor is it independent of mental functioning (*Buddhi-vyāpāra*) in the sense of the cosmic process of Māyā. It may, however, be independent of individual experience both conscious and sub-conscious.

Metaphysical Realism can therefore be predicated of the First Standard in which matter as such, though in its subtle form, is eternal. The second has been called both a form of

[1] And therefore differ from the atom or electron of science which have some magnitude however minute.

[2] In inverted commas because the Tanmātra is not a simple ultimate but a derivative from higher psychic principles.

[3] Lit. " thatness only "; they are generals of the particulars or universals of which the Types (ākriti) are constituted.

[4] Sāṃkhya-Yoga and Vedānta.

[5] Lit. " supremely little "; the constituent minima of sensible matter.

[6] That is conscious functioning of the mind (Buddhi-vyāpāra or Buddhi-vyāpāra reflected in consciousness or Cit; or unconscious or sub-conscious Buddhi-vyāpāra that is functioning of mind (Buddhi) not reflected in Consciousness or Cit.

Materialism,[1] of Idealism,[2] and of Psycho-dynamism [3]; and the Vedānta a system of Idealism, though it is not exactly Idealism in any Western sense of the word. Western labels are apt to mislead. It is better therefore to use the Sanskrit descriptions which are correct, namely the doctrine of an absolute new creation out of discrete pre-existing ingredients [4] in this case the minima of matter; the doctrine of the existence of the product in a potential form prior to its actual manifestation,[5] and the doctrine of the reality (in its truest sense) [6] of only the Originating Source of things, a doctrine in which the originating reality remains what it is but yet brings about and appears through its power as the result. In the first standard, matter in its gross sensible form is transient and its subtle constituent minima are eternal. There is no inherent dynamism. In the second and third both gross sensible and subtle matter are transient and dynamic, but in the second matter is eternal only in the sense that in the dissolution of the universe it is in potential form as the Fundamental Substance from which it really evolves. In the third standard from a pragmatic standpoint it potentially is as a Tendency in Being to which manifestation is given by the Divine Will; whilst from the transcendental standpoint, there is no actual

[1] Garbe 'Sankh.' Phil. 242 *et seq.*

[2] Max Muller "Six Systems" X. It is neither "Materialism" nor "Idealism" for both Mind and Matter are phenomenally distinct and have their ultimate basis in Prakṛti which is neither, but the source of both.

[3] J. C. Chatterjee "Hindu Realism," 14; inasmuch as the principles which it regards as the origin of the things are both psychical, *i.e.*, of the nature of feelings, thoughts, ideas; and dynamic that is of the nature of forces or powers. But here too a caution is necessary in that the psychical is the association of the natural psychic and physical principles with Consciousness which is not psychic in the sense of mental at all.

[4] Āraṃbha-vāda or Asat-kārya-vāda that is the non-existence of the produced before actual production.

[5] The evolutionist standard (Pariṇāma-vāda) or Satkārya-vāda, *i.e.*, existence of product in potential form prior to actual manifestation.

[6] That is as changeless.

manifestation at all but the changeless Consciousness or Spirit alone. Thus even when matter as such as a mode of substance disappears it has the eternality and reality of its Cause.[1] All appearance as a form, action as such form, disappearance into some other form, is according to Śākta views due to the inherent dynamism of matter attributable to it because of its being an expression, though of a gross kind, of the Supreme Power (Mahā-śakti) which is both the material and efficient cause of all.

The dynamic view of Matter which makes mobility the fundamental trait of Matter, would seek to deduce all the other "primary" properties of Matter out of this fundamental one. Matter occupies a certain volume of space, and resists movement in and through this volume; not because it is "inert" but because its essence lies in its power of self-conservation. An outside object is pressing against it; why does it resist? Why does it not absolutely yield? Because it exerts forces counteracting or seeking to counteract the action of the forces exerted by the pressing object. Only force can oppose force. A push or stroke is given to a thing; it resists; does not quite yield; and even returns the push which is felt as muscular reaction and possibly pain. According to Newton's Third Law of Motion, the force with which the thing has reacted is equal and opposite to that with which the push or stroke acted. The lump of Matter which is the thing, is therefore really capable of exerting and resisting force. It occupies a certain volume of space precisely because it can maintain itself in its own sphere. Without such power, it would have no sphere, no *locus*, and no existence at all. All individual things must possess such power to conserve themselves as they are, even though it be for a moment. To be an individual I must be able to hold my own, not only philosophically but practically in the life of the world. So life; so

[1] Vivartta-vāda or Sat-Kāraṇa-vāda.

also Matter. A piece of iron is an individual object and self because it is able by its cohesive forces to hold together its molecules against the action of heat and so forth; a molecule is so because it is able by its cohesive forces to hold together the constituent atoms; an atom is so because it is able by its cohesive forces to hold together the electrons or "electric charges" which are supposed to be in it, revolving in their orbits; and so on; for, even the electron cannot be the absolute unit of Matter. It is clear therefore that every form of Matter has its boundary (*i.e.*, extension) determined by its own stresses acting against the stresses of the enveloping Order. Its essence is Stress or Power (Śakti). The Stress operates in and is a condition of, Ether—says Western Science; it operates in and is a condition ultimately of, Cit or Ether of Consciousness—says the Vedānta. Philosophers in the West too (as Herbert) have recognised that the essence of Thing-hood is in the power of self-conservation; and idealists such as Hegel, Green and others have seen in it the power of self-realisation. Indian Thought (Śruti) says that the 'thing' is Brahman and is realizing itself as such, by its energising (*Karma*), through enjoyment (*Bhoga*) and ultimately through liberation (*Apavarga*) from the veil of ignorance or (*Avidyā*). This "ignorance," so much misunderstood, is knowledge. Knowledge of what? Knowledge of the world as mundane experience. And hence the Śaiva Scriptures say "*Jñānaṃ Bandhah*" that is knowledge is binding. But what is knowledge in this sense is ignorance (*Avidyā*) in another; for it is just this knowledge as a state of experience which is ignorance of pure spiritual experience as it is in itself. Power which, as mind and matter, cuts the full experience into sections gives sectional experience which necessarily shuts out full experience.

The very fact that Matter occupies space shows therefore that it is a system of stresses. The *form* of a material

substance, again, is a *function of its motion*, *i.e.*, varies as this latter varies. A thing which is spherical when at rest will become an oblate spheroid when it moves in a certain manner. H. A. Lorentz has shown that an electro-magnetically constituted body which has a permanent configuration when at rest, when set in motion with a certain velocity, will contract in the direction of the velocity to a certain fraction [1] of its original dimension; distances at right angles to the direction of the velocity remaining unaltered. Now, since according to modern ideas, all Matter is electro-magnetically constituted (*i.e.*, made up of electrons or moving unit charges of electricity), the above result applies to all material things. We cannot therefore have a rigid body the spatial extension of which is permanent and independent of its velocity. A measuring rod, for example, will shorten in the direction of its length in a given ratio when it moves in a given manner. Spatial dimensions are thus the functions of, and relative to, the motions of things. Temporal dimensions or time-measurements also depend on and are relative to, the motions of bodies. This is the modern (though in fundamentals very ancient) theory of Relativity at which Dr. Einstein and others are still working. Space and Time relations are thus determined by the mutual stresses of things. What a thing apparently is, is determined by how it moves or by how it stresses. According to Hindu notions, the stress, or constituent forces of a thing as heard by the Absolute Ear is its Natural name, *Śabda* or *Bīja Mantra* which evolves and sustains its form.[2]

Not Form alone is the function of Motion (*i.e.*, varies as this latter does). Mass also is so. In Newtonian physics Mass was regarded as a physical constant. Howsoever Matter may move, its Mass was believed to be independent of its motion.

[1] ($\sqrt{1-v^2/c^2}$ where v is the velocity of the moving body, and c a constant, *viz.*, the velocity of light.)

[2] See " Garland of Letters ".

A thing is at rest; it is moving with a moderate velocity; it is moving with a prodigious velocity; in every case, its Mass was believed to remain constant. But the electromagnetic constitution of Matter does not warrant this belief. In the Electron Theory the property of Mass is explained as an effect of electricity in motion. Suppose an electric charge (*i.e.*, electron) is moving; that charge has its lines of force; so that when the charge moves, it carries its lines of force with it. Ether through which these lines of force are carried is dragged forwards by them (as explained by Sir J. J. Thomson); hence the momentum of the charge (*i.e.*, product of Mass and Velocity) is due to the inertia of the ether. It possesses a given momentum because it drags forwards ether by its moving lines of force. A moving charge has therefore something analogous to mass in virtue of its motion. The scientists Thomson, Heaviside, Searle and others have calculated how much mass is due to how much motion. Kaufmann has also given definite experimental evidence that the ratio of the charge to the mass for the corpuscles projected from radium decreases as velocity increases. That is, the fraction e/m (ratio of charge to mass) decreases as velocity increases. But since the charge (*i.e.*, the numerator of the fraction) is constant, the mass (*i.e.*, the denominator of the fraction) must increase in order that the fraction itself may decrease *pari passu* with the increase of velocity. Hence it follows that the Mass of the charge is a function of its velocity, *i.e.*, varies as this latter varies. It is true that for a slow-moving corpuscle, the Mass of the electric charge remains unaffected by its velocity; but when its velocity becomes comparable to that of light (nearly two hundred thousand miles per second), the electric Mass increases very rapidly. Nor must we imagine that such high velocities are exceptional in the case of the moving charges. The ejected corpuscles from radium move with velocities comparable to

that of light; in the "atom" itself where the unit charges or electrons are "bound" instead of being "free," they have orbital motions compared with whose velocities, those of the planets in their orbits round the sun would seem to be far too small. In the Ṛgveda the *Devatā Vāyu* or *Marud-gana* has for his chariot-animals packs of spotted deer which stands as the symbol of fleetness; and *Vāyu* in the Veda is, in his physical aspect, a subtle universal fluid in movement[1] of which gross "air"[2] is a coarser derivative. In the Anāhata-Cakra too in the Tantras, where the *Vāyu-tattva* is located, the *Yantra* (or graphic representation) includes the symbol of a deer. However that be, the electric charges or electrons which, in various configurations, are now believed to constitute all Matter, are not slow of foot: their high velocities are not exceptional. And we have seen that their Masses are the functions of their velocities.

And physicists now generally believe that the *whole* of the Mass of Matter is electro-magnetic Mass. That is to say, Matter does not possess a mechanical mass ultimately different in kind from its electro-magnetic Mass. The scientists Abraham, Thomson and others have calculated on the assumption that an electron is, *nothing but* a spherical charge of electricity, and their calculations tally with experimental results so far obtained. Matter now is thus not something which merely carries an electric charge or charges with it, but it *is* electric charges (positive and negative) somehow configurated together. The greater bulk of the Mass of atom is, according to some views, concentrated at the nucleus which is represented by the positive charge, and the swarm of negative charges moving round the nucleus have also their small masses; and the total mass of the atom is only the aggregate

[1] From *vā* = to move.

[2] Pañcīkṛta-Marut.

of the masses of its constituents which are positive and negative charges. This is the Electron Theory [1].

We have therefore a Syllogism. The Mass of a moving charge is a function of its velocity; the Mass of Matter is wholly the masses of the charges by which it is constituted; therefore, the mass of Matter is also a function of velocity (velocities of its constituent parts), Mass of a thing is thus dependent on its stress-system on what may by called in Sanskrit *śakti-kuta* or *śakti-vyuha.*

Because the mass of a body is a function of its underlying stress (Śakti), or what is the same thing, of the motions of its ultimate units, it follows that by changing or otherwise controlling those motions it is possible to change or otherwise control its Mass. Gold and Iron have different masses, because in each the stress-system is different. Or because in each the ultimate units (the electrons, to wit) are configurated and are moving differently. If we can equate these motions, gold and iron will be equated as regards Mass. Alchemy thus becomes possible by what the modern Chemist would call the change of " Atomic Number ". Mass can be reduced or increased by controlling the domestic economy of the motions of the corpuscles. Many *Siddhis* or Powers will follow from such ability to control them.

The Bindu (or Metaphysical Point of which so much is said in the Mantra-Śāstra) [2] as the concentrated or *ghaṇibhūta* condition of Śakti is an important stage in the creative evolution of the world according to the Śākta-Vedānta view. Mass (Tamas Guṇa) follows as a consequence of such concentration of Śakti or Power. I revert to this when further discussing the Ether and its stresses.

[1] See Sir J. J. Thomson's "Matter and Electricity," or any other similar work.

[2] See " Garland of Letters ".

We have seen that extension (together with Form) and Mass are Energy-functions (*Śakti-Vyāpāra*) according to the teachings of Modern Science as they are in Śākta-Vedānta. Other properties are also traceable to the same *activity* which is at the basis of Matter. Take for example, resistance and rigidity of form. A substance which is non-resisting and without any shape, (*i.e.*, "a perfect fluid") may in virtue of rotational movement, come to offer resistance and present a definite shape. Rings of smoke illustrate this. A top at rest can hardly be balanced on the palm of the hand; if it be, its condition is most unstable; the slightest touch will upset it. But if an attempt is made to balance a top while spinning rapidly, on the palm of the hand, that can be easily done; the rotation of the top will counteract the effects of gravity—it will now stand on its point. If the spinning top is slightly pushed it will become disturbed and will oscillate about its position of equilibrium to which it will speedily return after a few oscillations. The rotating top resists (as is felt when attempt is made to stop or disturb it) any movement which seeks to disturb it. Thus it shows resistance and rigidity of form *on account* of its rotational motion. If we take a perfect (*i.e.*, frictionless) fluid such as Ether and somehow[1] set up a vortex movement in it, it will possess, in that eddying portion, permanence, resistance and rigidity of form—all on account of the curling motion. This was the basis of the theory of Helmholtz and Lord Kelvin, that atoms of matter may be vortex-rings in Ether. This we shall see later. We find now that the "primary" qualities of resistance, rigidity and so forth are also Energy-functions or effects of movement.

Gravitation, or the mutual attraction of Masses of Matter has proved a stumbling-block to many otherwise successful theories. The effects of all other forces (such as heat, light,

[1] It requires what is called a super-natural agency to set up a vortex in a *perfect* fluid.

electricity, magnetism) are propagated through space in finite time; *i.e.*, they have their finite rates of velocity. If, for example, a distant star be now extinguished or rekindled, we should be aware of that phenomenon through light or loss of light, many years hence. Light takes so much time to travel from there. But suppose the lump of Matter which we call that star be now annihilated or a new lump be now created; then, this fact will instantaneously affect the gravitational system throughout the whole universe of matter. That is, its effect will be instantaneously felt (or produced) here. This *prima facie* makes the case of gravitation a difficult one. Nevertheless physicists have worked at it; and attempts have been made to explain gravitation as a resultant of the attractions (*Rāga*) and repulsions (*Dveṣa*) of the positive and negative charges which are believed to constitute Matter in conglomeration; in terms of pressures and pulls exerted through the ether; and as (by Le Sage) a result of the battering of "ultra-mundane corpuscles" on the atoms of matter.

So all the "primary" qualities may be reduced to and expressed in terms of Energy, Stress or *Śakti*. Energy or Movement is thus the fundamental principle in Matter.

That the secondary qualities such as colour, smell, etc., are effects wrought on us by the action of the primary qualities has been long recognised in Science.

§ 4

We have seen, how all the "primary" qualities believed to reside in "scientific matter" are modes and functions of energy which is of the essence of Matter. That is, Matter possesses mass, extension, resistance, weight, etc., *because* it is *something* which is *dynamic* and energises. Now, what is that *something*? How and why does it become dynamic? And what is the nature of the Energy which operates in and through it? These are the three fundamental queries regarding Matter.

As regards the second and third questions, Science confesses that she is not in a position to answer. It is true that Electricity is not uncommonly regarded as the most fundamental kind of physical energy, but physicists are not sure about the nature of Electricity. We do not yet know what it *is*, though we know much about how it works. Can it be traced to something more fundamental than itself? Physicists no longer look upon Electricity as a continuous fluid flowing in and out of conductors; it is now believed to be granular or "atomic" in structure; that is, we have now grains, "atoms" or corpuscles of electricity entering like "companies," "battalions," "armies," etc., into substances and leaving them. These units of Electricity were called by Sir J. J. Thomson "corpuscles," and by Johnstone Stoney "Electrons". But what is this unit charge? Can we regard it as a vortex in Ether? How does it then take a positive and negative character out of vortex-motion? Is it only a difference in the *direction* of motion? The difference between a positive charge and a negative charge appears to be fundamental. Likes repel and unlikes attract each other. How is that effected? These questions probing to the very root of the matter still remain unanswered.

The common hypothesis, however is to regard the electric condition as a condition of stress in Ether. The *something* which is stressed and strained is Ether, all forms of energy (Electricity included) are forms of stress in Ether, and Matter with all its properties is the manifestation of such stress-and-strain in Ether. In this conception, we have only substituted the word "stress" for the word "energy"; but we are still far from clearly understanding its nature. What is this stressing in Ether, why and how does it stress? This is not known.

Energy is commonly stated to be the capacity for doing work; and Work is commonly expressed in terms of motion or change of configuration. In this way a 'formula' of Energy

or work may be given; but it is a description and not a definition; it never tells us what Energy or Capacity for doing work *is*. Clerk Maxwell, one of the greatest of British physicists, in his Matter and Motion said: "We are acquainted with Matter only as that which may have energy communicated to it from other Matter, and which may in its turn communicate energy to other Matter."

So, according to him, it becomes necessary to understand 'Energy' in order to understand 'Matter'. But what is Energy? "Energy" on the other hand, he says, "we know only as that which in all natural phenomena is continually passing from one portion of matter to another." As a definition of Energy it involves the vicious circle. The inscrutable "that which" appears in both the statements. Taking again the famous Treatise on Natural Philosophy by Sir William Thomson (Lord Kelvin) and Professor Tait, we read (S. 207) —"We cannot, of course, give a definition of *Matter* which will satisfy the metaphysician, but the naturalist may be content to know matter as *that which can be perceived by the senses, or as that which can be acted upon by, or can exert, force.* The latter, and indeed the former also, of these definitions involves the idea of *force*, which in point of fact, is a direct object of sense; probably of all our senses, and certainly of the 'muscular sense'." The idea of force is the essence, and it is claimed by these authors, as indeed it has been claimed by all realistic philosophers, that force is a *direct* object of sense-experience—that in muscular activity in particular we directly apprehend what force is. Empiricists from Hume and Mill down to the physical empiricists such as Ernst Mach, Poincaré, Karl Pearson and others, have objected to these definitions of Matter as being too metaphysical or even as being unpsychological. The incrutable "that which" which occurs in these definitions refers to the metaphysical "thing-in-itself" as distinguished from

phenomena; and force or energy which these definitions suppose to be a direct object of sense, is nothing of the kind at all: we are only aware of *changes* in our groups of sensations and *infer* objective causes of such changes (*i.e.*, things and forces). According to this psychology, then, Matter is for us only a "complexus of sense-experiences"; it will not even allow us to say with J. S. Mill that "Matter is a permanent possibility of sense-impressions" (System of Logic, Bk. i, Chap. iii). For, the unwary may take even this to imply a supersensuous entity at the base of the sense-impressions!

Whether right or wrong, this view which apparently would not permit us to go beyond groups and series of sense-experiences and their changes to search after 'realities,' is, if consistently held, the *reductio ad absurdum* of all thought and all science. What we directly and immediately experience is a universe, and this universe of experience is the Fact which is alogical and unspeakable.[1] It is by Thought (*Buddhi*) that we treat this universe of experience variously; this treating principle being, of course, immanent, and not transcendent, in relation to the universe of experience which is treated. How is it treated? It is treated by being veiled, by being changed or moved, and by being presented. If we call the treating operation, Stress, then clearly it has three partials as just indicated—presentation (*Sattva-guṇa*) movement (*Rajo-guṇa*) and veiling (*Tamo-guṇa*) For example I think I am now hearing the cooing of a bird; *really* this phenomenon is the exphasised part or section in a whole universe of experience which I now have; but this whole has been more or less veiled, so that I *appear* to have a particular sensation only (*viz.*, the cooing sound) at this moment. And the veiling of the whole, the prominence of a part, its passing

[1] This is the position of Prof. P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya in his "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder" to whom I am indebted for the exposition of his case in this and other sections.—J.W.

away and coming into prominence of another, presuppose movement. From this short analysis it will appear that the Empiricist can get his "clusters of sense-impressions" and "series of sense-impressions" only *after* his mind or *Buddhi* has treated, in the manner above indicated, the alogical Fact-Whole, and cut it up into segments and rearranged them according to certain basic *Saṃskāras* (laws) of his Buddhi. His Empiricism is not *radical*; he is a dealer in second-hand articles—the so-called 'impressions' and 'ideas'. Radical Empiricism must bring us face to face with the Fact; and when it does so, it becomes *Radical Realism*, for then the Ideal and the Real become one. *This is the position of Vedānta.*

The Empiricist would have us believe that his "cluster" and "series" (*i.e.*, co-existence and sequence) of "sensations" are native to actual experience, while the Realist's "thing" and "attribute," "cause," "force" and "effect" are only thought-constructions foreign to actual experience. But this is an untenable position. Either say with Kant that all these (co-existence, sequence, thing and attribute, cause and effect, etc.) are thought-forms or categories only and are therefore foreign to the "thing-in-itself" which we do not know; or say with the Realist that these are thought-forms *as well as* actual forms of the thinkable itself—that Thought thinks in these forms and ways *because* the thinkable has in reality these forms and ways. We cannot admit truths by halves.

The Vedāntic position is as follows:

Reality is Experience. Experience is a Universe. This Universe lives, moves and has its being in Consciousness [1] or *Cit*. *Cit* therefore is Reality and the foundation of Reality. There is no inscrutable "thing-in-itself" beyond or behind Consciousness.[2] Far from being unknowable, Reality is

[1] That is pure Consciousness unaffected by the operations of unconscious mind. See "Reality".

[2] *ib.*

Cognition itself. Now, the Universe of Experience which is, and appears in Chit, may be regarded by us from *three* standpoints. (A) As it is, without any limitations; this is the Alogical Fact which cannot be circumscribed by any category. (B) As the quiescent and transcendent as well as immanent ground of what we have; this is *Cit* as such or Śiva as the worshipper personifies it; or the same in its dynamic or stressing aspect—which is Śakti which is theologically the Devī or Mother. The two aspects put together, Śiva and Śakti identified with each other, give us the Alogical Whole or Fact. (C) The Universe of Experience is treated with reference to particular centres in it and their pragmatic interests. Time, space, causal relation, the relation of thing and attribute, and other categories do *not* apply to *Pūrna* or Absolute Whole; they arise and have their application when the *Pūrna* has by Its own stress finitized Itself into centres distinguishable from one another. So that when a Centre reviews the universe of Experience from its *own* point of view (*i.e.*, the Self) its review casts itself into the forms of certain categories: it thinks of a world existing objectively to itself in *Space*, consisting of *Things* and their *Attributes*, *causing* phenomena in itself, and changing in *Time*. And this is a *necessary* treatment of experience by a Centre: it cannot but do it. A Centre treats its experience in this fundamental way and in no other, because experience has *in reality* the basis of all these relations. That is to say, Space, External Order, Time, Cause, Substance and the rest are no mere subjective dreams of the Centre: these *relations are objective arrangements as well as subjective representations of those arrangements*—which is Realism. The Vedāntist, therefore, differs from Kant in two essential respects: (1) He offers no unknowable "Thing-in-itself" beyond phenomena or Experience. His Reality is Experience. (2) Within this Experience certain fundamental operations go on; a particular Centre, itself born of those fundamental operations in it,

reviews those operations from its own standpoint; by its review it frames its own "scheme" of the universe; and this "scheme" *is not essentially unlike the real scheme of the universe* because the universe is nothing else than experience; a Centre is nothing else than a "point-of-view" in it, and a Centre's review and thought of existence, evolved out of and governed by, the fundamental operations in experience itself, cannot be essentially unlike what experience, and therefore Reality, really is. The Laws of Thought are thus justified. These Laws cannot belie those fundamental dispositions and operations of Reality which make them possible.

We need not therefore be shy to speak of a real Space, in which real Matter energises in real Time and really causes sense-affections to a given Centre. Only it should be clearly understood that the basis of all this is consciousness and the stressing in consciousness. The Śākta Vedāntist offers no Substance separate from its Energy, no *Śaktimān*[1] separate from *Śakti*,[1] but Indian Substance which is Cit *is* Energy. Man as a given centre, knows it in both the aspects (Substance-Energy), and as a member of the universal stress-system, he *directly* apprehends Energy in other Centres or the world for the matter of that. Action and reaction are correlative; there is no idea of the one without an idea of the other. When therefore he acts and feels that he is acting, he feels at the same time that something other than himself is reacting on him; *e.g.*, when he gives a blow to a thing, he feels his own force, and he feels that of the thing. It is a single feeling presenting two poles like a magnet.

Nor is the Hindu driven to look upon Conceptual or "scientific" Matter as something essentially unlike Perceptual Matter, or this latter as something essentially unlike real Matter or real Thing-in-itself. There is a tendency in science to regard Ether, Atom, Lines and Tubes of Force, etc., as

[1] Possessor of Power and Power.

"convenient fictions" or "conceptual models" only which have no perceptual equivalents; perceived Matter is also believed to be unlike the real Thing-in-itself. Thus "Scientific Matter" is *doubly* removed from the world of realities. This, however, need not be the fact. Since no "dark" world of things-in-themselves exists, a given Centre's *resumé* of the universe is a *resumé* of the world of experience from its own standpoint (and therefore subject to its own Saṃskāras or tendencies which may veil to a degree the Reality which is Experience or *Cinmaya*) [1]; but its *resumé* of Experience, and therefore, of Reality must be true as regards the fundamentals or essentials. For example, its *resumé* so far as it postulates a real Space, a real Time, real centres of force stressing upon one another, a real Ether as the medium through and by which the mutual stresses are exerted, and a real universal Energy which is *Cit-śakti* (*i.e.*, of the nature of Will), is valid. Man's fundamental commonsense is not therefore common non-sense. However much science has sophisticated, Man's *essential* beliefs as regards the universe he lives in are *true*.

And what are the essentials of our *resumé* of Matter? In the first place, we postulate some sort of a continuum (*Vibhu*, *Vyāpaka*) whether that be a *vacuum* (*i.e.*, Space) or a *plenum* (*i.e.*, Ether); the *continuum* appears in two forms—static and dynamic; the first is Space or Ether, the second is Time; for Time is the continuum regarded as a drift or flow. Both are forms of Substance-Energy which is *Cit*. In the second place, we postulate discontinuous, discrete "sections" (which may be reduced to points or *Bindus*) in the *continuum*; that is to say, the *continuum* must also be known and conceived by us as finitised, broken into discontinuities which are centres or points in it. This finitisation is the work of *Māyā-śakti* whereby the unlimited is experienced as limited. In third place, these centres of discontinuity imbedded in a *continuum* are stressing

[1] That is essentially consciousness as *Cit*.

upon one another, so that they are bound to one another as members of a universal stress-system. These being the three fundamental postulates of our *resumé* of Matter, we have a sufficient warrant for Ether, Energy and Centres of Energy (which appear as the "chemical atoms") which sum up Matter.

Because we cannot be mistaken as regards the fundamental postulates involved in our *resumé* of experience, it does not follow that our ideas about Matter, Life and Mind must all be the same and all be true. Each of us is a Centre and a particular standpoint; hence though we all agree as regards certain inalienable essentials of existence, we must differ as regards the forms in which those essentials may express themselves. For example, we cannot but be right as regards the continuum itself; it exists. But what is it? Is it a *vacuum* as was supposed by generations of physicists or is it a *plenum*? If the latter, what is its nature? How is Ether to be conceived? As an elastic Solid? As a perfect Fluid? As a perfect Jelly? Then again, we cannot but be right as regards the centres of discontinuity in the *continuum*. But what are they? Chemical Atoms? Ether-elements in vortex-motion? A centre of strain in Ether? A centre of force? Lastly, we cannot but be right as regards the mutual stressing of the centres. But how is it exerted? Through wave-motion? By actual Lines and Tubes of Force as supposed, for example, by Faraday? So, the actual *forms* may be more or less veiled to a given conscious Centre; another may be better enlightened than he is; and so there is need of Science, Philosophy and Realisation by *Sādhanā*.

Further, our placing the foundations of Matter in Cit-Substance-Energy has relieved us of the necessity of partitioning Reality into Matter, Life and Mind and then trying hopelessly to link them up again. We have nothing else than Experience. Matter, Life and Mind must be modes of Experience. The Essence of each is Cit-Substance-Energy or

Śakti. If, therefore, Matter be spiritualised, and Mind be materialised and both be vitalised, we merely solve an equation. The fundamental laws of Matter, Life and Mind are not exclusive and peculiar (*sui generis*).

All Energy is *Cit-śakti* or Consciousness-energy. This Energy has two forms—the agent which does work; and the instruments with which, and the material upon which, work is done. Energy appearing as agent (*Kartā*) is technically called *Cit-Śakti*; and Energy appearing as instrument and material (*Kārana* and *Upādāna*) is *Māyā-Śakti*. In every form of existence, sentient or "insentient," living or "non-living," Energy must appear in both forms. Thus there must be *Cit-Śakti* or Energy as agent in a so-called "atom" of Matter also. It cannot be wholly *inert*, *i.e.*, moved by external impact alone like a billiard-ball. It must have (as Śākta doctrine holds) its own stock of spontaneity. It must have its own domestic economy of intra-atomic energy, which is controlled by the "self" or *Ātmā* of the atom. And does not the Science of to-day recognise this? She now puts a tremendous amount (almost limitless) of Energy into the tiny atom; and She recognises some sort of domestic government in the atom, by which the "sub-atoms" move in a certain order according to certain velocities, are sometimes pitched off (as in Radio-activity) when they overstep a certain "critical" velocity; by which the atom itself may evolve into a different kind, and may even dissolve into the sea of Ether and its stock of universal and fundamental Energy. The basis of this arrangement in, say, an atom of Hydrogen, is the "self" of that atom of Hydrogen—its Energy appearing as agent. And this is *Cit-Śakti*, its *Abhimāni Chaitanya* or *Adhiṣṭhātrī-Devatā*, which, as appearing in H, may be more veiled than as appearing in a "living" corpuscle (C.H.N.O.), or as appearing in the cave of Intelligence (*Buddhiguhā*) of a rational animal; but still it *is* and *works* in the atom of Hydrogen. So in the unitary system of existence.

there is perfect fraternity between man and the "meanest" particle of Matter. What is here in him is also *really* there in that, and *vice versa*. Like him that also has its action (*Karma*), its enjoyment (*Bhoga*) and its release from all bonds (*Apavarga*) through *Abhyudaya* or progression in the course of upward evolution into man and from man to God.

Hence the three fundamental queries regarding Matter with which we opened the present section can be briefly answered according to Vedāntic Doctrine in this way: (1) The *something* which affects our senses as Matter is *Cit*-substance-energy (Śakti). (2) It is *essentially dynamic* and its dynamism works eternally in certain lines, so that we cannot justly speak of its acquiring a dynamic character or dynamic tendencies at any time. It works, and *this* is what is meant by saying that it is Energy. Laws of Work (*Karma*) are the Laws of Energy. Energy works as an atom of Hydrogen rather than as an atom of Oxygen, *because in the former case its Karma has been, is and will be different from that in the latter case.* Its being H is therefore determined by its *Karma*. It is however not immutable, as was thought by the older generations of physicists. All Matter is slowly radio-active—which means that all Matter is slowly transmuting, evolving; a conclusion which must inevitably follow from Sāṃkhyān and Vedāntic principles. It transmutes by its stresses, *i.e.*, by its *Karma*. (3) And this "Material" Energy is Consciousness-Energy analogous to what we experience in attention and will.[1]

The *whole* operation goes on in *Cit* which, regarded as a quiescent background or frame, is the *Cidākāśa* or Ether of Consciousness. Man has direct experience of this too in the *Samādhi* or ecstasy of completed Yoga.

[1] Energy, though mutable, is indestructible. "She who sports on the breast of Mahā-kāla has neither beginning nor end—neither birth nor death."

§ 6

We have seen that Continuity and Discontinuity have both their bases in our universe of experience; Thought therefore is not fanciful when it conceives a *continuum* in which discontinuous or discrete centres (*Jīvas*) are in action and reaction. The need of a continuous *plenum* or Ether (*Ākāśa*) and that of the Atom (*Aṇu*) are therefore real needs; we cannot do without either. Those physicists who discard the Ether cannot discard the *continuum* of Space and Time. Those again who look askance at the "atom" or "corpuscle" cannot do without "centres of force" or "points where given *quanta* of Energies operate".

The continuous and the discontinuous must have no rigid limits set to them. The ideal limit or perfection of a continuum is not Scientific Ether (about which the scientific doctors differ), but is in the Vedānta the Ether of Consciousness (*Cidākāśa* which the Chāndogya calls *Jyāyān* and *Parāyaṇam* (*i.e.*, greater than the greatest—*Mahato Mahīyān* as also *aṇoraṇīyān* smaller than the smallest) and the ultimate Ground and Support of all things or God. Similarly, the ideal limit of the discontinuous is not the scientific atom or electron, but the *Bindu* which is a focussed condition of Śakti or Energy of God or more strictly God as Energy. The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika *Paramāṇu* which is a point of stimulation is also as already stated not so crude as the scientific atom or electron.

In the search after the ideal limit in either direction (*viz.*, continuity and discontinuity—*Mahat* and *Aṇu*—), it is necessary to pass through a series before the ideal is reached—Ether of Consciousness on the one hand and the ideal Śakti-Bindu on the other. In other words, we must have a *Continua*-series and a *Discontinua*-series of largeness and a series of smallness. The upper limit of the first is *Cidākāśa* and the ultimate limit of the second is *Bindu-śakti*. It is always

well to remember these two series and their limits; if we do not, we shall not understand the search after Ethers and Corpuscles in Science, nor the genesis of the sensible world as given in the Vedānta Book of Genesis. The latter starts with the ideal limits; hence its First Principles cannot be *completely* rendered in terms of Scientific Ethers and Electrons. Nevertheless these serve a purpose as far as they go. They give us a sort of rude "first sketch" of Nature as, in the words of Dr. Bertrand Russell, Newton's Physics gave of the ways of Nature some two centuries ago.

Between the uppermost limit and the lowermost we have a series of *continua* and *discontinua* arranged in ascending and descending orders; and all these intervening orders of largeness and smallness, continuity and discontinuity are susceptible to strain and stress in a varying degree. The *Bhūtas* or "Elements" arise out of this variable stress-and-strain attitude. A Śāstric parable may be taken to represent the birth of this series. Aditi, the Vedic mother of the Devas, literally means that which cannot be divided or cut: She is as such the continuum in the limit or perfection. She is the Perfect Ether. In her womb, Vāyu or Maruts are born. Vāyu means, in the world-aspects, the (relative) continuum in movement. It is the Moving Ether. Now, Indra, jealous of the strength of this Devatā about to be born, enters Aditi's womb and cuts it up into segments. Let Indra represent here *Cit-śakti* by which the undivided continuum in movement is divided into a number of "components" of the movement. In this way, Vāyu becomes in fact the Maruts (plural) which are said to be 49 in number.[1] The single continuum in movement thus evolves, under the action of *Cit-śakti*, a series of moving *continua* which are the *Marud-gaṇa*. Every Devatā, it should be remembered in this connection, has a physical aspect. For all that is, is an Epiphany of the Divine.

[1] See *ante* "Life".

The problem before Physics as well as Metaphysics is this: Assuming that the Absolute Continuum is X and the Limit of Discontinuity is Y, how and where shall we place, between these two Limits (*Cidākāśa* and *Bindu*), Sky, Air, Water, Earth, Life, Mind (*Antahkaraṇa*), and the rest? How shall we fit our actual order of experience into this framework? Science in the West is solving, though hardly as yet suspecting the Ideal Limits, this Problem; Philosophy in India has also attempted to solve it. One solution of Science is that Matter is non-matter (*i.e.*, Ether) in motion. What does it mean and how near to Truth does it bring us? This we shall next see.

§ 7

No one of the Six Standards or Points of view of Indian philosophy[1] looks at matter from the physico-chemical point of view. They consider it from the standpoint of its effect on the mind and senses. Matter in this view is *that* which, affecting the mind and senses, produces therein the sensations of hearing, touch, form and colour, taste and smell. The first Standard differs from the rest in its treatment of sound and hearing (v. post), but they agree also in this, that matter is both gross (*Sthūla*), that is, sensible, and subtile (*Sūkṣma*), that is, unperceivable by the senses but by mind alone. What then is *that* which produces these sensations? Here the standards differ. It is necessary, in the first place, to understand the Indian classification of magnitude.

There are four kinds of magnitude—small (*Aṇu*), large (*Mahat*)—terms relating to solid or three dimensional magnitude; short (*Hraṣva*), long (*Dīrgha*)—terms which relate to linear magnitude. The first standard also considers (VII.1.11.14.17) these two pairs of categories as giving rise to two series (*Dhārā*), *e.g.* A is smaller than B, B than C, etc., one series. A is shorter than B, B than C, etc. There are six

[1] See *ante* "Reality".

possible combinations of these four magnitudes, *viz.*, (1) *Aṇu-Mahat*, small-large; (2) *Aṇu-Hraśva*, small-short; (3) *Aṇu-Dīrgha*, small-long; (4) *Mahat-Hraśva*, large-short; (5) *Mahat-Dīrgha*, large-long; (6) *Hraśva-Dīrgha*, short-long. The first and sixth combine contraries (VII.1.10) and are, therefore, cancelled. The third is also untenable, because a thing which is small in dimension cannot be long. Similarly, a thing which is large in dimension cannot be short and the fourth goes out leaving only the second and the fifth as logically tenable combinations. Each of these magnitudes has its degrees. Thus *Aṇu* which is small and atomic may represent several degrees of which the extreme limit or infinitely small than which there is nothing smaller is Paramāṇu.[1]

According to the first standard (*Nyāya-vaiśeṣika*), gross, transient, sensible matter, is that matter which is large (*Mahat*) and consists of many parts and has form in itself. Compound matter is constituted of certain aggregates called Ternaries (*Tryaṇuka Trasareṇu*) which are the smallest tridimensional, and therefore theoretically perceivable, aggregates consisting of three couplets or Binaries of two points each; such points being called *Paramāṇus*. The single Ternary though theoretically perceivable is in practice not so. The Binaries and Points are unperceivable. Perceivable matter is of three dimensions and infra-sensible matter, or matter unperceivable by the senses exists as a Binary of two dimensions or as a Point without magnitude. The smallest particle of tridimensional matter is theoretically perceivable,[2] that is provided the requisite sense-capacity is there. In any case it can be actually imaged, and since it possesses both primary and secondary qualities it can be concretely imaged. The annotators who in some cases possessed neither the Yogic vision[3] of the ancient Seers,[4] nor the knowledge of modern

[1] Parama (supreme) and Aṇu.

[2] Pratyakṣa-yogya.

[3] Yoga-dṛṣṭi.

[4] Ṛṣis.

science, often represent the Particle or *Trasareṇu* as a moving particle visible to the eye, such as a mote seen in a sun-beam as a pencil of light, let through an aperture into a dark room. It is said to be composed of three Binaries (*Dvyaṇuka*) and broken up into six "atoms" (*Paramāṇus*). But this cannot be so, as even a microscopic particle must according to Western science contain multi-millions of corpuscles. A Particle or *Trasareṇu* is an "element" of solid dimension in sensible matter. It has a magnitude of three dimensions namely length, breadth and thickness. It is thus the solid element of matter. The Particle or *Trasarenu* is composed of three Binaries or *Dvyaṇuka* which have neither breadth nor thickness and which are "elements" of linear dimension.[1] The Binary again is composed of Points. Two Points, not touching, make a short line of which the breadth and thickness or solid dimension are nothing. Next, two such elements of linear dimension (*Dvyaṇuka*) are combined. From a common origin or point of reference two short lines are drawn in two different directions thus producing a very small surface or "element" of surface dimension.[2] If again three such short lines are drawn from a common origin at say right angles to each other there is produced an element of solid dimension or volume.[3] Three binaries make in this way a perceivable Particle or *Trasareṇu* or Ternary, the magnitude of which is much greater than that of a Binary, for the former has breadth and thickness which the latter has not. Hence compared to a Binary

[1] Dl in mathematical notation.

[2] Ds in mathematical notation.

[3] *Dv* in mathematical notation. It appears to me that this scheme of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika is referred to by what in the Tantras are called the crooked or bent line (Vakrarekhā), the straight line (Ṛjurekhā) and the prismatic form (Śṛngātaka) of which the Devatās are Vāmā, Jyeṣṭhā, and Raudrī. See Yoginīhṛdaya-Tantra, p. 167. From the curved line said to be in the form of an elephant-goad (Aṅkuśa) representing surface dimension, a line is drawn upwards into another plane and the tri-dimensional figure is formed.

it is large (*Mahat*). Again many lines must be bundled together like slender wires, twisted into a rope, to produce even a very small volume; each of the constituent lines is short but the aggregate of these short lengths is comparatively long (*Dīrgha*). Hence the magnitude of the Ternary or *Trasareṇu* is large and long (*Mahat-Dīrgha*) just as the Binary is small (*Aṇu*, because lacking solid dimension) and short (*Aṇu-hraśva*).

We have next to consider the ultimate Points or Atoms which go to make up the Binaries, the Ternaries and the combinations of these which, as molar masses, form sensible matter (Bhūta). I call it an atom, not because it is like the atom of Western Science, but because it is the true atom that is an indivisible partless point of substance without any of the three dimensions and relative to its effect a Point of Force, whereas the atom of Science and even its electron has some magnitude, however minute. Without this explanation the translation of the Point or Paramāṇu as atom is misleading. The "measure"[1] of the *Paramāṇu* or true atom is called *Parimaṇḍala* which means literally a "sphere". It is therefore an infinitely small sphere or Point (*Bindu*). Each series (*Dhārā*) of the four categories of magnitude has a superior[2] and inferior[3] limit. If A in the series is the inferior limit, and if it be absolutely small, then it is the Atom or *Paramāṇu* just as Z may be the superior limit and absolutely great,[4] such as the Self (*Ātmā*) and Ether (*Ākāśa*). Between these two limits there are several orders relatively great or small. If the *Paramāṇu* or Point had any finite magnitude, however small, like the scientific atom or electron then it would not be the inferior limit—the partless unit. Hence the infinitely small unit is nothing greater than a Point (*Bindu*). The same reasoning will apply to the other pair "Short-long". The infinitely short thing is again a Point. If it had any finite

[1] Parimāṇa. See Vaiśe., VII. 1. 20.
[2] Utkarṣa. [3] Apakarṣa. [4] Parama-mahat.

length it would be divisible. So the inferior limit of the second series is also the *Paramāṇu.* It is a *Parimaṇḍala* because it is a sphere of which the radius is infinitely small, that is a Point. Things of perception are seen to be divisible into smaller and smaller particles. All these are spheres of finite, however small, radii. So are even the electrons of science. Pushing however to the limit we get a sphere of which the radius is infinitely small and this is *Pārimāṇḍalya.* In all physico-mathematical analysis of things in Science, we have to imagine and deal with the " volume elements ". A mere Point or mere Line cannot be an object of concrete imagination for us—we cannot perceive it even with the eye of imagination. Such perception becomes possible only when we take a solid element. Neither the Point (*Paramāṇu*) nor Line (*Dvyaṇuka*) are that, and are therefore unperceivable. The smallest solid element is the *Trasareṇu* which is theoretically perceivable, if there be the requisite sense capacity which ordinarily there is not. The chemical atom, electron and so forth, being larger or smaller solid elements, fall under the generic category of the Ternary or *Trasareṇu* for they cannot be either the Binary or *Dvyaṇuku* or the unit or *Paramāṇu* which are not thus perceivable or imaginable by us. They are supersensible[1] or transcendental, not in the sense that while too small (such as a *Trasareṇu*) to be perceived by the unassisted senses or aid of instruments hitherto invented they could be perceived by the senses with the aid of ideally perfect instruments, but in the sense that they can never under any circumstances be perceived by the senses. They can only be conceived by the Mind. The Points are also non-spatial that is to say they cannot occupy space or localised position.[2]

Before describing their nature it is necessary to enquire how from the Points as things of no magnitude, things of magnitude

[1] Atīndṛya. [2] Pradeśātīta.

are produced.[1] The sensible is either visible or invisible, such as the aerial atmosphere which is limited and consists of discrete parts, otherwise there could be no movements in it, for in an all-filling continuum no parts of it can move from their places, nor can other parts come in from some other quarter. All sensible things are of limited extent and as such discrete consisting of parts. A thing of limited magnitude may be produced by things already having magnitude, or by a number of things without magnitude, standing not contiguously but at distances from one another and then entering into a combination or unification so as to form a single unit which, as a whole, may behave as one individual, and in which the originating parts are no longer entirely independent of the whole, in which case the originating parts or factors need not have any magnitude whatever. The unified wholes are secondary or produced units or individuals.[2] The constituents are not contiguous but have spaces between them for the discrete sensible is never an absolute solid.[3] A Point which is contiguous to, and thus coinciding with, another Point remains a Point, but standing apart produces a Line. A number of pure lines that is having only length, which are not less than three, can produce a thing of solid tri-dimensional magnitude that is length, breadth, and thickness. Contiguous lines produce only a line just as the contiguous Point is nothing but a Point. But if the lines stand apart and in two planes, their combination produces a figure which is a thing of tridimensional magnitude (*Trasareṇu*) which by the addition of Mass becomes perceivable to all.

Why it may be asked should the ultimate constituents of matter be without magnitude? Because in the first place

[1] See " Hindu Realism " by J. C. Chatterjee, 25 *et seq.*

[2] that is a new thing, an individual (Avayavin) other than a mere aggregate.

[3] things can be operated upon by heat and can be compressed.

thought cannot rest there and will subdivide again and again as long as any magnitude is assumed. And next it is seen that things with magnitude may be produced from things without magnitude. Thirdly if the ultimate constituents of sensible things were composed of solid, hard, and extended particles with magnitude, however small, then the Ether could not be all pervading. The Points without magnitude which are the ultimate constituents of matter being partless cannot, like discrete things composed of parts, be produced or destroyed and are eternal.[1] Gross sensible matter is non-eternal. What then is *Paramāṇu* the ultimate constituent of sensible matter but itself beyond the senses? In the first place it is not an infinitely small element of what we actually experience which are all compounds, but it is an infinitely small partless Point of Substance (really existing and entering variously into compounds) which is the ground and cause of four classes of sensation, *viz.*, Touch, form and colour, taste and smell.[2] It is a real and independently existing Force and self-subsisting stimulus, producing both the sensible and sensation.[3] As sensation is fourfold, they are, as the cause of it, of four classes technically and symbolically called "Air," "Fire," "Water," "Earth".[4] This does not mean that they are what we call such, which is gross compounded matter because they are respectively and in particular manifest in pure air which may be felt through its motions and temperature, which may be seen in all fiery substances, tasted in watery form (for the flavour of a thing is only had when it is dissolved into liquid form) and which may be smelt as

[1] Destruction means division into component parts.

[2] In Sanskṛt Sparśa, Rūpa, Rasa, Gandha.

[3] The Paramāṇus originate both sensible matter and the particular sense. The senses are of the same nature as the stimuli which provoke them.

[4] Vāyu, Tejas, Ap, Pṛthivī.

solid matter.[1] The aerial *Paramāṇu* is the ultimate constituent of that form of Matter from which all other sensible special qualities can be eliminated except Touch; the fiery, watery, and earthy Paramāṇus are the ultimate constituents of those forms of matter from which all other sensible qualities can be eliminated but not colour and form, taste and smell. Therefore the Vāyu-Paramāṇu is a material point which produces gross measurable matter sensible as touch and the sense of touch, just as the rest *Tejas-Paramāṇu*, *Ap-Paramāṇu*, and *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇu* produce gross matter sensible as colour and form, taste and odour. V. P. has the quality of touch and feel only; T. P. has this and colour and form: A. P. has the two last and the property taste, whilst P. P. has the last three and as its own inalienable characteristics the quality of odour. V, T, A, P, exist in two forms one subtle and eternal [2] and the other gross and non-eternal.[3] The former is the ultimate supersensible unit or minimum [4] and the latter is sensible matter formed by the aggregation [5] of the ultimate units according to a definite order of combination, *viz.*, binaries or couplets (*Dvyaṇuka*) and Ternaries (*Trasareṇu*). At this last stage matter becomes theoretically fit for perception,[6] or as it is called *Bhūta*, though in practice it only becomes perceivable when it becomes large and consists of many parts.[7] Thus as we have seen the subtle *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇu* itself possesses and produces the four kinds of qualities in gross

[1] Water may be smelt, but if so it is due to the presence of solid matter in it. Pure water is without odour. "Earth" does not mean only what is popularly so called but any solid substance, *e.g.*, flesh, flower, fruit in so far as the same are solids. Both earthly, that is gross sensible, fire and air are compounds.

[2] Sūkṣma and Nitya: existing even during the dissolution of the world.

[3] Sthūla, Anitya; arising only on the "creation" of the world.

[4] Carama Avayavī or Paramāṇu.

[5] Saṃyoga.

[6] Pratyakṣa yogya.

[7] Mahat and has many Avayavas. Vaiśe., IV. 1. 6.

Pṛthivī or *Pṛthivī-Bhūta*[1] (P.B.) It has therefore colour and form (*Rūpa*) and the rest, but its form is not such as can be apprehended by the senses.[2] When the object becomes large and has many parts, and has form in itself, it becomes an object of visual perception. For the mere existence of form in a thing is not enough for its being perceived by the eye. To be perceivable it must possess such form as brings it within the range of our normal sense-capacity.[3] The Paramāṇus or Material Minima have infrasensible mobility, form, taste, and smell, which originate these qualities in sensible matter as the gross object of perception.

The first Standard in its description of the *Paramāṇus* omits one quality namely Sound (*Śabda*) which is also perceived by a single and special sense namely hearing. For it does not regard sound as a property of discrete sensible things. It may be eliminated from all of them for they all may be conceived as absolutely silent. Sound may be said to be common to all things, in that it may be produced by means of any of them but at the same time there is no sensible thing which cannot exist without it. But though sound is not a property of the discrete sensible it must, as a quality which is not subjective, inhere in a Reality and that Reality is the Continuum or Ether (Ākāśa). The sense of hearing is essentially of the same nature as Ether itself, and so with the other senses which are essentially the same as the stimuli themselves. The sensations produced by these stimuli existing in the Continuum (*Ākāśa*) are taken up and co-ordinated by the Mind which is here called *Manas* and passed on by it to the Self (*Ātmā*) in which Consciousness inheres.

[1] Bhūta is the nearest expression for the sensible matter of science.

[2] Udbhūta.

[3] That is Rūpa-viśeṣa or Udbhūta-Rūpa. Thus the pollen dust of scented flowers floating in the wind excite the sense of smell but not that of sight.

§ 8

In the second Standard (Sāṃkhya-yoga), Matter is not, as in the preceding Standard, something which, either in gross or subtle form, is eternally separate and distinct from Mind. In the second Standard Mind and Matter are phenomenally distinct, but are in their ground and during the dissolution of the universe, one. That is they are each transformations [1] and modes of the one Natural Principle [2] from which both evolve when such Principle is associated with the Selves [3] who are Consciousness. According to this doctrine of evolution [4] the cause evolves into the effect and yet, as cause, remains what it is. As effect it is modified that is the effect is the cause modified. All which exists is a transformation of one substance, their cause. Causation is transformation; cause and effect being different positions of the same thing in the time sequence, the antecedent position being the cause and the consequent position the effect. The Natural principle as the source of Mind and Matter has three factors or *Guṇas*— *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*. The meaning of these is simple but has been obscured. The Natural Principle, which is a principle of unconsciousness, works in association with Consciousness which is itself quiescent. What is its effect? It may do one or other of two things. It may obscure Consciousness, in varying degree, or it may similarly reveal Consciousness. When it is said that *Sattva* "reveals" Consciousness what is meant is that it does so relative to the operation of Tamas. Consciousness is self-revealing.[5] The Natural Principle is an obscuring and negating one (for the *Guṇas* are ever inseparate) but not always in the same degree. In so far as and to the extent that it suppresses the specifically obscuring factor

[1] Vikṛti. [2] Prakṛti. [3] Puruṣas.
[4] Pariṇāma. [5] Svaprakāśa.

(*Tamas*) it reveals Consciousness and is called *Sattva Guṇa*. In so far and to the extent that it suppresses the revealing factor (*Sattva*), it obscures Consciousness and is called *Tamas*. But both these actions involve activity and this is the *Rajas Guṇa*.[1] As all which is in the effect is in the cause, and as the effect is the cause modified, it follows that these three Factors are factors of Mind and Matter and the whole universe is composed thereof. In some things one factor more prevails and in varying degree than in others. Thus *Tamas* most prevails in what is called gross inorganic matter, and yet also even here in varying degree. But even in such former Matter *Sattva* is not altogether absent, for *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas* never exist separately from one another. It follows then that this inorganic Matter also reveals consciousness in its degree. When we pass to the lowest forms of vegetable life there is a greater display of *Sattva* though there is *Tamas* in very great degree. As ascent is made through higher vegetable, lower animal and higher animal forms until we arrive at Man, *Sattva Guṇa* (revealing Consciousness) more and more increases and *Tamas Guṇa* lessens. In Man the increase is observed to range from the rudest of primitive men to the Yogin whose consciousness is united with the Supreme Consciousness.

The order of evolution of what are called the Tattvas shows the development of the various mental and material principles. The evolution is not a temporal but a logical one. All the evolved principles are immanent but latent in the ultimate Natural Principle. By evolution they become manifest. In this Standard start is made with the association of the two Principles of Consciousness (the many *Puruṣas*) and Unconsciousness (the one *Prakṛti*), the first of which is inactive and eternally changeless, and the second is eternally active. Change actually takes place in the Natural Principle,

[1] Rajas makes Tamas active to suppress Sattva and makes Sattva active to suppress Tamas.

though owing to the association of Consciousness with the latter, change seems to be observed there also. What is evolved? The experience of past worlds. Everything which will appear is already there potentially in the Natural Principle. On the dissolution of the previous universe all is merged in the Natural Principle and becomes a mere *Saṃskāra* or tendency, which, in its most fundamental form, is a disposition towards manifestation as the world of finite experience. In this general disposition lie implicit all the particular tendencies and experiences which manifest as the world of man, animal, vegetable and inorganic matter. How and in what manner does the evolution of tendency into manifested form take place? In the first place by the autodynamic evolution of the Principles (*Tattva*) which constitute all manifested being. The first production of the association of Consciousness and Unconsciousness and therefore the first transformation of the Natural Principle is the Principle (*Tattva*) called *Mahat*[1] or *Buddhi*. To understand this state most easily we should go to our own individual experience which is a microcosmic form of what appears in the world at large. When a man (say X) drops into dreamless slumber he is in the state of dissolution (*Laya*).[2] Let us suppose that he very gradually awakes from his slumber and slowly regains his waking consciousness. The first experience is a vague one of *mere being*, with a sense of limitation no doubt, but as yet without defined *centre*. Thus the sleeper has first the experience of being without the experience that it is *he* X who is that being. He is not yet to himself an "I" (*Aham*). There is a vague sense of awareness without reference to a conscious self. Then it comes to him "It is

[1] Mahat=great or massive: a good description for the experience is a massive one. Another derivation however of the word is from Maghas or Light.

[2] This dreamless state (*Suṣupti*) is not as some suppose the same as Liberation (*Mokṣa*).

I (X) who went to sleep and am now awaking. The sense of limitation is deepened. Then he X observes with greater and greater detail the *things* around him and takes up to-day the thread of experience from yesterday, interrupted by sleep. And so with the universe. It falls into dreamless sleep in the Natural Principle and passing through the dreaming state awakens again to the world. It is again to be remembered that in the first state or *Buddhi* there is in addition to *Buddhi* as it is in itself all other principles and experiences in a latent state. A person in the first state of awakening from dreamless slumber has only a vague sense of being. But therein lies implicit the experience of all particulars which that person has had or will have.[1] So in the second state in which the sense of I (*Ahaṃ*) emerges—a principle called the "I—maker" (*Ahaṃkāra*) there is patent both *Buddhi* and *Ahaṃkāra* and there is latent all other principles and experiences and so on with the rest of the Principles (*Tattva*) to which I now turn and which have both a cosmic and individual, or macrocosmic and microcosmic aspect.

The first sprouting of the seed of Tendency in Substance as the Natural Principle (*Prakṛti*) is that transformation of it which is called *Mahat* or *Buddhi*. Here the cosmic tendency *Saṃskāra* as *Avidyā* or the ignorance of the whole which renders knowledge of the section possible is actualised.[2] This form of Cosmic Energy is the first manifested form of volition towards definiteness of being and direction of evolution. There is at this stage no finite centre but a mere undefined experience of being (the first mere awareness of the awakening

[1] There is a particular experience which Western literature might call "hypnagogic" but to me real in which the world is known and understood without being seen in its form as particulars. It may occur "accidentally" but I was told of a Yogī who knew how to bring it about.

[2] The Bhāṣya quotes Bārṣaganya Ṛṣi as saying that the true or whole view of the Guṇas that is Cosmic Power is not had in ordinary experience. What we call the present view of a thing is only a cross section of the whole in which past, present and future unite.

sleeper) containing within it the potency of every definite form which is ultimately to evolve from it. It is as if the Will to Become assumes definite shape and direction and decides on a definite line of evolution. *Mahat* however as a state of Cosmic volition is merely a massive determination to change in which the "How" and the "What" of the operation are still implicit. Substance then transforms Itself into a Centre. This is the stage of the individualising principle, the self-arrogating,[1] "I making" principle called *Ahaṃkāra* or *Asmitā Tattva*. This Cosmic Ego or centre of operation in the Cosmic Stuff must be distinguished from the individual Ego, who only appears with the completed evolution of all the psychic and physical principles. From the individualising Principle in which the self as *Buddhi* and *Ahaṃkāra* or psychic functioning have as their object an experience of limited general being in which all particulars are implicitly contained, we pass to the stage in which those particulars become explicit. There is evolved first and together that aspect of mind (*Manas*) which is the chief and controller of the senses (*Indṛya*), the ten senses of perception and action (*Jñānendṛya* and *Karmendṛya*) and the five *Tanmātras* which are generals of the sense particulars or universals. These *Tanmātras* take the place in this system of the *Paramāṇus* of the first. They will be found compared in detail earlier in the section "Mind". They are the subtle form of matter and from these by compounding and accretion of mass, gross matter (*Bhūta*) is produced namely that fivefold form [2] of the one Substance when sensible, and which affects the senses in five different ways as Sound, Touch, Colour and Form,[3] Taste, and Smell [4] through

[1] Abhimāna.

[2] As Ākāśa ("Ether"), Vāyu ("Air"), Tejas ("Fire"), Ap ("Water"), and Pṛthivī ("Earth").

[3] The two go together. No form is perceived unless there is colour.

[4] Śabda, Sparśa, Rūpa, Rasa, Gandha.

the corresponding senses of hearing, touch, vision, taste and smell. From the subjective standpoint each form of Matter is the corresponding psychosis objectified. From an objective standpoint the five forms of Matter are five forms of motion. "Earth" and the rest are at the lowest or gross end of the scale. Earth (*Pṛthivī*), the characteristic of which is obstruction, is that form of motion which produces cohesion, whilst at the highest end Ether (*Ākāśa*) the characteristic of which is non-obstruction, being the medium in which all other things and motions are, is non-obstructive all-directed motion, radiating in all directions. Between these is first locomotive motion (*Vāyu*) upward motion giving rise to expansion (*Tejas*) and downward motion giving rise to contraction (*Ap*).[1]

As previously stated the Śākta system may, in a general way, be understood if we accept the Sāṃkhya scheme of the evolution of the 24 Tattvas but in a Monistic sense. In lieu of the many selves (*Puruṣas*) there is one Supreme Self who is Śiva the God or Good, and in lieu of the Natural Principle or Prakṛti there is the Power (*Śakti*) [2] of God or Śiva represented under feminine form as His Consort. The "tender" [3] Prakṛti, as the Sāṃkhyas called Her, was separate from and independent of the Selves, but Power (Śakti) and the Possessor of Power (Śaktimān) or Śiva are one. Even the phrase Possessor of Power is an accommodation, for in their ultimate sense,[4] Śakti = Śiva. Each therefore of the Principles (*Tattvas*) and forms or *Vikṛti* of *Prakṛti* in the Sāṃkhya are forms of power (*Śakti*) of the Supreme Power (*Mahā-śakti*). Therefore the universe which these principles compose, is self-evolving

[1] In the Tantra-Śāstras each of the Bhūtas is symbolised by a colour and form. Thus earth (*Pṛthivī*) is yellow and is represented by a square cube to denote the notion of solidity. The same notion of solidity is denoted by the elephant who upholds the cube.

[2] As Cit-Śakti that is Consciousness as Power and Māyā-Śakti that is Power as Māyā or as instrumental and material cause.

[3] Komala. [4] that is as Consciousness: Śakti as Cidrūpiṇī.

Śakti or Power. God in one aspect, that is as Consciousness-Power (Śakti) evolves as the Universe, and yet in another as Consciousness (Śiva) remains unchanged.[1] What is further peculiar to this system is that it adds twelve further Principles or Tattvas to the twenty-four. It explains how both Prakṛti and Puruṣa, as understood in this system, were themselves evolved. But as these earlier Tattvas deal with the evolution of consciousness before and as a preliminary to the manifestation of the world of duality it is dealt with in the volume Maha-Māyā on Consciousness (*Cit*). The nature of Matter as above described is not affected. Matter is a form of the Supreme Power and as such is composed of the five forms of motion above described.

As already explained [2] Śakta doctrine or the Doctrine of Power (Śakti) is a form of Vedāntic monism which possessing elements of its own uses also others drawn from the Sāṃkhya. As regards these elements Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika teaches *Yaugika-sṛṣṭi* [3]; Sāṃkhya-yoga teaches *Yaugika-sṛṣṭi* [3] and *Parināma-sṛṣṭi*;[4] Vedānta teaches *Yaugika-sṛṣṭi*,[3] *Pariṇāma-sṛṣṭi* [4] and *Vivarta-sṛṣṭi*.[5] Śākta doctrine teaches in its own way also all three though being a practical system of Theology and Ritual its own *Vivarta-sṛṣṭi* is conceived in a different manner [6] and it adds an *Adṛṣṭa-sṛṣṭi* up to the appearance of Puruṣa and Prakṛti Tattvas according to the scheme of the thirty-six

[1] Just as in Sāṃkhya one Tattva evolves into another and remains what it was as cause. Thus Buddhi produces Ahaṃkāra and yet remains Buddhi.

[2] See "Reality" earlier.

[3] Creation by combination of previously given Elements.

[4] Creation by evolution; the product existing in a potential form prior to actual manifestation.

[5] Creation where the originating Reality remains what it is and yet brings about the effect according to Advaita Vedānta apparently; according to Śākta practical doctrine, really.

[6] See last note.

Tattvas.[1] Its conception of "Matter" however is not substantially different from the Sāṃkhyan and Vedāntic views above described.

§ 9

We have seen that in the search after the ideal limit of discontinuous (*i.e.*, granular) matter, we must pass through a series [*e.g.*, "body," "particle," "molecule," "atom," "sub-atom" (or Electron) and "prime atom"], and also that we have to pass through another series in our search after the ideal limit of continuous matter (*i.e.*, homogeneous, non-granular, seamless) through Ethers of increasing subtlety until we come to the Cidākāśa or Ether of Consciousness itself. The physical unit in Science (as distinguished from the chemical unit which is the "atom") is now the Electron (as unit charge of Electricity); but the Electron has a definite mass and dimensions as compared, for example, with those of an atom of Hydrogen; and since it is so (*Sāvayava* and *parimita*), it cannot be the ultimate unit. G. Johnstone Stoney, who invented the name 'Electron' says[2] "Here, then, the electron is introduced to us as a new entity. Is not it, too, a complex system within which internal events are ever taking place; And when this question can be answered shall we not be in the presence of the inter-active *parts* of an electron? And do not the same questions arise with respect to these? For there is no appearance of there being any limit to the minuteness of the scale upon which Nature works. Nothing in Nature seems to be too small to have parts incessantly active among themselves." So the Electron need not be partless.

Coming then to the other series, we note this that since scientific Ether is a medium which is capable of being stressed

[1] See "Śakti and Śākta" where this scheme is explained.

[2] See Preface to "The Electron Theory," by E. E. Fournier d'Albe (1909), p. XX.

and strained (*i.e.*, changed in form or configuration), we must be able to conceive "grains" or elements in this so-called continuum itself; for, change of configuration presupposes the existence of parts which *have* a configuration or relative positions with respect to one another. Thus it is impossible to conceive a vortex-strain in a sea of Ether otherwise placid, unless this sea is composed of grains or elements which can change their places. There can thus be no halt at scientific Ether, just as there can be no halt at the scientific Electron. In fact, physicists have sometimes imagined a granular structure for Ether; as Professor Osborne Reynolds who in his "The Sub-Mechanics of the Universe" conceives Ether as a sea of indefinite extent composed of uniform spherical grains (smaller than the electrons) which are in relative motion with one another. Strain-forms pass through them as waves pass over water. A Commentator on this theory says:[1] "Matter is a persistent strain-form flitting through a universal sea of æther: we have explained matter in terms of æther. Æther in its turn is described as a fairly close-packed conglomerate of minute grains in continual oscillation: we have explained the properties of the æther. So be it. But what of the grains of which the æther is composed? Are they 'strong in solid singleness' like the one-time atoms of Lucretius? Or have they parts, within which opens a new field of complexity? Of what substance are they made? Has a new æther more subtle than the first to be invoked to explain their properties, and a third éther to explain the second? The mind refuses to rest content at any step in the process. An ultimate explanation of the simplest fact remains, apparently for ever, unattainable."

An ultimate explanation in terms of science of That Power Whose ways are inscrutable (*anirvācya*) is not to be

[1] W. C. D. Whetham, "The Recent Development of Physical Science" (1904), p. 294.

thought of. But, on the other hand, in seeking after the ultimate ground of things, it is best not to be groping in the dark or chasing after elusive theories. The Ether of Science, for example, has now become something of which it is not possible to form a physical conception.[1] What is it like? Is it stagnant or moving? What are its properties? These questions cannot now be answered; the only conception of Ether as a medium is this that it satisfies a number of differential equations associated with the names of Clerk-Maxwell, Lorentz, Larmor and others. Some physicists are therefore seriously asking if such an Ether is not a mathematical fiction only. Even the positive evidence of the Hertzian electric waves and wireless telegraphy does not convince some minds as to the real existence of Ether. At any rate, if a real Ether should exist, it is a hopeless task to give a rendering of it in mechanical and physical terms. The same difficulty meets us in the other direction. The Chemical atom has now been weighed and measured; the Kinetic Theory of Gases as well as other means now enable us to count the number of atoms or molecules in, say, a cubic inch. The number of particles in a cubic inch of air in the ordinary state of the atmosphere is represented by a number which is approximately 3 followed by 20 cyphers. Now, these particles having definite weights and dimensions cannot obviously be the physical minima; in fact it has now been possible to go beyond the chemical atoms and discover the sub-atoms which also in their turn have been weighed and measured. We are therefore impelled to push farther. The

[1] Prof. Emile Picard, "La Science Moderne," 134, after pointing out that bizarre theories and contradictions have lessened the enthusiasm and provoked some discouragement amongst scientists says: "Il a pu même paraitre à quelques uns qu'il était étrange d'expliquer le connu par l'inconnu, le visible par l'invisible, d'imaginer par exemple, comme on l'a dit, un éther que nul aeil humain ne verra jamais." Then in the usual way he refers to it as an useful image provided that we do not pretend to have attained reality. But its utility if real is a guarantee of its reality.

common tendency in science to-day [1] is to regard the Prime Atom as a sort of strain (probably, rotational, gyrostatic) in Ether. This, however, is something which has been dematerialised. According to this view, then, an electron or unit charge of electricity is a centre of intrinsic strain, probably of a gyrostatic type, in an æther, which is also the medium in which are propagated the waves of light and wireless telegraphy. Moreover, the electron is identical with the sub-atom which is common to all the different chemical elements, and forms the universal basis of matter. Matter, at any rate in its relation to other matter at a distance, is in this view an electrical manifestation; and electricity is a state of intrinsic strain in a universal medium. That medium is prior to matter, and therefore not necessarily expressible in terms of matter; it is sub-natural if not super-natural. Matter itself therefore becomes Non-matter in motion. But notwithstanding all the equations in Hydro-dynamics, it is not known why and how a Non-matter can move gyrostatically or otherwise. The physicist's enquiry or quest in both directions (*i.e.*, continuum and atom) therefore brings him sooner or later to a confession of ignorance; his attempt to explain matter in terms of Ether is only explaining the unknown by the still more unknown.

We therefore require a surer ground than theory and mathematical analysis to go upon in our quest. We find that surer ground in experience. We must start from and upon that and rest in that also. Theory and mathematical analysis have their use, but only if they proceed upon the firm ground of Experience. If it should posit any Ether, that Ether must have its warrant in Experience; if there be any strain-centres in it, our Experience must be able to vouch

[1] Recent Development of Physical Science, p. 282. See also Sir Oliver Lodge's "Modern Views on Electricity" where Electricity is regarded by him as a condition of Ether.

for them. If there be any stresses or energies, these also must be such as our Experience can guarantee. In one word, Experience must be in a position to stand surety for all the essentials of any theory, pending its actual verification by Experience in all the details.

Now, we firstly ask this: Is a continuum *given* in our Experience? If so, what is it? Our Experience, as we have pointed out before, is a universe apart from the action of pragmatic interests which narrows it down to particular sections or segments such as (the noticing of the star Sirius in the sky on a clear night). Now, this world of Experience or measurable is felt by us as a manifestation in Cit. This Cit is the boundless *plenum* or *continuum* (the Brahman which means the Immeasurable, the Immense) in which, and of which, the whole manifestation is. This therefore is the basis of all *continua* that we may require and search for. It is the basis and prototype of the Ether (or Ethers) of Science, of Space and of Time. *Cit* is no theory; its being a continuum is not theory. It is the Fact.

We secondly ask this: Is any strain-centre given in our Experience? If so, what is it? How does it form? Is it permanent or passing? Does it change so long as it remains? The key to all this is in actual experience. I am directly aware of myself as a stress-and-strain centre or *Jīva* (strain presupposing stress), inasmuch as I know myself as a "point-of-view" distinguishing myself from the rest of my universe and yet as being its point of reference; and also, practically or dynamically, as a centre of power at which and through which forces converge and diverge (resulting in incessant actions and reactions) throughout the universe. Thus my being the unifying Principle of apperception, and a Centre of Power is a fact. It is also a fact that this Principle and Centre presupposes and accepts a universe in which operate similar other Principles and Centres. For,

there can be and there is no stressing for a solitary Centre in a perfectly homogeneous continuum. Plurality of correlated centres is therefore a necessity. Nay; I directly experience it. Whenever I function, I feel that my functioning has relation to, is addressed to, and conditioned by the functions of other Centres. In other words, my being a member of a joint stress-system to which others also contribute is a direct experience. Whether or not those other Centres all live, feel and think as I do, is another matter; but *all* are stress-centres; my having a universe of Experience means my finding myself as one in a system of stress-centres; and each stress-centre or point of Power (Śakti) is also necessarily a strain centre, *i.e.*, a point that has, through that Principle in Being which is *Asmitā* or *Ahaṃkāra*, individualised and distinguished itself somehow on account of its manner of stressing.[1] What therefore impresses me as Matter must ultimately be such stress-and-strain centres in rapport with me as a centre. The atoms of Chemistry, the "sub-atoms" and so forth of physical theory are only more or less crude guesses or approximations to these Centres. These guesses may be invalid in part; but there cannot be any doubt about the Centres of Stress in *rapport* with us which our Experience directly gives. *Cit* as the Primary Continuum, and *Bindu-Śakti* as the Primary Individual, are not therefore unknown; with respect to them, we cannot pretend to say "we are ignorant".

Further, to make joint partnership and co-ordinate interaction possible, all the centres in my universe must be like me in all the essentials. In this sense, there is a fundamental truth in Leibtnitz' theory of monads. Any two monads, A and B, are alike if we take into account both what is latent

[1] That every person or thing including the minutest coherent particle of matter is regarded as a self follows from the fact that every thing which exists including both subtle and gross matter is derived from and is a product of the individualising or centre-making cosmic Power which is called Asmitā or Ahaṃkāra.

(potential) and what has become patent (kinetic) in each. Dynamically, it could not be otherwise.

Take a particle of dust here on earth and an incandescent gaseous particle in a distant star. They seem to be unconnected. But really each expresses in its way the entire stress-system which the universe is. So it is said that man and all other centres is a microcosm (*Kṣudra-Brahmāṇda*). A passage from the Viśva-sāra-Tantra says *Yad ihāsti tad anyatra*—"what is here is elsewhere"—*Yannehāsti na tat Kvacit*—"what is not here is nowhere". To understand this passage we must include both the latent and patent power as potency, and power as manifested. The given position, composition, properties and relations of the one cannot be *completely* understood without taking into account the entire stress-system of the universe. In this way, the whole universe is given in a particle. A given particle, however, in virtue of its peculiar position in the universal stress-system, has or appears to have a given set or round of operations which constitute its own *Karma* and determine its separate individuality. These are its patent or kinetic *Karma*. But in virtue of its peculiar position in the universe-system, it has also the potentiality of other operations which are its latent or potential *Karma*. A load which is lifted from the ground and placed at the top of a building, has a potential energy by virtue of its position;[1] so when the load again falls to the ground it does work on account of that potential energy. A string put to the bow has thus potential energy by virtue of its position. So on and so forth. Hence, any particle or any centre in the universe has, besides its kinetic or patent *Karma*, a store of potential energy by virtue of its place in the cosmic system. As in the examples of the load and the bow-string, the stock of potential energy is determined by previous kinetic actions, *e.g*, lifting of the first

[1] Kinetic Energy is Energy of Motion, while Potential Energy is Energy of Position or Configuration.

and stretching of the second. The potential energy again determines future *Karma*. The potential energy which is not patent until it expresses itself in kinetic action, is called *Adṛṣṭa* (lit. what is not seen). Every Centre has thus its *Karma* and *Adṛṣṭa*, which both completely considered, give us the entire cosmic Energy. Hence, any Centre, A = any other Centre, B; because, A's whole kinetic energy+A's whole potential energy = B's whole kinetic energy+B's whole potential energy = whole cosmic energy = Brahman (the Immense, the Whole or *Pūrṇa*).

It follows from the above analysis that the difference between me (as a Centre or *Jīva*) and a particle of dust is *not* in the *sum* of the Energy which I represent and it represents, but it is in the peculiar *distribution* of that sum-total between kinetic energy and potential energy; that is, I divide the sum-total into a certain proportion of kinetic energy and potential energy which is *not* that of the particle of dust; my *Karma* and *Adṛṣṭa* are thus *distributively* different from those of the particle. And this special proportioning of *Karma* and *Adṛṣṭa* on my part and on its, depends on, or is incidental to, our respective positions in the cosmic system. Position again is determined by *Karma* and *Adṛṣṭa* (*i.e.*, their proportion); *Adṛṣṭa* is determined by *Karma*, and *Karma partly* by *Adṛṣṭa*. And this cyclic causation is beginningless. The Vedāntists say that *Karma* is *partly* determined by *Adṛṣṭa*, because, contrary to the rigid determinism of Science, the Vedāntic position is this that *Karma*, even in a so-called material centre, cannot have its essential freedom or spontaneity completely veiled and suppressed. *Cit-Śakti* is free, and through every centre of its operation, its essential freedom must also vent itself, as also the other fundamental aspects of it, *viz.*, Being-Feeling-Consciousness-Bliss; such expression may however be, and commonly is, subject to the operation of its own correlate *Māyā-Śakti* or *finitising* principle by which

its essential nature may be variously veiled and treated, but never completely suppressed or negatived.

Position in the cosmic scheme is position in Space, position in Time and position in the tissue of Causality. In one word, it means place in the curve of the life of the world. And this, as we have seen, is determined by *Karma* which produces *Adṛṣṭa*. *Karma*, as already mentioned is ultimately of *Cit-Śakti* and as such its freedom or spontaneity can in no case be completely veiled or effaced. An atom, for example, was formerly treated as a hard particle which moved in obedience to external forces only and had no choice of its own, no energy of its own (*i.e.*, apart from external impacts or impressed force). But the atom of modern science is a complex system of sub-atoms, and in virtue of the motions and positions of these latter within itself, it possesses an almost limitless stock of kinetic and potential energy in a state of relatively stable equilibrium; the energy thus stored up, and as evidenced by radio-activity, is so great that if we could make it available to us and control it, then we should be able to do all the work of the world by its means alone, without requiring to burn coal to produce steam, electricity, etc., or to make chemical explosives. Control over the intra-atomic energy is a tremendous *Siddhi* or Power. We may illustrate by a Vedic parable which says that Indra (*i.e.*, for illustration let us suppose *Cit-Śakti*) let loose the cows which had been shut up in a cave by the Aśura (Pani, *i.e.*, Māyā-Śakti). The cows are the forces which are stored up and concealed in everything (by the Veiling Principle in Nature) which is therefore like a cave. Now, what about this vast amount of intra-atomic energy? Does not an atom possess spontaneous action on account of its own store of power? Can it not choose to move and work in a manner which is *not* determined by the external influences alone? That it can is proved by the evidence of radio-activity which, as

Sir E. Rutherford and others define it, is a *spontaneous* activity on the part of the atom which apparently does not depend on, and cannot be influenced by, the ordinary chemical and physical means (chemical action, great heat and cold and so forth). Precisely by such spontaneous activity, the atoms give out their radiations and emanations which are of enormous dynamic value, and they evolve and transmute. It appears therefore that the atom has its own work (*Karma*) and tendency or *Saṃskāra*. It is describing its curve of life according to the equation of its *Karma* (including *Adṛṣṭa*) as I am doing. It may be that on a future day, it will be possible to give a mechanical account of the atomic system in terms of the motions and positions of the sub-atoms in it, just as we now give a mechanical account of the solar system. But even then the question will only be shifted. In the first place, that mechanical account (*i.e.*, account in terms of Newton's Laws of Motion and their corollaries) will be possible only by "limitation of the actual data" or by abstract analysis. The concrete, the actual always baffles attempts at a mechanical explanation; it is only the abstract, the conceptual obtained by "limitation of the data" which has so long been amenable to mechanical or deterministic treatment (which begins by assuming that things are inert in themselves and have therefore no spontaneity). It should be remembered that the machine-made "things" of Physics are not exactly the things as they exist and as they act. In the second place, supposing that Physics is able to prepare a mechanics of the intra-atomic system in terms of the motions and positions of the sub-atoms, the question of "inertia or spontaneity?" will still arise with regard to the sub-atoms themselves, *i.e.*, with regard to the total activity of the components of the sub-atoms (for, the sub-atoms cannot be the ultimate units). There cannot be rest until we come to the *Bindu-Śakti* which, as a centre of operation of the

Cit-Śakti, must be essentially a centre of spontaneous or free energising. Man's own experience of himself gives him, it is said, the warrant for so thinking. The appearance of intra-atomic energy has, it is true, disturbed the quiet faith of the physicist in conservation of Energy, for it has upset all his calculations so far made, as it has come as a new factor never before suspected. But the doctrine in so far as it maintained that the sum-total of energy in the universe always remained constant[1] was unpsychological and therefore untrue; no absolute bounds can be set to the magnitude of Energy in the universe which is *Cit-Śakti*; *e.g.*, we cannot draw a line and say that the sum-total of Energy can only be so great as that, but can never exceed that. The Mother Power (*Mahā-Śakti*) cannot be circumscribed and measured; and the symbol pictures Her as nude.[2] 'Unmeasured' and 'immeasurable' are Her true characteristics. Man's Will, for example, is a tap through which new Energy is being continually drafted into the universe: He is no mere "points-man" on the cortex of the brain switching off and directing existing energies therein: He is in Vedānta a creator. At any rate, he draws upon a Bank which Physics was not prepared to charter.

Lastly, if he interrogates his own experience he finds that the generic and homogeneous condition precedes the particularised and heterogeneous condition (though the recognition of the former may be a later phenomenon). He finds also that particularised and heterogeneous states of experience have a tendency (which is sometimes periodic) to lapse back into the undifferentiated state from which they sprang. A *Śāmānyāvasthā* (undifferentiated condition) giving birth to a *Viśeṣāvasthā*

[1] See Emile Picard, La Science Moderne, 133 *et seq.*

[2] The Mother is said to be space-clad (Digaṃbarī) because She is Herself free from the covering of Māyā though wielding that Power: Her Body is dark blue because She pervades the World. See A. Avalon's "Hymn to Kālī". In Kamalā Kānta's Sādhakarañjana it is said that "Māyā is the Ākāra (form) of Nirākara (formless) Brahman. The Śūnya or 'void' is formless until encircled by Māyā".

(differentiated condition), and this again returning to its ground—is a fact of experience, and a fundamental fact. Empirical psychologists in the West of the last generation were too busy with their "atoms" of sensation, their "laws of association and synthesis" to recognise this order. To-day, however, we know better. Now, what does the fundamental fact referred to mean? It means this: Man as well as every other centre is a system of tensions or tendencies (*Saṃskāras*). These may periodically (or at times) be (normally or by effort) in equilibrium (*Sāmyāvasthā*). What does *this* mean again? It means not that the tensions themselves have severally vanished (so that his energy then becomes a sum of zeros), but that their resultant ("algebraic sum" as the mathematician would say) then becomes in-effective. This again means that then his dynamic system lacks a special direction of doing work. This is its *Sāmyāvasthā* which is an undirected (or "scalar") condition.[1] But presently by the "catalytic" action of Cit-Śakti this spell of equilibrium is broken.[2] It is to be noted that without such spontaneous action or *Saṃkalpa* of the Cit-Śakti, there is no reason why *Sāmya* or equilibrium of the entire cosmos once established should again be broken, and also why *Vaiṣamya* or dis-equilibrium once set agoing should again revert to equilibrium.[3] By the breaking of the spell, lines of force or directions of tendency effectively manifest themselves. These are the Jatājāla of Vyomakeśa beginning His cosmic dance. These directed tendencies are in mathematical parlance "vector" quantities doing work in definite directions.

[1] *e.g.*, in Suṣupti, or dreamless sleep, Samādhi or Ecstasy, the state of just waking, the state just before falling asleep, etc.

[2] *Cf.* the meaning of the Gāyatrī-Mantra in which Cit is thought of as impelling our Buddhi (*i.e.*, stress-system) in all its states. In catalytic action one thing affects another by its presence without itself being affected. And this is the action of Puruṣa in the Sāṃkhya.

[3] In this respect the Sāṃkhyan doctrine of Prakṛti and Vikṛti is rightly criticised by the Vedānta.

Now, this fundamental of Experience is a fundamental of the universe also, for the latter *is* the former. Taking Matter, therefore, we can say that the grains of Matter of various grades (prime atoms, sub-atoms, atoms, molecules, etc.) are born out of an homogeneous or undifferential Substance; that all their differing tensions arise out of the dis-equilibrium of that primordial stuff; and that after their varied *Karma*, *Adṛṣṭa* and *Saṃsṛtī* (evolution), they at last come under the influence of the Cosmic Cit-Śakti or Lord as the Supreme Self (*Parāhantā*) to equilibrate their tensions, and thus return to their starting ground. Modern Physics too in working out its Law of Dissipation of Energy contemplates such periodicity in cosmic equilibrium and dis-equilibrium.[1] Hence Matter is a periodically appearing and disappearing, (and evolving while in appearance), strain-form in "non-matter". The first undirected condition of the stress-system is called, in the Mantra-Śāstra, *Nāda*; which passes into that which is called *Bindu* in which it is about to manifest itself in definite directions or lines of force, (for, without points, directions or lines have no meaning), and its manifestation on its threefold division into Known, Knowing, and Known is the multiple varied and finite universe, the limited expression of infinite Power. Modern Physics too, it may be noticed, cannot do without super-natural agency (*i.e.*, miracle) in explaining the appearance of dis-continuities in the homogeneous continuum and their disappearance in it (if indeed they should disappear).

The existence of polarities (*e.g.*, that between the positive and negative charges of Electricity) by which attractions and repulsions in the universe are sought to be explained, are grounded in Experience as the fundamental *dvaita* (dichotomy) in Consciousness as Śiva-Śakti, Static-Kinetic, Cit-Māyā,

[1] See Herbert Spencer's work in this connection.

Subject-Object, "*Ahaṃ-Idaṃ*".[1] Attraction between the dissimilar poles means their tendency to return to the condition of Whole (*Pūrṇa*) whose aspects they are and yet from which they appear to have become separate. Attraction (*Rāga*) is thus the return-current tending to lead to the *Pūrṇāvasthā*: in the "conscious" plane it appears in its form as *Rāga* in the sense of Love. So Love makes us whole (*Pūrṇa*). By reason of this coalescing tendency, the Subject ("I") draws towards itself in perception and volition its Object ("This"), so that perceiving and willing is really an act of equating and owning. Śakti in the universe is always tending towards satisfaction (*Ānanda*) and *Ānanda* being Śiva Himself, this cosmic tendency is only the love of the "Divine Pair" (*Divya-Dampati*):[2] the Supreme *Haṃsa* or "Bird" swimming in the Lake of Consciousness. Static and Kinetic Energies also presuppose, require and "complete" each other. But if this return-current or coalescing tendency were not retarded by an opposite current, the universe would at once sink all its distinctions and polarities and there would be no difference or *Bheda*. The world's very existence therefore pre-supposes a *prati-bandhaka* or obstacle to complete union. This *prati-bandhaka* is *Dveṣa* (repulsion). In the "conscious" plane it appears as Hate or Resistance. Similar centres of the same pole thus repel one another. *Their* attraction would give but one pole, one aspect or "half" of Reality; while the meeting of two centres from the opposite poles would give a complete centre of Reality. So one "I" ejects another "I" (*i.e.*, cannot *directly* make an object of it),[3] but readily attracts

[1] See Kāma-kalā-vilāsa and "Śakti and Śākta" where the development is shortly given.

[2] See Kāma-kalā-vilāsa, V.

[3] In the sense that I cannot *directly* know and feel your thoughts and feelings *as such* in your Mind. I have to infer them from what you say or express by your bodily expressions. This is the sense in which "ejecting" is used here.

"this" or "that"; in Biology similar sexes are rivals; in Physics similar "charges" repel each other.

So starting on the ground of our "given" Experience, we are enabled to establish on a sure footing the essentials of a right conception of Matter. To sum up:

(1) The unit of Matter is a stress-and-strain centre ultimately in *Cit* which as Pure Experience is the Perfect Continuum.

(2) The Perfect Continuum of its own power or Śakti becomes first a massive undifferentiated Continuum (*Nāda*).

(3) And then *Bindu* as the condition of Power which manifests as centres or points of differentiated mass.

(4) The mass of a given centre is a function of its motion (*Karma*) which, though subject to position (*Adṛṣṭa*), is also spontaneous.

(5) Consequently, by *Karma* the mass of a centre may accelerate (*i.e.*, change), and it may thus become a different kind of centre, *e.g.*, one kind of Matter may evolve into another kind, into "living" matter, into "feeling" matter, into "thinking" matter.

(6) The "point-charges" have polarities on account of which they attract and repel one another.

(7) Periodically, these strain-centres have a tendency to dissolve in the continuum (*Nāda*), which is their *Pralaya*.

(8) Strain presupposes Stress (Energy), and this is fundamentally *Cit-Śakti* or *Cit* as Power and is unmeasurable.

§ 10

Summing up the teaching of the six systems, the First Standard (Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika) proposes nine *Dravyas* or Entities,

viz., *Kṣiti*, *Ap*, *Tejas*, *Vāyu*, *Ākāśa*, *Kāla*, *Dik*, *Ātman*, *Manas*. Of these, the Ātman or Self is the substratum of consciousness (*caitanya*) and experience (*jñāna*). Hence, if we define an 'objective' reality as that which exists in its own right beyond consciousness and experience, then all the other eight *dravyas* are objective realities. That is, experience or no experience, they exist. They (including mind as *Manas*) are unconscious Principles. So as regards Matter, the First Standard agrees with Western Science in so far as the latter makes it or treats it as an extra-mental reality. There are, however, important points of disagreement between the two also. In the first place, Western Science draws a distinction between Primary qualities and Secondary qualities and regards the former set alone as really inhering in Matter and elements of Matter, whilst, according to it, the Secondary qualities are only effects produced upon a percipient Subject by the Primary set. The First Standard recognises no such partition.[1] The *Guṇas*, *Karmas* and relations exist in the things themselves. For example, Pṛthivī, or matter stimulating the sense of smell, possesses fourteen qualities (*Guṇas*), and these fourteen include what in Western parlance are primary and secondary qualities. Its material *minima* or *Paramāṇus* also possess both sets of qualities, and they originate both these sets in sensible matter because they themselves possess both.[2] One of the fundamental maxims of the First Standard is this: *Kāraṇa-bhāvāt Kārya-bhāvah*.[3] This, as the *Upaskāra* of Śaṃkara-Miśra explains, means—*Kāraṇa-guṇa-pūrvakā hi kārya-guṇa bhavanti*—the *guṇas* in the effect are due to the previous existence of them in the cause.[4] Now Pṛthivī in its gross, or compounded sensible form

[1] See "Reality" *ante*.

[2] The Paramāṇus originate the corresponding senses: thus the Pṛthivī-Paramāṇu produces the sense of smell.

[3] Vaiśeṣika-Darśanam, IV. 1. 3.

[4] Also, Vaiśeṣika, II. 2. 24.

possesses *Rūpa*, *Rasa*, *Gandha* and *Sparśa* or luminous, flavoury, odoriferous and thermal matter.[1] *Pṛthivī* is either eternal (*Nityā*) [2] or non-eternal (*Anityā*). The former is the ultimate unit (*carama avayavī* or *Paramāṇu*) of *Pṛthivī*; the latter is *Pṛthivī* formed by the aggregation (*saṃyoga*) of the ultimate units according to a definite order (*Dvyaṇuka*, *Trasareṇu* and so forth). Though the different schools of interpretation of the First Standard differ as regards the unchangeability or otherwise of the *Guṇas* in the *Nityā Pṛthivī* or *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇu*, yet all agree as regards the possession of the four kinds of *Guṇas* by it. This therefore is *prima facie* an important point of difference between Western Science and the First Standard.

In the second place, the primordial motions and aggregations (*i.e.*, at the time of creation) of the eternal *minima* are explained by the First Standard by an extra-material influence (*i.e.*, by the ripening of the *Adṛṣṭa* of the selves or *Ātmans* and those of the *Paramāṇus* themselves). Hence though regarding the *Paramāṇus* as the material cause of the world, it postulates a spiritual efficient cause also. Western Science has not so far made up its mind as regards this great question. " Uniformitarianism " is becoming an exploded creed not only in Biology and Geology, but in Physics also. That is to say, the physicist can hardly maintain now that the cosmic order has practically existed in the same form from eternity and will continue to do so for ever. He can hardly maintain this creed even as regards what he calls his " fundamentals ". By the Law of Dissipation of Energy all the higher forms of Energy are being dissipated into Heat; and Heat also by its universal radiation is tending to a condition of equilibrium

[1] " Rūpa-rasa-gandha-sparśa-vatī Pṛthivī "—Vaiśeṣika, II. 1. 1.

[2] " Sada-Kāraṇa-vannityam " (Vaiśeṣika, IV, 1. 1.) A Nitya object is defined as a " Sat " or being which has no Kāraṇa or cause. It is self-existent, if a Dravya or Entity; if a Guṇa or property or a Karma, it must be unalterable as existing in its Dravya. Alteration presupposes causation or Kāraṇa.

which, when established, will render all flow or radiation of Heat impossible. Heat is believed to be a motion or quiver (*Spanda*) of the "molecules" of Matter; perfect equilibration of Heat throughout the universe will mean therefore the equalisation of the motions of the molecules of Matter. That is, the molecules will *all* move or quiver equally when perfect equilibrium has been established. But Physics cannot stop at the moving molecules. It must go farther and consider the motions of the Atoms, Sub-atoms and Prime-atoms. In the so-called "atom" of Chemistry there is a vast store of Energy due to the motions of the Sub-atoms, which Energy is also (as is evidenced by Radio-activity) being more or less slowly dissipated. Hence, taking these into account, we come at last to Ether in which certain "strain-forms" (*i.e.*, the electrons, etc.) are moving equally; that will be the state of equilibrium of Ether. Then there will be undifferentiated (*Sajātīya* or *Samāna*) motion, but no differentiated *Vijātīya* or *Viṣama*) motion.[1] But can the Mind stop here too? What is a 'strain-form'? How is it produced? Does not a strain imply an in-equality or heterogeneity in the stuff? The motions of the strain-forms are equalised; but the very *existence* of the strain-forms in different positions in a continuum will imply non-equal motions at the basis of the strain-forms themselves.[2] Hence, either of two positions is possible: (*a*) Say either that cosmic equilibrium is established when the motions of all the elements in the universe *severally* vanish, so that all movements

[1] In the Mantra Śāstra in the four states of Parā, Paśyantī, Madhyama and Vaikharī states of Śakti as Śabda, located in the centres or Cakras (see "Serpent Power"). Motion is first general and undifferentiated (Sāmānya) of which "Om" is the Mantra expression, then special (Viśeṣa) and lastly fully and clearly particularised (spaṣṭatara) as Vaikharī.

[2] Though the strain-forms may be otherwise identical, yet the very fact that they exclude one another and keep to different positions in the Continuum implies that the forces behind them cannot be the same; they have differing *adṛṣṭas* within the meaning of the previous sections.

stop; (*b*) or say that equilibrium is established when the component motions, without severally vanishing, produce a resultant which is nothing or practically so. We say "practically nothing" because the resultant of the cosmic motions (or forces), without being zero, may be an effective something, but a constant—an invariable something. When the resultant is zero, the cosmic system as a whole will not move at all—it will have no evolution (*Pariṇāma*). When the resultant is effective but an invariable something, the cosmic system will continue to move in a given state, which is *Sadṛśa-Pariṇāma*; and so long as the resultant is invariable, the system will not deviate from its given state. This is about the cosmic system as a whole. But what about the component things and elements in it? These being the component forces of the system must also either continue unaltered, or so alter relatively to one another that their resultant may remain unaltered. But this latter alternative will not give us dissolution or *Pralaya*, (to which the scientific principle of Dissipation of Energy also points), for then also, *ex hypothesi*, particular things and groups of things will continue to move and move in varied manners. There will therefore still be an universe (*Saṃsāra*). Hence true dissolution of an universe (*Pralaya*) will imply either the stoppage of all motions distributively and collectively in the universe, or the continuance of all motions, distributively and collectively, in the universe in the same given state of non-manifestation or potentiality (*Avyaktāvasthā*). The first is called *Pariṇāmābhāva*, the second is *Sadṛṣa Pariṇāma*.

Now, so far as the *Paramāṇus* are concerned, the First Standard adopts the first view. The Second Standard (Saṃkhya) adopts the second. The Third Standard (Vedānta) adopts the first view, but dispenses with the *Paramāṇus* as the persistent elements of the universe. It distinguishes between the static (non-moving) and dynamic (moving) aspects of the

world, and believes that Motion may proceed out of Non-motion and lapse back into it. The basis of this belief is Experience.

Western Science is also now dimly conceiving the possibility of the cycle of Appearance (*Srṣṭi*), Continuance (*Sthiti*), and Dissolution[1] (*Laya*); but its ideas are still unsettled on the subject. It deals with Ether and strain-forms in it. But if there should be dissolution (*Laya*), what would become of these? Would Ether be undifferentiated itself, and therefore, without the strain-forms? If so, how can strain-forms arise again? How again can perfect homogeneity be effected in Ether? Does not the final reduction of all strains or heterogeneities in Ether imply a super-natural action—a "miracle," in short? Does not again the appearance of strains in a perfectly homogeneous Ether imply a miracle? Or, in order to avoid the miracle, will it say that the tendency of the existing world is towards perfect equilibration of all energies; but that such perfect equilibration is an infinitely distant event, so that dis-equilibrium and heterogeneities will always continue, though gradually becoming evanescent? Or again, will it take up a position like that of the Second Standard?

For Science these questions are still unanswerable. But She must note this that if, in tracing out the world's curve of life, She makes the curve double upon itself—*i.e.* if the curve going in a certain manner and in a certain direction should turn back and retrace its course—then, to explain such "critical" changes of direction or "nodes" at least, She must invoke the "miracle" She is so anxious to ban. Nothing short of "miracle" or spiritual action will enable her to get heterogeneity out of homogeneity and *vice versa*, disequilibrium out of equilibrium and *vice versa* and evolution

[1] The Devatās of which are Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Rudra and their Śaktis. Srṣṭi and the other two are not merely applicable to the first appearance of the universe but, during its continuance as a whole, manifest as molecular birth, life, and death.

from involution and *vice versa*. Spiritual action is a miracle to her, because She still makes Matter and Spirit *two*; but if they be *one*, then the action of the former is really the action of the latter, and then there is either no miracle or all is then miracle, for the commonest of experiences is so.

The First Standard believes in this commonest "miracle" of spiritual action upon Matter, though for it Matter is a substance different from the Spirit or Ātman. During *Laya*, the *Paramāṇus* are dissociated and stationary (*acala*). For their first *Priyā* (*i.e.*, motion) they require *Prayatna-vadātma-saṃyoga*, *i.e.*, the association of Ātman energising. *Kusumāñjali*, a celebrated work on the First Standard, argues that at the time of *sarga* or creation the *Paramāṇus*, which are inert and disconnected, require the causal activity of *Ātman* energising in order to move and come into contact with one another, because such moving and associating is *Karma*, and *Karma*, as in our bodies, requires the causal energising of Ātman to be produced. '*Ātmān*' in the case of creation means '*Paramātman*' or *Īśvara* (Lord), and 'causal energising' means '*Prayatna*' (Volition). The association of *Paramāṇus* into *Dvyanukas* (couplets) requires therefore *Īśvara-Prayatna* or the Lord's Will. But then the question arises: Why should A couple with B and not with C or D? Why is there such preference in coupling when the creative action is just beginning? The Lord's Will which is the efficient cause of such coupling cannot have preferences of its own. Therefore there must be intrinsic though latent differences or tendencies in the material itself. These tendencies are the *Adṛṣṭa* of the *Paramāṇus*. As explained in a previous section, an *Adṛṣṭa* is the Energy of Position in the universal configuration. Even during dissolution (*Laya*) the discrete *Paramāṇus* have certain positions relative to one another. But they do not move then, and therefore they have then a static configuration. Where are they configurated? In Ether (*Ākāśa*) which is eternal (*Nitya*);

and *Kāla*, *Dik* [1] and the Self or *Ātmā* also remain then. What therefore God's Will as efficient cause does is this—it realizes or actualizes the tendencies (*Adṛṣṭas*) of the *Paramāṇus* themselves; it helps their release or manifestation (*i.e.*, the translation of their static energy into kinetic energy). Then again, a 'tendency' implies a relation; it presupposes duality (*Dvaita*); for a solitary thing (whether *Aṇu* or atomic or *Mahat* or immense) in the universe, there is no tendency. There must be actually two or more things; or duality (or plurality) must be latent in the given solitary substance, or else it must be assumed to have power to appear as many (*Cf.* "*Eko'haṃ bahu syām prajāyeya*" "One am I, May I be many"). Now, the *Paramāṇus* of the First Standard are always many, and therefore they have their tendencies (*Adṛṣṭas*) always in relation to one another, and also in relation to the "Selves" or *Ātmans* which, in this Standard as well as in the Second, are also many.[2] In relation to the Self, bodies, and therefore the *Paramāṇus* which are their ultimate constituents, are objects and instruments of enjoyment [3]; and the Self is the enjoyer.[4] Hence the *Adṛṣṭas* of the *Paramāṇus* are partly, if not wholly, determined by the *Adṛṣṭas* of the non-liberated Ātmans. In fact a given *Adṛṣṭa* as a given relation between A and B, has two correlatives; so that, if for example it is the *Adṛṣṭa* of A to be the enjoyer (*bhoktā*) of B, then by virtue of the same fact it is the *Adṛṣṭa* of B to be the enjoyed (*bhogya*) of A. An *Adṛṣṭa*, as we have seen is but a tendency, a static or potential condition of what is to be (*dṛṣṭa*); therefore, it requires an impetus, an efficient cause to be realised or actualised. So long as the universe is in movement, and *Paramāṇus* and groups of

[1] That is the forces which move things on and hold them in position giving rise to the notions of Time and Space, see "Reality".

[2] (Vaiśeṣika, III. 2. 19, 20, 21).

[3] Bhogya, Bhogāyatana, Bhoga-sādhana.

[4] Bhoktā.

Paramāṇus are in movement, a particular *Paramāṇu*, or body, or self finds or may find such an impetus for the realisation of its *Adṛṣṭa* from the movements of others; but on the eve of creation when, according to the First Standard, there is no movement at all, the impetus can come only from a transcendent source. This transcendent Source is the Lord's Will, and by it, as the analysis has shown, the *Adṛṣṭas* or arrested tendencies of the *Paramāṇus* and the rest are released and become effective. This is creation (*Sṛṣṭi-Prakṛya*) according to the First Standard: the primordial motions and associations of the *Paramāṇus* are due to *Adṛṣṭa-sahakṛta-Īśvara-prayatna*.[1]

Points to be noted are: (1) *Adṛṣṭa* of the components of the Cosmos presupposes the pre-existence of an *active* cosmic order before *Laya* or dissolution; there is no absolute beginning. (2) God's Will is the efficient cause but it acts as the releasing force upon the latent tendencies in the dissolved cosmic order. (3) The expression of this moving force is *Kāla* or Time which is the scheme of succession of phenomena. The First Standard however, makes it a *Dravya* that is something which is independently real and self-subsisting and it is such an one not only in which, but by which, things are moved in their temporal relations, *i.e.*, 'A before B'; 'B after A'; 'B and C together'; 'D quicker than E'; 'E slower than F'; and so forth. Vaiśeṣika, II. 2. 9 and also VII. 1. 25 make *Kāla* a *Kāraṇa* in relation to all things that begin and end; II. 2. 7 and 8 make it *nitya* and *eka* (*i.e.*, eternal, one, undivided). To make *Kāla anitya* (non-eternal) is to say that it has a beginning and an end. But where? In a larger Time?[2]

[1] See also the summary of the process as given by its critics, *e.g.*, Vācaspati's Bhāmatī under Vedānta, II. 2. 10, and also Saṃkara's Bhāṣya under Vedānta, II. 2. 11.

[2] This is Mahā-kāla and Kālā as which it manifests is time as the individual centre knows it. The Kālavādins deal with the universe in terms of time. Supreme Time is a name of the Lord. And so Veda says "Time leads me in time" "Kālah kale mām mayati".

Therefore it must be eternal *nitya*. Again, the "sections" of Time (Hour, minute and so forth)[1] are not really sections of Time itself, but they are our representation of Time according to certain conventions (Vyavahāra), *viz.*, the Sun's motion, or those of the motions of the hands of a clock. The difference and division (*Bheda* or *Khanda*) is ascribed or imposed (*Aupādhika*).[2] *Dik* is the scheme of co-existence or configuration, and is a *Dravya*, according to the First Standard. *Dik* like *Kāla* is a *Dravya*, *nitya* and *eka*.[3] *Dik*, therefore, is neither space nor the spatial directions, distributively or collectively. It is that by which things are made to form a definite scheme of co-existence in Space or arranged in positions in definite directions of one another. Similarly, *Kāla* is neither "Time" nor the temporal relations, distributively or collectively. It is that by which things form a definite scheme of succession. The two are thus obviously opposed to each other. By the former, the *Paramāṇus* are held together in a static configuration; by the latter they become dynamic, *i.e.*, are displaced and go on being displaced from their given configuration. By the first, the *adṛṣṭas* are conserved; by the latter their static energies are rendered more and more kinetic, and the ratio of these two continually changed. Physics studies the first in its Statics the subject matter of which is Equilibrium; it studies the second in Dynamics the subject matter of which is Motion or Displacement. Biology studies them in the anabolism and katabolism of the living tissue.[4] The First Standard, in its analytical method, sets up *Dik* and *Kāla* as separate entities, and each distinct from the Self or Ātman; but it will be a more critical

[1] Which come in with the Sun, Moon, Stars and Seasons, all forms of the Supreme Lord.

[2] See *Upaskāra* under II. 2. 8.

[3] (II. 2. 11, 12, 13).

[4] See the account of them in "Reality".

view to regard them not as separate things, but as manifestations of the Lord's Will by which, as the efficient cause, *Paramāṇus* are arranged in relative spatial directions as well as moved in definite succession in relation to one another. Between God's Power and the *adṛṣṭas* of the *Paramāṇus* and *Ātmans* we need not interpose *Dik* and *Kāla* as separate entities. *Dik* and *Kāla* simply express a polarisation (or an opposition involved) in the way the Lord's Power seizes upon the *adṛṣṭas* of the cosmic elements and makes them effective upon the stage of action. By one 'pole' or aspect of that Power, those which *tend* to appear on the stage *together* at a given time are actually led so to appear, and those whose tendency to appear together then is not "up to the mark" are held back. The first set have their right (*Adhikāra*) to appear, and God willing, they do appear; their precedence is not in the preference of God as before explained; it is in the degree of force with which their tendencies press themselves. This aspect of God's Power is in Śākta Doctrine *Dik-Śakti*; its correlate pole, *Kāla-śakti*,[1] is that aspect of it by which things which *tend* to follow one another on the stage are made to do so, and things whose time is not yet are held back. These two *Śaktis* imply, condition and oppose each other. Yet like the First Standard, we need not "substantiate" them. Nor can the "tendencies" alone be left alone to fight out their cases. They require so to say an universal "vitaliser" and "prompter".[2] Comparing the cosmogenesis of Science with that of the First Standard we note that the latter admits (*a*) cyclic creation (*sṛṣṭi*) and dissolution (*Laya*); (*b*) *Adṛṣṭas* of *Paramāṇus* and *Ātmans* during *laya*; and (*c*) the change of this static system of stresses into a dynamic system

[1] "Kālo'smi Loka-kṣaya-kṛt"—Gītā; "Kalā-kāṣṭhādi-rūpeṇa pariṇāma-pradāyinī"—Candī.

[2] The subject of Tendency and Activity, the passage from one to the other, and God's Power as leading and effecting the passage will be discussed in "Causality".

under a transcendent act, *viz.*, God's volition. Science is dimly feeling her way to the possibility of *Sṛṣṭi* and *Laya*, and therefore to the cosmic alternation of static and dynamic conditions; but beyond this She now hardly ventures to go.

As Biology seeks to explain the rate of change (*i.e.*, growth and decay) of a living tissue by the *ratio* of Anabolism to Katabolism, so one might conceive the rate of change of the cosmic order as being determined by the ratio of *Dik* and *Kāla* which are concurrent, though variable, "forces". Thus during *Laya*, the former factor prevails, owing to which *Paramāṇus* and *Ātmans* remain in equilibrium: it gives a static order. During *Sṛṣṭi*, the latter factor prevails, so that *Paramāṇus*, etc., move from their positions of rest, mingle in varied groups, and so on. During the continuance of the universe or *Sthiti*, the latter still exceeds (sometimes to a greater and sometimes to a lesser extent) the former, so that though the cosmic order generally persists, it moves and changes.

Next, we come to this. '*Karma*' from the standpoint of the First Standard means '*Spandana*' (Motion or displacement). Vaiśeṣika, I. 1. 7 classifies Motions or displacements into five kinds. Three kinds of effects are produced by Karma, *Saṃyoga* (association), *Vibhāga* (dissociation) and *Vega* (momentum).[1] Thus two *Paramāṇus* A, B associate or dissociate and receive a momentum in virtue of their motions. Now, question is this: Is motion (*i.e.*, *Karma*) *always* produced by motion? That is, is a given motion *M* necessarily produced by another and that by another, and so on? This raises an important issue between Physics and the First Standard. The former is disposed to explain motion of one thing (say, of a ball) by that of another (*viz.* the stick's motion), this again by another (*viz.*, the hand's motion), and so on. But it is not necessarily so, according to the First Standard. Vaiśeṣika,

[1] Vaiśeṣika, I. 1. 20.

I. 1. 11 and 24 lay down that motion (*Karma*) is not necessarily the cause (*Kāraṇa*) of motion (*Karma*). It recognises that volition (*Prayatna*) is a cause of Karma, and volition, according to the First Standard, is not a motion itself. *Prayatna* is a function of the self (Ātmā), and it produces motion in the muscles of the hand, and so forth (V. 1). V. 2. 21 forbids action '*kṛyā*' in the sense of *Spandana* (vibration) in the continua—*Dik*, *Kāla*, *Ākāśa* and Ātmā. It pertains to what is discontinuous, discrete. The first creative act of the Lord on the *Paramāṇus*, etc., is not therefore, according to this Standard, a '*Karma*': it is an extra-physical action.

Next we ask this: Do the *Paramāṇus* involve an immanent dynamism? Severally they are not believed by the First Standard to contain immanent or intrinsic energies; but collectively they do even during the time of dissolution (*laya*). The aggregate of discrete *Paramāṇus* possesses energies (static) in virtue of their positions. These as we have seen, are the sum of their *adṛṣṭas*. When, as explained later, by the Lord's Will,[1] their relative positions change, their static energies become kinetic. We may compare the Nebular Hypothesis of the physicists which contemplates such translation of potential energy into kinetic, and also Helmholtz' theory of the contraction of the solar mass by which the potential energy of the sun is rendered kinetic (*i.e.*, heat), and supplies in part the heat which the sun loses by radiation. Vaiśeṣika,[2] assigns certain movements (*e.g.*, that of iron to magnet, etc.) to *Adṛṣṭa*; the leaping up of flames is also so explained; the movement (*spandana*) of *Paramāṇus* at the time of creation is also due to *Adṛṣṭa*. Comparing the examples we may infer that what is meant by '*Adṛṣṭa*' is that it is a not-commonly-apparent stress. Magnetic stresses, gravitational stresses, chemical stresses and so forth are subtle forms of stress which Yoga (including Science) may partly reveal or discover, but

[1] Iśvara-prayatna.

[2] V. 1. 15.

in all analysis an undiscovered and unexplained residuum must remain which is then the *Adṛṣṭa*. In a dissolution (*laya*) the *Paramāṇus* must have tendencies or tensions which do not produce actual movement. What it may be asked are these tensions? *Adṛṣṭa* says the First Standard, and does not go farther. But what are they in reality and how can they exist? The Second and Third Standards conceive them as energies of position. Evidently enquiry cannot stop even here; for, how can A be conceived to have energy by virtue of its position alone in a scheme A, B, C? It requires an explanation. Ultimately however an unexplained residuum must remain, because the *fact* is alogical. In the meantime, the Second and Third Standards carry the investigation further than where the First has brought it.

What is a *Paramāṇu*? From the realistic standpoint of the First Standard, which does not partition the Primary and Secondary qualities, a sensible object really exists as we sense it. It *has* form, taste (*rūpa*, *rasa*), and so forth. Western Science does not admit in its atoms of matter *Rūpa* (in its colour aspect) *Gandha* or odour, *Rasa* or taste: these being secondary qualities. Now, this sensible object is made up of parts (*e.g.*, a piece of cloth). The parts have also form (*Rūpa*) and so forth. The parts have parts again. And so on. Ultimately we have the thing divided into "points". In mathematical language, these ultimate[1] parts are the infinitely small elements of the real thing. Since they are infinitely small elements of the real thing, (*a*) they cannot have a finite magnitude capable of being sub-divided (in fact or in imagination); and (*b*) they, being the *minima* of the real thing, must possess the fundamental qualities (*Nitya guṇas*) of the thing.[2] We sense a lump of earth or a piece of ice. Is that the real thing meant here of which the *Paramāṇus* are

[1] Carama.

[2] These are not however the Primary qualities of Science only.

the minima? The lump of "earth" perceived is a compound of *Pṛthivī*, *Ap*, *Tejas*, *Vāyu*; it is not pure *Pṛthivī*. Hence *its* minima are not *Paramāṇus* of one kind but P's of different kinds. Pure *Pṛthivī* is not earth which is a compound. So pure *Ap* is not water as we find it. And yet they are not mere ideals or abstractions. They really exist and mix variously. Our senses give us complexes of sensations; we find that these sensations fall into five groups—form, taste, smell, touch, hearing;[1] our sense-experiences also give us certain permanent combinations of the first four (leaving out the fifth for the present). *E.g.*, certain objects being there, we invariably experience (provided our instruments of knowledge are normal) all the four; in other objects (*e.g.*, water or air) we may sometimes experience all of them,[2] but not always. Hence we think that in the former set of objects the combination of four is natural,[3] whilst in the latter such combination is due to the admixture of adventitious elements.[4] Eliminating smell (*gandha*) we have a combination of three, and these with two others added (*viz.*, *Dravatva* or liquidity and *Sneha* or adhesiveness) make *Ap* in which the combination is permanent. We here omit the *propria* and *differentia* of *Pṛthivī*, *Ap*, etc.; and note the general characteristic, *viz.*, that each stands for a "permanent possibility" of a certain combination of sensations, and is a *dravya* or independent entity. Thus *Pṛthivī* is not earth but the permanent possibility[5] of a kind of combination of the four. So with *Ap* and the rest. It is not obviously a chemical analysis of Matter, but the classification is based upon a psychological analysis and synthesis: so the *Bhūtas* are not "Elements" of Physical Science.

[1] Rupa, rasa, gandha, sparśa and śabda.

[2] *e.g.*, when water is perfumed, and when glowing sparks and scent-dusts move in the air.

[3] Or sāṃsiddhika.

[4] Āgantuka.

[5] *i.e.*, dravya or samavāyi-kāraṇa.

Suppose now that the required combination of all the four kinds of sensations, founded in a Substance, be called P; the required combination of 3, A; that of 2, T; and that of 1 (*i.e.*, spaṛśa), V. Then, in all ordinary experiences of the senses, we have mixtures of P, A, T, V. But the experience of the mixture is an experience of the components. Thus we do experience P, we do experience A, and so on, though ordinarily not in freedom from the company of the others. By their mixing, which the Third Standard explains by *Trivṛt-karaṇa* or *Pañcī-karaṇa*, their qualities (guṇas) variously commingle, and sometimes may inhibit one another. Vaiśeṣika,[1] forbids, however, the mixing called *Pañcī-karaṇa* in the sense of Vedānta. But still according to it the Bhūtas mix in a way. We shall not pause to discuss the distinction between the two, but only note that some sort of mixing [2] is allowed by the First Standard.

Hence a *Paramāṇu* of *Pṛthivī* is not an infinitely small element of what we actually experience as earth, stone, body, etc., which are all mixtures, but it is an infinitely small element of a substance (really existing and entering variously into compounds) which is the ground and cause of a certain permanent combination of four classes of sensation, *viz.*, smell, taste, form and colour, and touch. The infinitely small element possesses and produces the four kinds of qualities in gross (*Sthūla*) *Pṛthivī*. It has *Rūpa* (form, colour) [3] etc., therefore; but its *Rūpa* is not *Udbhūta*, *i.e.*, such as can be apprehended by our senses. Vaiśeṣika, IV. 1. 6 says that *Rūpa* is apprehended when an object is *mahat* (large), consists of many *Avayavas* (parts) and has *Rūpa* in itself; then it becomes an

[1] III. 2. 2 and 3, and VIII. 2. 4.

[2] *viz.*, as samavāyi-kāraṇa of one and as upaṣṭaṃbhaka or nimitta-kāraṇa of others.

[3] According to Indian notions all form is coloured: by its colouration it is seen as form; the colourless is also formless.

object of visual perception. A *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇu* has the *third* quality, but neither the first nor the second; hence its *Rūpa* is not seen. IV. 1. 7 and 8 go on to show why *Vāyu*, in spite of its being large and constituted of many parts, has no visible *rūpa*, and how the mere existence of *rūpa* in a thing is not enough for its being perceived by the eye—that to be thus perceivable it must possess *Rūpa-viśeṣa* or *Udbhūta-rūpa* or such *Rūpa* as would bring it within the range of our normal sense-capacity. In this way, the minute pollen-dusts of scent-flowers floating in the wind excite the sense of smell but not that of sight. The *Paramāṇus*, according to this Standard, possess in this way *infra*-sensible *Rūpa*, *Rasa*, etc., which originate sensible *Rūpa*, *Rasa*, etc., in the gross objects of perception.

The four kinds of *Paramāṇus* are different as regards their qualities from one another. But the question may be asked—Are *Paramāṇus* of the *same* class (say, *Pṛthivī*) absolutely identical? Vaiśeṣika[1] says—No, each *Paramāṇu* has its generic or class characteristics and also its own individuality.[2] If, therefore, we take the *Paramāṇus* A, B, C belonging to the same class, we cannot say that A = B = C. It is for ascribing such individuality to *Paramāṇus* that the Vaiśeṣika has been so called. Nyāya differs in this. Each *Paramāṇu*, by virtue of its position alone in the universal configuration, must possess, or be associated with, a stock of static, potential energy which cannot be identical with that possessed by another *Paramāṇu* in a different position. These distinct separate stores of static energy are *adṛṣṭas*. This word means "that which is unseen" and which for practical purposes[3] is synonymous with *Saṃskāra* or tendency and aptitude in its unmanifested form which is the product of previous action or

[1] II. 2. 6. [2] Viśeṣa.

[3] Sometimes the terms are used synonymously, in others a distinction is made. Postponed *Adṛṣṭa* is Saṃcita-Karma.

Karma. We shall see also that the first movement[1] of the *Paramāṇus* is due to *Adṛṣṭa*[2]. Now the *Adṛṣṭa* of a given *Paramāṇu* constitutes in a way its individuality;[3] but has it (say, A) also an individual form or taste[4] as compared with another *Paramāṇu* of the same class (say, B)? The parallel case is that of the allotropic modifications in Chemistry. Coal, Graphite and Diamond are all allotropic modifications of carbon—they contain nothing else than carbon atoms. And yet their physical properties are so markedly contrasted. How can that be if the matter in them be the same? Now, in order that two things, A and B, may be the same, we must have (1) A's matter equal to B's matter, and also (2) the arrangement of A's matter similar to the arrangement of B's matter. Charcoal and Diamond are not the same because, though the first condition of similarity is there fulfilled, the second condition is not; matter is differently *arranged* in them. But why; and what does that presuppose? Ultimately the difference must be explained in terms of the dynamisms of A and B; the forces (*śakti*), static and dynamic, which operate in the one are different from those which operate in the other; their stress-systems are different. According to modern Chemistry, all forms of Matter are really the allotropic modifications of one another, since they are now believed to be only different arrangements of a fundamental Matter—"Protyle" or Electron or Ether or whatever else we may call it. Oxygen and Hydrogen, for example, are only different arrangements of Electrons. These different arrangements are the individualities (relatively stable) or *Viśeṣas* of the chemical "atoms". And these are ultimately determined by the immanent stress-systems of the atoms. Science denying the "secondary qualities" in the atoms and corpuscles cannot say that O has a form or taste[5] different from that of H; but it does say that

[1] Ādya-Karma. [2] See V. 2. 13. [3] Or Viśeṣa.
[4] Viśeṣa-rūpa or rasa. [5] Rūpa or rasa.

it has a different weight, mass and constitution. But suppose we take two atoms of O itself. Is there any difference between them as distinguished from that which they must have on account of their different positions in the material system? Science is not yet ready with an answer; but if it be true, that atoms are complex systems and not simple, partless units, then, *à priori*, two atoms of the same element ought to have their individualities (*Viśeṣas*) over and above their typal or generic similarity. We are all individual men though belonging to the same type, Man. So it ought to be with the atoms of the same "element" (say, Oxygen). Nor can we avoid such individuality in a sub-atom or electron, for even this, having a definite mass and dimensions, cannot be an absolutely simple thing; it is likely that they are also systems in their turn. Hence Science cannot avoid the *Viśeṣa* or individuality in her current units of Matter.

But the *Paramāṇus* are partless points of Substance. Hence it may be argued (as it has been argued by the Naiyāyikas and others) that their only *Viśeṣas* can be their differing *Adṛṣṭas*, but that otherwise they must all be equal; *i.e.*, one *Paramāṇu* of *Pṛthivī* cannot have a form[1] different from that of another *Paramāṇu* of *Pṛthivī* (earth). The Vaiśeṣika Text does not appear to make the point clear, but since the Vaiśeṣika conception of *Bhūta* is based upon a *psychological* analysis of our actual experience of Matter (the "element" thus obtained being substantialized) rather than upon a physico-chemical analysis, it ought to follow that the irreducible minima of Matter thus obtained are really the counterparts of the actually perceived forms of Matter on a miniature scale. Now, some of the actually perceived forms of Matter have not only form (*Rūpa*) in general but individual forms (*rūpa-viśeṣas*), *e.g.*, this white paper and that green

[1] Rūpa.

leaf.[1] Suppose a *Paramāṇu* of the paper be A and that of the leaf be B. Suppose also that they are both *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇus*. Then, since A and B are the irreducible minima of the paper and the leaf as actually perceived by us, the *Rūpa-Viśeṣa* of A ought to be that of the leaf. Though both are *Pṛthivī-Paramāṇus* they have their special forms (*Rūpas*), and the different *Rūpas* of the paper and the leaf are caused by the special *Rūpas* of A and B respectively. Such representation is psychologically correct. We start with the actual perceptions of paper and leaf; we go on dividing and subdividing until the mind halts at the *minimum psychosis* (or "Psychon" to use the expression employed in the Text and in a recent English work); and then this Psychon is treated objectively; and so we get the *Paramāṇu*. *Pari passu* with such analysis, a physico-chemical analysis of the paper and the leaf may be attempted; and in the progress of this latter analysis we soon come to a stage when the subdivisions or segments ceasing to possess *perceptible* colour, taste, smell, etc., disappear, and only *indirect* evidence is left of the existence of weight, resistance, motion, etc., in the particles. Now, when this stage in the analysis has been reached, there are evidently two ways of proceeding: (*a*) We may either say that the subdivisions which come beyond our limit of perception are similar to those which are perceived by us—that the ultimate particles are therefore our minima of Psychosis objectified, and hence each having its own *Viśeṣa;* (*b*) or we may say that since colour, etc., disappear in the progress of the analysis but evidence of weight, inertia, etc., is still left, these latter alone are the real properties of Matter, so that if, for example, paper and a leaf are visually sensed by us differently, that is not because the atoms of the two (*i.e.*, A and B) actually possess the different colours or any colour, but because the former atom (A) is

[1] Papers and leaves also may be of different shades of whiteness and greenness.

moving in a way different from that in which B moves and excites our sensibility. The former is the concrete, psychological view and it is that of the Vaiśeṣika. The latter is the scientific view which, in so far as it stows apart Primary and Secondary qualities, is abstract and unpsychological. But even after spiriting away the secondary qualities, Science has got to consider this: A and B (say, atoms of the same "element") possess weight, inertia, etc.; but do they not possess differing weight, inertia, etc.? That is, has not each its own *Viśeṣa* as regards the primary qualities at least? *Prima Facie*,, it ought to have—even the Electron.

Next comes the difficult question of the magnitude of the *Paramāṇu*. To meet this question one has to free one's mind of the notion that the *Paramāṇu* is something like an "atom" or an "electron". These latter, as we have seen, have definite magnitudes. But *Paramāṇu's* magnitude is infinitely small. Vaiśeṣika, VII. 1. 20 calls the measure (*Parimāṇa*) of the *Paramāṇu* "*Parimaṇdala*," and this magnitude is permanent (*nitya*). But what is this *Parimaṇdala?* Literally it means a "sphere". It is therefore an infinitely small sphere, or a "point". As already stated, this Standard contemplates, *four* kinds of Magnitude—(1) Aṇu, (2) Mahat, (5) Hraṣva, and (4) Dīrgha. The first is 'small,' the second 'large,' the third 'short,' the fourth 'long.' It also considers (VII. 1. 11 and 17) these two pairs of categories as giving rise to two series (Dhārā, *e.g.*, A is smaller than B, B than C, C than D, and so on. This is one series. A is shorter than B, B than C, and so on. This is another series.) Now, obviously, each series has a superior limit (*utkarṣa*) and an inferior limit (*apakarṣa*) *e.g.*, in the first series, A may have the smallest magnitude and Z the largest. A then is the inferior limit, and if it be absolutely small magnitude, than it is the *Paramāṇu*. Similarly Z is the superior limit and *Parama-mahat* (*e.g.*, Ākāśa, Ātman—VII. 1. 22.) Between these two limits we shall have several

orders which are relatively great or small. If the *Paramāṇu* had any finite magnitude, however small, like the scientific atom or electron, then it would not be the inferior limit—the "partless" unit. Hence the infinitely small unit is nothing greater than a Point (Bindu). The same reasoning will apply to the other pair "short-long". The infinitely short thing is again a Point. If it had any finite length, it would be divisible. So the inferior limit of the second series is also the *Paramāṇu*. It is a '*parimaṇḍala*' because it is a sphere of which the radius is infinitely small, *i.e.*, a Point. Things of perception are seen to be divisible into smaller and smaller grains or particles. All these are spheres of finite (however small) radii. So are even the Electrons. Pushing to the limit we get a sphere of which the radius is infinitely small, and this is *Pārimāndalya*.

'Anu' and 'Mahat' are terms which relate to solid or three-dimensional magnitude, and '*Hraṣva*' and '*Dīrgha*' to linear magnitude. Now, there are as already stated *six* possible combinations of these four terms taken two at time: (1) *Aṇu-mahat*, (2) *Aṇu-hraṣva*, (3) *Aṇu-dīrgha*, (4) *Mahat-hraṣva*. (5) *Mahat-dīrgha*, (6) *Hraṣva-dīrgha*. Of these the first and the sixth combine contraries,[1] and so they are cancelled. The third is also untenable, because a thing which is small in dimension cannot be *Dīrgha*. Similarly, a thing which is large in dimension cannot be *Hraṣva*, and therefore the fourth combination is also untenable. Only the second and the fifth are logically tenable combinations.

Now, suppose we join together two Points or *Paramāṇus* What do we get? A short *line* of which the breadth and thickness, (*i.e.*, solid dimension) are infinitely small. Yet the thing thus obtained is not a *Paramāṇu*. Because the magnitude of *two* points put together must be greater than that of a single one. By combining the two points (not coinciding

[1] VIII. 1. 10.

them, however) we get a very short line (of which the solid dimension is nothing)—the "element" of linear dimension, as it is called in Mathematics (*Dl* in mathematical notation). How shall we characterize it? It is *Hraṣva* as well as *Aṇu* (because lacking solid dimension)—*Aṇu-hraṣva*. This is the magnitude of the binary or *Dvyaṇuka*. It is an "element" of linear dimension.

Suppose next we combine two such elements of linear dimension—two binaries or *Dvyaṇukas*. From a common "origin" or point of reference, we draw two short lines in two different directions. What do we get? An "element" of *surface* dimension—a very small surface (*Ds* in mathematical notation). If we draw from a common origin *three* such short lines (say, at right angles to each other), we get an "element" of solid dimension or volume (*Dv* in mathematical notation). Three *Dvyaṇukas* make in this way a *Trasareṇu* (lit. a moving particle). *Its* magnitude is much greater than that of a *Dvyaṇuka*, for the *Trasareṇu* has a breadth and a thickness whilst a *Dvyaṇuka* has neither. Hence, compared with the *Dvyaṇuka*, it is *mahat*. Again, many lines must be bundled together (like slender wires twisted together into a rope) to produce even a very small volume; each of the constituent lines is short, but the aggregate of these short lengths is comparatively *Dīrgha*. Hence we may say that the magnitude of the Trasareṇu is *Mahat-dīrgha*.

In all Physico-mathematical analysis of things in Science we have to imagine and deal with the "volume-elements". A mere point, or a mere line cannot be an object of concrete imagination for us—we cannot "perceive" it with the eye of imagination. Such "perception" becomes possible only when we take a solid-element. If we had the requisite sense-capacity, we could actually perceive such a solid-element however small. The *Trasareṇu* therefore is the true "corpuscle" or "particle" of Matter. It is perceivable

provided the requisite sense-capacity be there. At any rate it can be actually *imaged*, and since according to Hindu Philosophy it possesses both primary and secondary qualities, it can be *concretely* imaged by us. The chemical "atom", "electron", etc., being larger or smaller solid-elements fall under the generic category of *Trasareṇu*. They cannot be either Paramāṇus or Dvyaṇukas. They are theoretically perceivable by us, provided the secondary qualities are also left in them. *Paramāṇus* or *Dvyaṇukas* are not *thus* perceivable or imaginable by us. This is the meaning of the teaching of the First Standard that when the Trasareṇu stage is reached, the combination becomes fit for perception (*Pratyakṣa-yogya*). The combination as we have seen is geometrical and not chemical—it is the putting together of the three dimensions.

It has been observed in a previous section that this has not been quite well grasped by the latter-day annotators of the First Standard who in some cases possessed neither the Yogic vision (Yoga-dṛṣṭi) of the seers (Ṛṣis) nor all the advantages of modern Science. In some cases, their common-sense treatment has missed the real points. Similarly[1] a profound scientific wisdom has been said to underlie the matter presented in the Veda-mantras even in the ritual section (*Kṛyā-Kāṇda*). But it lies concealed, and later interpreters have not always uncovered it. In the annotations, the *Trasareṇu* is often represented as a moving particle of matter visible to the eye when, for instance, a pencil of sun-beam is let into a dark room through an aperture. Like a larger ball made up of six smaller ones, it can be broken up into six *Paramāṇus* or three *Dvyaṇukas*; so it is said. But this is absurd, and this is not the position of the First Standard. Even a microscopic particle must contain multi-millions of "corpuscles"—says Science. It may be so, says the First Standard; its *Trasareṇu* being, as we have seen, only the "element" of solid dimension

[1] See P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya's Bengali Lectures on Veda and Vijñāna.

which embraces the scientific corpuscles, etc. The First Standard then proceeds to analyse Matter from the *psychological* stand-point, though the elements thus obtained by it are treated objectively and rigidly by it. This should be remembered when one has occasion to compare it with Western Physical Science.

Vaiśeṣika [1] in a number of Sūtras indicates the natures of *Pṛthivī*, *Ap* and the rest. We have seen that each is a permanent possibility of a certain combination of sensation (or objectively, qualities or *guṇas*). Later commentators have taken pains to show that *Pṛthivī* is nearly what we know as earth, that *Ap* is water, and so on; and so the definitions or *Lakṣaṇas* have been complicated. *E.g.*, *rūpa*, *rasa* and *sparśa* in *Pṛthivī* are given special meanings.[2] We need not here discuss the details. We may simply observe that we cannot be far from the mark if we say that *Pṛthivī* (earth) stands for (*a*) Rigidity (or relative definiteness and stability of form), and (*b*) a certain combination of the four kinds of *guṇas* (*gandha* or odour being its speciality). *Ap* " water " stands for (*a*) Liquidity and Adhesiveness, and (*b*) a certain combination of the three kinds of *Guṇas* (omitting *Gandha*).[3] *Tejas* stands for (*a*) Radiations (Heat, Light and Electricity) [4] and (*b*) a certain combination of *Rūpa* and *Sparśa*. *Vāyu* stands for (*a*) Fluidity and Mobility, and (*b*) a certain kind of *Sparśa*. *Ākāśa* stands for (*a*) continuous *plenum*, and (*b*) Śabda which[5] cannot be an intrinsic *proprium* of those objects which have ' touch '.[6] *Śabda* however is here used in the sense of

[1] II. 1 and 2.

[2] Aneka-rūpa-vattva, aneka-rasa-vattva, pākaja-sparśa-vattva.

[3] II. 2. 5 adds " śītatā " or ' coolness ' also saṃsiddhika Guṇa to Ap.

[4] V. 2. 9 and 10. As the Vyāsa-Bhāṣya on Pātanjala-darśana (III. 44) says: " Mūrtir bhūmih, sneho jalaṃ, vahniruṣṇatā, vāyuh pranāmī, sarvatogati-rākāśa iti."

[5] As II. 1. 25 explains.

[6] Sparśa-vataṃ.

'sound' and not *Spanda* or motion which is *Karma* according to the First Standard.

To sum up: *Pṛthivī* ("earth") is *rigid* matter; *Ap* ("water") is *liquid* matter; *Tejas* ("Fire") is radiant matter; *Vāyu* ("air") is *fluid and mobile* matter; *Ākāśa* ("ether") is ethereal matter. These may be taken as broad *lakēnas* or definitions. *Ākāśa* or ether in the First Standard is not conceived as Space, but as an infinitely continuous *plenum* of which the quality or *guṇā* is sound (*śabda*).[1]

If we remember that Vaiśeṣika makes sound (*śabda*) the *guṇa* and not the motion (*karma*) of Ākāśa, then the apparent discrepancy between it and Science as regards sound will disappear. *Karma* is motion (displacement), vibratory or otherwise. Science, explaining sound as being caused by the vibrations of Air, makes it motion (*Karma*) of Air. Now, sound being a secondary quality is subjective from the standpoint of science; the vibration of Air being the cause of sound, but not sound itself. But suppose we objectify or externalize sound itself—we take it as existing outside of us as sound. Doing so we find that like form, touch (*rūpa, sparśa*), etc., it is not confined to particular, limited objects. *Rūpa* or *Sparśa* is where the object itself (*e.g.*, a conch-shell) is; it is not where the object is not. Odour travels away from the object (*e.g.*, of a flower), but then we have positive evidence there that minute particles of the object itself have travelled and carried the smell along with them; so in smell too we may say that it is where the object is (the flower or its particles). But the case of sound is different. The sound of a conch-blown is *not* necessarily where the conch-shell is; it may be heard in different directions and in different positions; several people in different positions may hear it together or nearly together. There is no evidence that, as in the case of smell, particles of the conch-shell themselves have travelled; and even if they

[1] That Ākāśa is not mere space is indicated in II. 1. 20, etc.

did, they could not carry the sound of the shell; for, as is rightly pointed out,[1] the sound of a lyre or flute is not in the particles of them taken distributively, as the smell of a flower is. Hence if we accept the maxim that the qualities of a thing cannot be where the thing is not, we must say that sound must be the quality of a substance which is large and continuous. That sound takes time to travel and therefore persons at distances from one another do not hear a sound at the same moment, proves only that sound has an efficient cause[2] which is the propagation of atmospheric vibration.[3] But the material[4] cause of sound is the *continuum Ākāśa*. *Śabda* is thus the quality (*Guṇa*) of Ākāśa, but is revealed and propagated by the *Karma* (*i.e.*, *Spanda*) or motion of *Vāyu* or air.

Concluding we observe this: If like Western Science we define Matter as that which moves (in the sense of displacement), then, from the view-point of the First Standard, all *Dravyas* or independent entities which have *Karma* (*i.e.*, *spandana*) or movement are Matter; and they are—*Kṣiti* (earth), *Ap* (water), *Tejas* (fire), *Vāyu* (air), and *Manas* (mind). V. 2. 12 and 13 say that all these (including *Manas*) have Karma. And V. 2. 21. says that *Dik*, *Kāla*, *Ākāśa* and *Ātman* are *Niṣkṛya* (*i.e.*, do not have *Karma*). V. 2. 14 also separately assigns *Karma* to *Manas*; this can be moved by effort (*Prayatna*) and also by external stimuli. The *Indṛyas* or senses are also material. VIII. 2. 5 and 6 show that the sense of smell is *Pārthiva* ("Earthy"), that of taste is *Jalīya* (watery), that of vision is *Taijasa* (fiery) and that of touch is *vāyavīya* (aerial). *Śrotra* or that of hearing is simply a portion of Ākāśa cut off by the ear-membrane, such cutting off in a given manner being due

[1] II. 1. 25.

[2] Nimitta-Kāraṇa.

[3] This is recognised in the First Standard; see Bhāṣāpariccheda and other works.

[4] Samavāyi.

to *Adṛṣṭa*.[1] It is not therefore a *pariṇāma* (transformation) of a substance like the eye, etc., but it is the pure substance itself (*i.e.*, *Ākāśa*) bounded by the ear-membrane.

§ 11

All philosophies attempt to trace the causal series in the world to the ultimate root or roots. Of these some proceed on the straight path which is the psychological method (*i.e.*, analysing actual experience), and others choose a round-about path. The method of all the three standards of Hindu Philosophy is *psychological*; their difference lies in the *extent* to which the investigation has been pushed. The First Standard carries its investigation to the *Paramāṇus*, *Dik*, *Kāla*, *Adṛṣṭa* and *Ātman*. By it these are (except *Adṛṣṭa*) presented as separate entities. Indeed so we must take them if we do not or cannot push our investigation farther.

But suppose we are able to go farther. We ask this: A *Paramāṇu* is a Point of Substance, which though simple and partless, possesses a cluster of permanent *Guṇas* (*Rūpa*, *Rasa*, etc.), has its own *Viśeṣa* or individuality, and has also its *Adṛṣṭa*. Is it conceivable that a *thing* which is absolutely simple and partless can have a *Rūpa-viśeṣa*, a *Rasa-viśeṣa*, a *Gandha-viśeṣa*, a *Sparśa-viśeṣa?* Its *Guṇas* and *Karmas* form a complex whole; can the *basis* of this complex whole be a simple point of substance? Śaṃkarācārya in Vedānta, II. 2. (11-17), gives an exhaustive and able criticism of Paramāṇu-kārana-vāda. His criticism principally relates to (*a*) the possibility of *first* motion in the *Vāyavīya* (ærial) *Paramāṇus* at the time of creation (*sarga*); (*b*) the manner of their association; and (*c*) their simplicity in spite of the complexity of their *Guṇas*. We need not go into the details, but only observe that the complexity of *Guṇas* and *Karmas* in a *Paramaṇu* renders it impossible that the basis can

[1] "Viśiṣṭādṛiṣṭo-pagṛhīta-karṇa-śaṣkulyavacchinno nabho-deśa eva śrotram."—Upaskāra.

be but a Point-Thing. On similar grounds Western scientists felt dissatisfied with the "simple and hard" atoms even when positive evidence of the electron was not forthcoming. Difference in weight, valency and other chemical properties, spectrum analysis and various other things suggested the complexity of the atom.

Therefore, why not say this—A *Paramāṇu* is a complex thing whose elements (*Avayavas*) are the *Rūpa*, *Rasa*, *Gandha*, etc.? Instead of saying that Paramāṇu is a simple X possessing the complexus of guṇas, A, B, C, D, with all their *Viśeṣas*, we say that *Paramāṇu* is a whole of which the elements are A, B, C, D. The Paramāṇu = A+B+C+D. In this way, (1) simplicity in the thing and complexity in the *Guṇas* and *Karmas* as postulated by the First Standard vanishes; (2) the necessity of an extra-mental support of *Rūpa*, *Rasa* and the rest is obviated; and (3) the method becomes more psychological, and new vistas of psychological analysis open before us beyond the *Paramāṇus*. The elements of *Rūpa*, etc., which constitute the *Paramāṇu* are the *Tanmātras* or Generals of the sense particulars of the Second Standard. So instead of saying *Kāla* and *Dik* are *entities* which make the *Paramāṇus* and their aggregates appear in orders of succession and co-existence, we may simply say that the former is the sum of the movements (m^1, m^2, m^3, etc.,) or *Kṣaṇas* [1] of the Tanmātras, and the latter is the sum of their relative positions (p^1, p^2, p^3, etc.). The mystery why things move variously and occupy various positions is not cleared up merely by saying that there are entities to make them do so. Thus, the Second Standard simplifies matters by these three equations: (1) P (Paramāṇu) = A+B+C+D; (2) K (Kāla) = $m^1+m^2+m^3$— . . . ; (3) D (Dik) = $p^1+p^2+p^3$+ . . .

[1] A 'Kṣaṇa' or Moment is a partless unit of time and is measured by the transit of one Paramāṇu (or Tanmātra) from one position in Space to another. See Pātañjala, III. 52.

But by these Equations the Problem itself is not solved. By them we have merely shaken off needless encumbrances, which however *are* useful frame-works for arranging the world-phenomena in the first instance. The *Tanmātras*, their nature, distribution and change, give us a complicated whole which *prima facie* cannot be the ultimate order, and which therefore requires and stimulates further enquiry. Such enquiry is undertaken by the Second Standard by making us pass through *Ahaṃkāra*, *Mahat-tattva* and *Mūla-Prakṛti*.[1]

It is not necessary here to deal in full with *Ahaṃkāra* and the rest.[2] But the trend of the investigation of the Second Standard is clear: (*a*) Having reduced Matter to complexuses of *Tanmātras* which are Generals of the Sense-particulars or Universals, it recognises the basis of Matter in the Mental Principle, or rather a Principle which, in having to evolve as sensible Matter, has first to evolve as the Mental Principle. (*b*) The first Standard had left even at the beginning a heterogeneous order, *viz.*, *Paramāṇus*, their *Guṇas*, *Adṛṣṭas*, *Dik*, *Kāla*, *Ātman* and the rest. But the Second Standard is able to trace all this heterogeneity to a homogeneous unconscious Root (*Prakṛti*) which, however, it still leaves tripartite (as being constituted of *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*[3] and *Cit* or *Puruṣa*). This tripartite "homogeneous" Root as being the object "seen" by Consciousness, is the Primordial "Mind" and Primordial "Matter" which first evolves as *Buddhi*, then as *Ahaṃkāra*, then as *Tanmātras* and lastly as the particles of gross matter or *Bhūta*. Thus this system makes the mental precede the material, the universal precede the particular, the homogeneous precede the heterogeneous. It also conceives the world-process as an unfoldment or Evolution.

[1] The I-making principle derived from the mind in its fundamental aspect as Buddhi again derived from the Root of both the psychical and material.

[2] See "Mind" *ante*.

[3] Power (Śakti) as presenting, veiling consciousness and the activity in each.

Pātañjala Darśana, III. 44 speaks of the *five* conditions of the *Bhūtas*. (1) *Sthūla*. The actually perceived condition involving *Gandha*, *Sparśa*, etc.; each perception gives a particular form of *Bhūta* with a particular set of qualities. (2) *Svarūpa*. The *generic* quality (*jāti*) of the five kinds of *Bhūta*; the generic quality of *Pṛthivī*, of *Ap*, *Tejas*, etc. (3) *Sukṣma*. The *Tanmātras* which are the *units* or causes of the *Bhūtas*. (4) *Anvaya*. The three *Guṇas* (*Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*) which underlie and constitute ultimately all *Bhūtas*. (5) *Arthavattva*. The end for which each form of *Bhūta* exists and evolves; the *Bhūta* as an object or instrument of *Bhoga* or enjoyment. He who can do concentration or Samādhi on these five conditions of *Bhūta* can control it.

We have said that the *Tanmātra* is the unit of the *Bhūta*. In what sense? The *Tanmātra* is called *Aviśeṣa* (non-particular) in the Second Standard (*e.g.*, in Pātañjala, II. 19). It is called also the *Sūkṣma-Bhūta*. The etymology of the word would suggest that it is the unit, or standard, or archetype. I see whiteness in this paper or greenness in that leaf. Is that the *Rūpa-Tanmātra*? Is it any kind of sensation or quality apprehended ordinarily by the senses? No. To be *Aviśeṣa* it must not be any particular variation of *Rūpa*, but the Rūpa as a Universal; to be a standard or archetype, it must not be *Rūpa* as apprehended variously by various limited sense-capacities but as apprehended by a perfect or "Absolute Eye".[1] To be *Sūkṣma*, it must not be *Rūpa* as seen by me in this paper but as existing in the "elements" of the paper. That is, it must be elementary *Rūpa* appearing, within the limits of man's sense-capacity and subject to his inherited tendencies or *Saṃskāras*, as the *Rūpa* of this paper.

Suppose we make this hypothesis. Let this paper be divided and sub-divided till at last the non-magnitudinal "points" are reached; and let a Perfect Sense (*i.e.*, free from

[1] *Cf.* Plato's doctrine of Archetypes.

the limitations of varying tendencies or *Saṃskāras*) apprehend those points. Then, to such a sense (say, the eye) there will be presented standard "Rūpa-points". A Rūpa-point is an "atom" of *Rūpa* or an infinitely small element of *Rūpa* as apprehended by a Perfect Eye. Similarly, a Śabda-point is an "atom" of Śabda; and so on. Each is a sort of ideal or standard "Psychon"; and there are obviously five kinds of Psychons involved in the constitution of sensible matter. In the Second Standard we discard non-mental supports of the gunas, *viz.*, the *Paramāṇus* of the First Standard. Hence, now, this paper, for example, is *just* the aggregate of *Rūpa*-points, *Rasa*-points, *Gandha*-points, etc. As the physicist now explains Matter by "atoms" of Electricity (or Electrons which however, cannot be the ultimate units), so Sāṃkhya reduces Matter to an aggregate of Psychons which, from its view-point, are *standard* elements of *Rūpa*, etc., as presented to a Perfect Eye.

As Psychons they are obviously not reducible to one another. A *Rūpa* is not a kind of *Rasa* or a kind of *Śabda*. In synthesising from the psychological standpoint the world of sensible Matter we cannot come to a number of distinct classes less than five;[1] the five *Tanmātras* are the five irreducible minima of categories within which our experience of sensible Matter can be summed up. Though differing as *effects*, they may however agree as regards their *causation*, *i.e.*, they may *all* be deduced from the differing activities of *one* higher Principle (*e.g.*, *Asmitā* or *Ahaṃkāra*, the I-making or individualising principle by which a limited centre recognises itself as such).

In passing through the "refracting and defracting media" of our limited and varied individual *Saṃskāras* pertaining to our instruments of perception, these *standard Rūpa*, *Rasa*, etc., become in effect infinitely diversified; so we experience almost limitless kinds of *Rūpa*, *Rasa*, etc., which

[1] As was recognised by J. S. Mill in his "Logic".

change and pass, and differ from case to case. Behind all this kaleidoscopic changes of form, etc., we have the standard *Tanmātras* themselves and their permutations and combinations. These are the "things-in-themselves". It is clear that the *Tanmātras* are the Generals or Universals of which *our* perceived *Rūpas*, *rasas*, etc., are the aggregates and particular variations.

As, again, the Electrons by their number and various arrangements are believed to constitute the atoms of Matter, so the *Rūpa*-units, *Rasa*-units, etc., by their various combinations make the *Bhūtas* or sensible matter. Whilst a *Śabda-Tanmātra* may exist singly, a *Sparśa-Tanmātra* is commonly a compound of *Sparśa*+Śabda; so a *Rūpa-Tanmātra* is = Rūpa T.+Sparśa T.+Śabda T.; so Rasa T. is a combination of 4; and Gandha T. is a combination of 5. By reason of such combination, they possess, in the above-mentioned order, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 *Guṇas*.[1]

Whatever the original Datum or Stuff may be, whether *Cit* or *Prakṛti*, it is clear that we can have "points" of *Rūpa*, etc., in it, only after some Individualizing Principle (*Ahaṃkāra*) has operated upon it; by such operation separated Centres of Action and Reaction appear in the Continuum. The Individualizing or Centre-referring Principle is *Asmitā* or *Ahaṃkara*. The whole operation again pre-supposes, and is resolvable into, three concurrent activities which the Sāṃkhya calls *Sattva* (Presentation), *Rajas* (Movement), and *Tamas* (Veiling). *Cit* or Consciousness stands apart but lights up the whole show.

§ 12

We need not further examine this doctrine here, but only observe that *its* investigation into the foundations of Reality is also halting. If we conceive the *Tanmātras* as ideal

[1] See Pātañjala-Bhāṣya, II. 19.

points of *Rūpa*, etc., then *where* do these points exist and operate? In *Ākāśa*? But *Ākāśa* as perceptual Space is not antecedent to the *Tanmātras*. *Dik* as a *nitya dravya*, and as a Principle of configuration, is not admitted. It is simply the aggregate of the directions in which the points stand to one another. What then is the required *continuum* for the points to exist and operate in?

Why not say simply with Vedānta that it is Consciousness (Cit) which in one aspect of Its Power (Māyā-Śakti) evolves as Object (*Dṛsya*) and in another aspect (Cit-Śakti) manifests and controls it as Subject (*Draṣtā*)?

Then this Cit Itself or Pure Consciousness will be the required Continuum, and one which is self-revealing (*sva-prakāśa*). All operations and all operatives and all operators will be then the conditions of Consciousness Itself.

Dik, Kāla, Ākāśa and Ātman will only be the *Cit-continuum* or Consciousness (*Cidākāśa*) in different attitudes and relations. Cit or Pure Consciousness or Spirit is the subject of a future volume.[1]

As before pointed, the *Continuum* has a static (quiescent) and a dynamic (stressing) aspect. The second does not cancel or suppress the first. When the *Cit*-Substance as Energy (Śakti) evolves as the world, Its static or quiescent form is *also* maintained. This is the significance of the Kālī Mūrti—the figure of the moving Kāli-Śakti on the corpse-like (*Śava*) quiescent form of Śiva—a common symbol in the Tantras.

In Its evolution as Energy (Śakti) the Series (Dhārā) with its superior and inferior limits explained before applies. So that we have higher and higher *continua* and lower and lower *discontinua*. The perfect limit of the continua is Pure Cit, and the lowest limit of discreteness is the *Bindu* as a form of Supreme Energy. While Energy concentrates[2] into Bindus,

[1] Mahamaya: Power As Consciousness.

[2] that is, becomes as it is Ghanībhūta.

Its continuous forms also exist as " fields " for the operation of the Bindus. Hence if Śakti to operate as and through Points requires Dik and Kāla, we have them already given, for they are only modes of presentation of the forms of *Cit* to *Cit* Itself.

In fact, the *Nāda-Bindu* which concludes every mantra—the *Continuum* and the Point—are the correlates of each other. One is not without the other. They are the two *poles* of Being, so that Brahman is at once " *anoranīyān mahato mahīyān* " " smaller than the smallest and greater than the greatest "—as Veda says.

Hence when at the one pole the " point " of Śabda as Tanmātra appears, at the other pole the subtle continuum of Śabda or sūkṣma, apañcītrita Ākāśa (ether) appears. They are aspects of the same appearance.

Psychologically it is so. The infinitely small element or unit of Śabda as presented to the " Absolute Ear " (an idea which is however *implicit* in the Second Standard), and therefore as *Aviseṣa* (universal), was the Śabda-Tanmātra considered before. But the " Absolute Ear " may " hear " bothwise—the smallest as well as the largest (*parama mahat*). Hence to It Śabda as Tanmātra or Universal will present both the poles—*Śabda as Point* and *Śabda as Continuum* (both universal, because not, *ex hypothesi*, presented to this limited hearing instrument or to that). If, again, by ' Śabda ' we mean not ' sound ' only but ' *spanda* ' or movement then we have this:

(1) Sūkṣma-Ākāśa = Universal-*śabda-continuum* = Cit-śakti in a condition of *stressing in general.* Similarly,

(2) Sūkṣma-Vāyu = *Universal-sparśa-śabda-continuum*, and is a derivative from the first.

It is a condition of Cit in which there is (dynamically) mobility in general, and (psychologically) *Sparśa* or touch in general. Both the mobility-in-general and the *Sparśa*-in-general being as they are presented to an " Absolute Touch ";

our experiences of mobility and *Sparśa* being limited, varied and particular. In (1) the stresses are considered as not producing actual motion. Then we have (3) Tejas = Universal-*śabda-sparśa-rūpa-continuum*, and is a derivative from (1) & (2).

It is not easy to present in a simple manner the special dynamical aspect of Tejas, Ap and Pṛthivī, but we may say that their dynamisms are such that they produce Radiation (Electrical or other), Liquidity and Rigidity in general respectively; psychologically, they are responsible especially for Rūpa, Rasa, Gandha (*all in general*). And it should be borne in mind that in the two higher standards (and more particularly in the third), psychism is = dynamism; they are only aspects.

We have taken the Absolute Sensibility and presented to It *Śabda* as *continuum*, *sparśa* as *continuum*, etc., and obtained pure *Ākāśa-Tanmātra*, etc. We might have as well begun at the other "pole" or the Point.

Because Prajāpati or Hiranya-garbha as Absolute Sensibility knows *Śabda-Tanmātra*, etc., it must not be thought that His knowledge is restricted to the pure Universals only. He is *sarvvajña* and *sarvva-vit*.[1] His Sense is the Ideal Limit of our senses: He thus *transcends* us; His sense is the aggregate of our senses: He is thus *immanent* in us.

In explaining (2), (3), etc., we have seen that the higher principles necessarily enter into their derivatives, so that in Pṛthivī-Tanmātra, for instance, the characters of the four higher principles are involved. This is as it should be. But *further* compounding is necessary (which is called Trivṛtkaraṇa or Pañcīkaraṇa) to get the Sthūla-Bhūtas, or sensible matter, which is the subject of physico-chemical science.

[1] As Sarvajña He is knower of the Universals or generals of the sense particulars; as Sarvavit He is knower of the particulars.

THE WORLD AS POWER:
POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS REALITY
(*Tattva-śakti*)

POWER AS LIFE
(*Prāṇa-śakti*)

POWER AS MIND
(*Mānasī-śakti*)

POWER AS MATTER
(*Bhūta-śakti*)

POWER AS CAUSALITY AND CONTINUITY
(*Kāraṇa-śakti and Sthiti-śakti*)

PREFACE

THE portion of this book which deals with Causality is my work in the carrying out of which I am indebted to Dr. Seal's learned work " Positive Sciences of the Hindus ". The second portion, on Continuity, has been written by Professor Pramathanātha Mukhyopādhyāya with whose collaboration I intend to publish the next volume [1] of the series dealing with *Cit* or (to give this untranslatable word an English name) Consciousness. After a discussion of the essential terms, Reality, Consciousness, Mind, Life, Matter, Causality and Continuity, and possibly a few others such as Saṃskāra or Tendency, the ground will have been prepared for the treatment of such special Śāstric subjects as Adhikāra, Sādhana-Śakti, Mantra-Śakti, Ritual in general, Yoga and so forth. It is more than useless to attempt to deal with such matters unless the philosophical terms I have mentioned are understood.

Bormes, Var J. W.

16th February 1923

[1] Since published: " Mahamāyā: Power As Consciousness ".

THE WORLD AS POWER:

POWER AS CAUSALITY

(*Kāraṇa-śakti*)

§ 1

It has been said[1] that causation has been involved in a denser dust of discussion especially since the days of Hume, than any other subject except Free Will which is intimately connected with cause and effect; and that there is no agreement among Psychologists as to the internal conviction nor among physicists as to the external relation. Many centuries however before Hume the same questions were discussed and it is to India that we owe the notable doctrine of the essential identity of Cause and Effect,[2] though we may read English works of Indian writers on Causation rich in references to Berkeley, Hume, Mill, Herbert Spencer and others without mention of what India has said on the subject.[3] I suppose Cinderella would not have minded neglect so much if it had not been that of her sisters. It will be found however that India has in its main heads fully dealt with the matter from the empirical, metaphysical, and absolute aspects of Reality according to

[1] Dr. McCosh, "First and Fundamental Truths," 207.

[2] Dr. Sterling. Gifford Lectures 279-287, who says "I suppose we owe all this to the Hindoos".

[3] Therefore I would refer these and English readers to Dr. Seal's "Positive Sciences of the Hindus" where the subject is summarised from the Indian standpoint and the authorities are given.

the three Standards which constitute the Intellectual Body of Vedāntic Truth as Spiritual Experience.

First then as to the internal conviction as to the truth of the principle of Causality, namely that there is no phenomenon without its cause. Is it derived from the individual's generalisation from his experience? It is not; because it is always and from the beginning associated with it. Moreover universal propositions cannot be established by limited perceptions. Nor is it a form in the Kantian sense of the understanding considered as isolated from and independent of the things presented to it. Whence then does it come? It is one of the innate tendencies or *Saṃskāra* inherent in mind generated by its past experiences. These accumulated *Saṃskāras* are in Indian philosophy the source of all our irresistible assumptions and convictions. Thus Kant contended that the persistent reality of the causal order is as necessary an assumption for our knowledge of the external world as time and space. World-experience does not justify these assumptions. But they are there as (it is said) the product of an infinite number of experiences in an infinite number of worlds. Mind is never in any Indian system a Tabula Rasa but is on the contrary a mine of impressions and tendencies. There is a given form of experience because there has always been a similar experience under similar circumstances. There is a given state of facts because there has always been a similar state of facts under similar conditions. This is the principle of the Uniformity of Nature in its Indian form. The pre-existent experience so postulated, though not without rational proof in its favour, cannot be established with certitude by reason alone. In supersensible matters reason can only attain at the best conclusions of probability. The affirmation of pre-existence rests secondarily on *Śruti* or Revelation and primarily on actual experience in the form of that threefold supersensible knowledge (*Traividya*) which is concerned firstly

with the cosmic history of the individual self and secondly with such history of others, both being effects in the general cosmic process, and thirdly with the cause of such process.[1] If anyone says that he does not believe the possibility of such supersensible experience he is entirely within his rights and no one can possibly have any objection. But those who for any reason have satisfied themselves on this and other similar matters will not in their turn be affected merely by these doubts or denials unless they are of the class of persons who in this country are stampeded into immediate repudiation on hearing merely the powerful Mantras "Science", "Superstition", "Progress" and the like.

But India has not been without Her own sceptics. Indeed from the Womb of Her Thinking She has thrown out every type of doctrine, Agnosticism, Scepticism, Materialism, Idealism, Atheism, Theism, Pantheism. May be that like a woman who has borne too many children Her fecundity has tired Her. The ancient sceptical school of Cārvākas held as against those who assumed the Principle of Causality as a ground of induction (*Vyāpti*) that it itself was an induction with the result that there was circular reasoning. Universal propositions cannot be established (they held) by limited perception. Every inference is based on an unconditional concomitance which must itself be inferred. There is thus a *regressus ad infinitum.* The *nexus* between cause and effect was only (they held) a notion based on former perception which by accident is found justified by the result in a number of cases. In a similar way Hume held that we do not apprehend any efficiency in the causal order but only a certain regularity of sequence which contains no absolute guarantee of permanence. An 'effect' is only what habit leads us to expect. But a

[1] Pūrvanivāsānuśmṛti, Parasattbānāṃ ca utpatti jñānam, and the Jñāna regarding Pratītyasamutpāda or the origination of things after having experienced another thing referring to the evolutionary process.

necessary connection that is possibility of inference between any two existent things cannot be based on a mere expectation which though it has never been falsified may yet some day be so. The Nyāya of the first Standard has produced in its later developments some of the greatest logic-choppers in the world, but in its earlier forms was both acute and sensible. Without assuming (as the Buddhists did) Causality as an *à priori* principle, and making deductions therefrom, and without holding (as they did) causal efficiency to be of the essence of empirical (relative) reality, the first Standard took its stand on observed concomitance. It admitted that strong objections might be urged on the basis of mere observation but held that they could not be answered by the canons of causality and essential identity proposed. Falling back on the rational practice of thinking persons it was content with a pragmatic certitude.[1] It was held that the internal conviction was sufficiently justified for all our practical purposes.

The Buddhists took another line of argument to the objection that whilst it is true that logical methods of induction may show how in particular cases the causal relation is to be established, yet this is only a method which itself requires a warrant. The Buddhists replied that pragmatic reasons assign a limit to doubt. If in any particular case the method was satisfied, the antecedent in question must be the cause, for there was no other to serve as such. If it is not the cause then there is none and this conclusion is in contradiction of the rational ground of all practice, since all volitional activity proceeds by implication on the principle of causality namely that there is no phenomenon without a cause. If things could happen without a cause, all motives to action would be baffled. The truth of the principle was held to be guaranteed by the same ultimate criterion of empirical reality as the truth of perception itself, namely, the

[1] See Seal, "Positive Sciences of the Hindus," 267-269.

correspondence between the rational and practical activity of the self.[1]

§ 2

The second Standard fully accepts the principle of Causality and efficiency in the transcendent sense of an unmoved Reality disturbing the rest (as equilibrium) of the active source of mind and matter and their energies. Through this co-operation Nature is dynamic. The third Standard similarly assumes the Principle of causality and efficiency with this difference that in lieu of two Principles it posits One of dual aspect, static as Being-Consciousness, kinetic as the Power of Becoming in which Being-consciousness weaves the garment for Itself, which is the unconscious (in themselves) psychic and material forces. The first in the Śaiva and Śākta doctrines is Śiva and the second Its Power or Śakti. But the two are in the Monistic schools one. Māyāvāda Vedānta whilst accepting such a view as empirically valid takes the last step and holds that in the absolute sense the Principle of causality and efficiency is as much Māyā as the universe to which it is applied.

As to the external relation, the First Standard held that cause and effect were two distinguishable conditions of things in a relation of antecedence and consequence. Its doctrine of causation is that of the absolute non-existence of the produced before its actual production; [2] that is the effect is not latent in and essentially identical with the cause as in the next or Evolutionary Standard. As regards the relation of cause and effect it denies a nexus in the form of a super-sensible power (*Atindṛya-Śakti*) in the cause to produce the effect, or an ultimate form which is supposed to be present whenever the effect is produced. For it such efficiency was

[1] Seal, *op. cit.*, 259-261.

[2] Which gives it its name Asat-kārya-vāda.

neither a matter of observation nor legitimate hypothesis. A cause is thus the invariable, unconditional, immediately antecedent, sum of operative conditions, and the effect is the consequent phenomenon which results from the joint operation of the antecedent conditions. But it does not admit either as a matter of observation or legitimate hypothesis any transcendental *nexus* between cause and effect as supersensible Power:[1] that is such productive metaphysical efficiency as is affirmed by the second Standard[2] according to which the causal relation is one of identity. Causation takes place through kinetic operation in the nature of molar or molecular motion.[3] There is in each case of causation a redistribution of the latter. Whilst the first Standard thus repudiates the notion of Transcendental Power (*Śakti*) in the mechanism of nature and natural causation, it does not deny but affirms the Power (*Śakti*) of the Lord in His creation of the Universe out of the pre-existing realities,[4] nor does it deny the existence of metaphysical conditions like merit (Dharma) which constitute a system of Moral Ends which fulfil themselves in and through the mechanical system and order of Nature.[5] The creation of the world takes place as an absolutely new creation[6] by what is called Yaugika-sṛṣṭi or conjunction of the nine eternally pre-existing entities (Dravya) with all their properties and relations.

Motion (Karma)[7] is defined in the Commentary on the Vaiśeṣika Aphorisms as the unconditional cause of change of place in a particle which in its simplest form is instantaneous and as *Vega* or impressed motion, or momentum is a persistent

[1] Atīndṛya-śakti.

[2] See Seal, *op. cit.*, 262.

[3] Bhautika-parispanda.

[4] Īśvara in this system has the three śaktis: nitya-jñāna, nitya-icchā, nitya-kṛyā.

[5] Dr. Seal *op. cit.*, 265-266.

[6] Hence it is called Ārambha-vāda.

[7] See Seal, *op. cit.*, 129-152.

tendency or physical *Saṃskāra* implying therefore a series of motions.[1] This motion is as we may see happening around us, conveyed from or communicated by one object to another. Final causality or motion is attributed by the First Standard to *Adṛṣṭa* (lit. " Unseen ") which is resorted to in explanation of observed phenomena only when these cannot be derived in any way from the operation of known causes. Several classes of cases fall under this head such as the operation of the transcendental cause, Merit and Demerit [2] which explains the conjunction and disjunction of Souls (*Ātmans*) with their bodies, or according to the law of *Karma* or action or the operation of moral causation as superimposed on the natural order; and the first motions in the primordial elements of matter [3] at the beginning of creation. It is the Lord (Īśvara) who is, though Himself unmoved, the First Mover operating according to the law of the unseen causes or *Adṛṣṭa*. Motion therefore in this system is something communicated, and it is this communicated, as opposed to inherent motion or essential efficiency of the second standard, which constitutes the phenomenal cause of the first.

§ 3

The first Standard conceived the matter under discussion in a simple fashion. The world is reducible to certain eternal realities. These are brought together by God and form everything experienced in the Universe. The things so formed by the eternal realities are absolutely new productions which had no sort of existence whatever before their production. All moving things are moved by a force called *Kāla* which

[1] Vega is either persistent tendency (Saṃskāra) to motion or tendency to restitution of shape in elastic bodies.

[2] Dharma, Adharma. That is an action in accordance with or contrary to the universal law.

[3] *Paramāṇu.*

though different from and independent of other realities is in general relation with them. *Dik* again is the force of relative position. Final Causality or motion is attributed to *Adṛṣṭa* (*lit.* "Unseen") such as the first motions in the primordial elements of matter. *Adṛṣṭa* is only resorted to in explanation of observed phenomena when these cannot be derived in any way from the operation of known causes. In the universe so constituted causation takes place through molar and molecular Motion (*Karma*) which is the cause of change in place in a particle. This motion is conveyed by one body to another. Cause is one thing and effect is another. The former is the invariable, unconditional, immediately antecedent, sum of operative conditions and the latter or effect is the consequent phenomenon which results from the joint operation of the antecedent conditions. As already observed the power of movement is not lodged in matter itself. It is a distinct principle in general relation with it. There is nothing but the invariable unconditional time relation between the cause and effect. This Standard does not admit either as matter of observation or legitimate hypothesis any nexus between cause and effect as metaphysical power (*Atīndrya-Śakti*) or productive efficiency inherent in the cause to produce the effect as posited in the second Standard. The cause is nothing other than an unconditional, invariable complement of operative conditions and the effect nothing other than the consequent phenomenon which results from the joint operation of the antecedent conditions. The Nyāya however while repudiating transcendental power (Śakti) in the mechanism of nature and natural causation does not deny the existence of metaphysical conditions like merit (*Dharma*) which constitute a system of moral ends that fulfil themselves in and through the mechanical system and order of nature.[1]

[1] Seal, *op. cit.*, 262 *et seq.*

In the next state or Second Standard we are introduced to the concept of efficiency. It is not the invariable or unconditional succession which constitutes causation but it is the power in the cause which produces the invariable succession. In other words the concept of efficiency is essential to the causal relation. This is based on the fact of the individual man's sense of power and the consciousness of it, or on the experience of subjective activity as such which has been regarded as a primary or the sole source of this concept of efficiency. This subjective consciousness of power as the original experience from which the concept of efficiency is derived has been held to be a justification of its validity; that is there is in fact power in the cause to produce the effect. As so conscious we have the feeling that in human activity we are in the Power-house itself. It is objected that this is a mere ejective interpretation, a projection of our consciousness of power into the outside world. The world outside us does not give the concept of efficiency except we read what we are conscious of into it. We do not sense power or initiative force anywhere. In fact causation is a notion derived from our own conscious activity. This is true as also that it is Consciousness which makes the very change of nature intelligible to us.[1]

Nevertheless we may support the dynamic view of the universe on the Monistic principles of the Śākta system. Mind and matter are twin aspects of the Mother-Power (Mahā-Śakti). They are themselves forms of power in differing degrees of contraction (*Saṃkoca*). Power exists in either case, though in man's mind only it is revealed together with the consciousness of it. It is true that efficiency is discovered not outside but within us. But if it did not exist all would not make

[1] See as to this and the concept of Energy generally the skilful criticism from the Advaita-Vedānta standpoint in Metaphysics of Energy by G. R. Malkani published by the Indian Institute of Philosophy, Amalner (E. Khandesh).

discovery of it. The charge of anthropomorphism only succeeds against those who altogether sever mind and matter, the intelligible from the sensible. It is however a formally valid criticism that the unity on which this argument is based is not itself established. This calls in question the truth of Monism itself. Śāṃkhyan dualism gives independent reality to motion or change. It may be objected [1] that these as absolute, objective, independent occurrences have in themselves no meaning, for their meaning is in Consciousness which by giving meaning to succession demonstrates its own persistence, which as conscious continuity by creating time and space proves its own timelessness and spacelessness, thus as the Monistic Vedānta says, giving testimony of consciousness as the Self being the sole basis or reality. But can reason establish anything more than that motion or change has no meaning independent of Consciousness? We make a further step when we say that there is in fact only one reality namely Consciousness, a position for which we may argue but which cannot be established with certitude except by an actual or direct experience of unity. Those who seek to establish supersensible (*Atīndṛya*) truths on any other ground must fail: just as those who argue against the validity of the individual's experience must fail. It is his experience, adduce what facts and arguments you will against it.[2]

§ 4

In the second Standard there are two ultimate Realities, existing independently the one of the other, namely the class of Selves (*Puruṣas*) whose nature is Consciousness and the

[1] See " Metaphysics of Energy ".

[2] It is the truth *for him* however much others may refuse to accept such experience as truth for themselves. It is only alleged sense-knowledge which is capable of verification or refutation.

psycho-physical Principle (*Prakṛti*). When the two Principles are associated as in world-experience there is consciousness identifying itself with its vehicles of mind and matter. Where they are dissociated then Consciousness is alone in its aloofness (*Kaivalya*). These two in association are the efficient and material causes respectively of the universe, whilst in Vedānta there is only one Reality which in different aspects is efficient and material cause. True efficiency is the power to initiate change that is the power of X to affect Y whilst X itself is unaffected and remains at rest. If the agent X is itself moved then it becomes a patient. This efficiency is transcendental and not the ordinary notion of efficiency of science which has no meta-physical support. Lotze says: "There cannot be an inner state of anything such as to be for that thing the condition of its being in another particular state". It is in fact impossible even to conceive X moving Y in the world of things without the former itself moving in the act of moving the latter. If X moves then it must be moved from outside. The agent which is moved and moves does not initiate but merely communicates an impulse which it has itself received from outside. In the phenomenal world the moving cause can only be conceived as part of an universe which by the configuration of its other parts helps to determine its movements. No element whether animate or inanimate can be conceived as moving itself because everything remains at rest until it is moved through a cause outside itself. And once recourse is had to outside causes the notion of efficiency is lost.[1] In the universe as it exists there is an unending change of cause and effect, each movement therein being result of a previous one and the cause of that which follows. It is common doubtless to speak of the self-initiated movements of animate being. It is not affirmed that there is true efficiency in the case of such movements, but that the movement of living substance is not

[1] See Metaphysics of Energy, by G. R. Malkani.

necessarily dependent on mechanical propulsion by something else from outside. In fact some altogether deny spontaneity of movement in living bodies attributing their movements to the colloid and chemical reactions of the mobile beings and the medium. But, however this be, no true efficiency, as above defined, is discoverable in any form of phenomenal being as such. True efficiency only exists in their ultimate Cause. In Sāṃkhya the Psycho-physical Principle is essentially active. It is never at rest. No cause is thus required to set it in motion. Consciousness (Puruṣa) is efficient in the sense that it determines the equilibrium of the former principle so that it deploys and manifests itself in the psychical and physical variety with which the unity of consciousness identifies itself.

The Psycho-physical principle is composed of three Factors, Moments, or Aspects [1] which are a tendency towards Activity, that is what is efficient in any phenomenon,[2] and which may work upon either of the other two factors [3] which are tendencies towards the Manifestation [4] or Veiling of Consciousness in that phenomenon [5] respectively. The very nature of Energy is Efficiency to do work, to overcome resistance and to produce motion. All energy is therefore kinetic, even potential energy being energy of Motion in imperceptible forms. And so it is said of the essentially active

[1] Guṇa; translated as quality but which also means strand or thread. The Root is threefold like the twisted sacred thread of the Brāhmaṇa.

[2] Rajas Guṇa.

[3] Making one suppress the other.

[4] Sattva-guṇa. It is that in the Material Cause which serves as the medium for reflection of the Sat or Consciousness of the efficient cause, the Puruṣa. It is therefore the conscious element as mind in the Phenomenon.

[5] Tamas Guṇa, counteracting the tendency to conscious manifestation, physically manifesting as the mass and inertia of Matter which as such is the unconscious element in the Phenomenon.

Root-Energy-Stuff of the universe or Prakṛti [1] that it has both homogeneous [2] and heterogeneous or heteropathic change.[3] By the former is meant 'change in its own given condition'. The changed state is equivalent to the changing state. Thus the threefold Factors of the Root which is the material cause of the future and still unmanifested universe are in a state of equilibrium. The Root even then changes so as to maintain this state of equilibrium the change not upsetting the equilibrium. It changes because activity of some kind is of its essence. The reason is that the inherent tendency to manifestation is counterbalanced by the resistance of the Factor which in produced nature is called mass resistance, stability, or inertia. Consciousness as the *Puruṣa* is the efficient agent for the destruction of this equilibrium and the manifestation of the universe to Consciousness through the Mind with which the latter identifies itself. In manifestation however Change is heterogeneous. Manifestation involves varied collocations of energy. One relation of the Factors then changes into another different from it and so on with the result that Causation is a transformation of the homogeneous origin into the heterogeneous effects which are the varied universe of Mind and Matter.

As stated, consciousness as efficient cause of movement does not itself move. We may seek a physical analogy in the nature of catalytic activity. In a chemical substance which is possessed of catalytic action the latter effects something and yet does not itself (so far as we can see) get transformed nor lose anything of its mass or potential during that chemical activity. Such a substance does not combine with the others

[1] Pra + kṛti = before creation or She from Whom production begins or She by whom all actions (Kṛti) are done. Actions = Sṛṣṭi (production), Sthiti (maintenance), Laya (Dissolution).

[2] Sadṛśa or Sarūpa-pariṇāma.

[3] Visadṛśa or Virūpa-pariṇāma.

which it influences but it (by its presence) influences others in proximity to one another to combine and to become themselves the seat of chemical activity and transformation. All such bodies therefore lose nothing and gain nothing and so keep themselves what they were. They naturally cease to influence if isolated from material to act upon. Their activity in the sense of influence would have a final terminal should they be altogether and permanently isolated which is the meaning of *Kaivalya*.[1]

Action may thus be apparently caused or directed by a body which itself undergoes no change.[2] Whilst this example illustrates the changelessness of the Efficient Cause it does not bring out to view the apparent combination of the two Principles. In the Śāstra in order to explain the nature of this influence, recourse is had to the analogy of the reflection of a red flower in a crystal. The former and all its movements are reflected in the crystal but the latter is in itself unchanged. This illustration has the merit of showing both influence and apparent combination of both the Realities. Whatever analogy be applicable[3] the substance of the doctrine is that one Principle affects another without the former really combining with it and thus being affected and undergoing any change.

We may leave physical analogies which are necessarily crude, though not without effect, for those who live in the actions and reactions of matter, and endeavour to explain the

[1] As applied to the Puruṣa detached from Prakṛti, Kaivalya is isolation or Aloofness when Consciousness as Puruṣa dissociates Itself from Prakṛti.

[2] So platinum will cause action without itself undergoing any kind of change which can be detected by the chemist; and so with other bodies. This is without loss to itself just as from an initial magnet any number of others can be made without loss to the generating magnet.

[3] In fact the Scriptures declare that the matter is Apratarkya, that is beyond all human discussion and conception. Our analysis must from the nature of the case be limited and imperfect. See Hymn to Prakṛti in Prapañcasāra-Tantra, Ed., A. Avalon.

subjects from the psychical standpoint. In this view we may say that Nature always actively "works for" that is shows Herself to the consciousness which associates itself with Her. To the consciousness which discovers its true nature and that it is other than and separated from mind and matter She withdraws herself. Until then Consciousness which identifies itself with Mind and Matter continues to be the efficient cause of their production. All Mind and Matter and their energies are contained in the Original Energy-stuff: so that manifestation is an unfolding. This is the doctrine of the existence of the product in a potential form in the cause prior to its actual manifestation as effect.[1] Things are not formed out of pre-existing materials as new creations, but products already exist in a potential form in the original productive principle. They simply unroll themselves out from this potential state as a tree unrolls itself from out the seed. The Cause holds within it the effect potentially. The effect is the cause modified. Cause and effect in the universe are different positions and states of conditionedness of the same thing in the time-sequence. The effect is in the cause and the cause exists in the effect which is only the cause manifested in a collocation.[2] The effect which is potential is actualised. Nothing which is produced is something entirely new. The manifestation or causation of an effect is only the passage from potentiality to actuality. Cause and effect are thus essentially (that is as to substance-energy as distinct from collocation) one. The X which is virtually the cause is the same X which is virtually the effect.

The Factors of the Root, notwithstanding their transformation into diverse forms, are neither created nor destroyed and are eternal. The totality of Mass[3] and Energy[4] remains

[1] It is therefore called Sat-Kārya-vāda.

[2] Kāraṇasyaiva saṃsthānamātram. Cf. Seal, *op. cit.*, 89.

[3] Tamas.

[4] Rajas.

constant if account be taken both of the actual and potential. But the concrete phenomenal modes evolved in this process are subject to growth and decay, which are only due to changes of collocation and consequent changes of state from the potential to the actual. The course of evolution conforms to a fixed law inherent in the transforming whole, the transformation of which is constant and not arrested for a moment. There is thus both transformation and conservation of Energy. As the total Energy remains the same while the world is constantly evolving, cause and effect are only more or less evolved forms of the same ultimate Root-Energy Stuff. The sum of effects exists in the sum of Causes in a potential or unevolved form. What is called the material cause or sum of material causes is only the Power which is efficient in the production, or rather the vehicle of that Power. This Power is the potential form of the Energy set free in the effect through concomitant conditions necessary to call forth the so-called material cause into activity. There is liberation of potential Energy following on the action of the proximate efficient cause or concomitant condition. The causal operation of these lies in the fact that they supply the stimulus which liberates the potential energy stored up in a given collocation. Everything in the phenomenal world is a special collocation of the three Factors of the Root cause. The sum of material causes potentially contains the Energy manifested in the sum of effects: and in the passage from potency to actualisation the effectuating condition (concomitant, cause), when it is itself accomplished, is only a step in the evolutionary series which adds a specific stimulus and renders determinate that which was previously indeterminate. When the effectuating condition is added to the sum of material conditions in a given collocation, all that happens is that a stimulus is imparted which removes the arrest, disturbs the relatively stable equilibrium and brings on a liberation of energy

together with a fresh collocation. Non-material (in the sense of subtle) concomitants like Merit and Demerit [1] do not supply any moving force or Energy to the sum of material conditions but only remove the arrest or state of relatively stable equilibrium in a given collocation.[2] The order of evolution follows a definite law inherent in the root-cause and its manifestations. The cosmic order is one and fixed but comprehends divers series arising from different combinations or original Factors which constitute subordinate or particular laws of cause and effect. The qualities of things are only modes of Energy acting in those collocations sometimes actual and other times potential. The Original Energy is one and ubiquitous and everything therefore exists in everything else potentially [3] without prejudice to the generic and specific differences of things. Inorganic matter, vegetable and animal organisms are essentially and ultimately one, so far as mass and energy are concerned, but the varied forms of Energy and the generic and specific qualities or properties of things (which are but modes of Energy) follow a definite and unalterable law (which we observe in the phenomenal world) in the order of their appearance and succession under conditions of space, time, mode, and causality and hence all effects do not manifest themselves at once.[4] The category of causality is mediated through the scheme of order in time. The empirical intuition first superimposes relations of antecedence and sequence on changing phenomena and the understanding out of these relations creates order in time. The empirical intuition then intuits the phenomenal series of

[1] Dharma and Adharma.

[2] As the owner of a field removes the barrier in flooding his field from a reservoir of water.

[3] Sarvam sarvātmakamiti.

[4] Dr. Seal, *op. cit.*, 13-18 which I summarise and in which the authorities are given.

transformations of Energy in this Time-order and in so doing imparts the relation of cause and effect into Nature.[1]

It is to be noted that the Energy which Mind, Life, and Matter display is of a transcendental nature. That is, it is not the energy of forms of mind and matter considered in and by themselves, but it is the one infinite Energy of the Original Principle of which they are both limited psycho-physical modes.

§ 5

The Third Standard as Vedānta in its Monistic form holds that the measurable universe is reducible to one Reality alone, the Brahman, the Immeasurable or Immense. We may consider the matter first from the empirical standpoint of Śākta doctrine. Here in lieu of the plurality of Selves (*Puruṣa*), there is the one Changeless Consciousness or Śiva who, relative to the world, is efficient cause. The world is not something which has a reality independent of Consciousness. It is the transforming and transformed Power or Śakti of Siva who is the Divine Mother of the Universe. The Mother as Material cause is in Herself (*Svarūpa*) one with Śiva [2] who is Consciousness-being-bliss. The material cause is not thus, as the Śāṃkhyas affirm, something unconscious. The Mother-Energy is the Source of all mind, life, and matter and their energies which are all modes of Her as Substance-Energy. The Power which evolves the world is both Consciousness (*Cit-Śakti*) and *Māyā* [3] or the finitising power (*Māyā-Śakti*) which manifests as mind and matter. Neither Śiva nor Śakti in themselves, that is as

[1] *Ibid.*, 22.

[2] Cidrūpinī.

[3] Māyā means that by which a thing is 'measured' that is 'limited', (Mīyate anena iti Māyā) the principle which imposes forms on the formless. Some explain it as Mā (not) Yā (That), *i.e.*, that which is the contrary of the infinite That without attributes.

Being-consciousness-bliss, change, but Śakti is the Principle of Change and assumes the changing forms which constitute the universe. Here also there is a relation of essential identity between cause and effect. Consciousness remains one and unchanged, immanent in all mind and matter: and the latter are essentially one as regards Substance-Energy. There is true causal efficiency in its transcendental sense. But the efficient and material causes are not two independent Principles but twin aspects of the one Reality in whom inhere both. Causal efficiency is the very essence of Reality in its Power-aspect and it is this efficiency which is inherent and manifested in all things in the universe which are the transformations of the Mother-Energy-Substance (Mahā-śakti) one in Herself with Consciousness.

It is to be observed however that there is a difference between the modes of operation in the evolution of the world, that is of its constitutive principles and in the world so constituted.

In the case of transformation of Energy-Substance in the world itself, the result of the cosmic process above described, the cause ceases to exist as cause immediately before and when the effect comes into existence. Thus as the Lakṣmī-Tantra says "in the world, milk loses its nature immediately when it becomes curd (there is curd only not milk and curd)" but this does not apply to the Supreme Cause and Its process for the quality [1] of that Cause is Vīrya,[2] that is unaffectedness in spite of being the transforming material cause.[3] This principle is applicable in the case of both the second and third Standards or Śāṃkhyan and Vedāntic systems respectively. In cosmic evolution the cause when transforming itself into the effect remains what it is as cause. The effect (as effect) is the cause modified but the

[1] Guṇa.

[2] This term here = Vikāra-rahita.

[3] Schrader, Ahirbudhnyasaṃhita, 33.

cause (as cause) remains what it was, is, and will be. This must obviously be so, otherwise with the evolution into effect the cause would disappear in it and so on until the last of the evolved principles was reached when all the antecedent principles would have disappeared in the last. But the universe exists as a combination of those constituent principles.[1]

The evolutionary process is also in both cases reversible, that is, cosmically. In manifested Nature there is continuous degradation until the terminal of activity as the whole universe is reached. Could the reversibility of the processes of life be discovered we might then see the adult organism led back through the successive stages of its development to the primitive germ whence it sprung. Hathayoga may in degree arrest degradation and give a reverse tendency to individual organic process.[2] But it is the work of Cosmic Power to withdraw as a whole what it has ejected as modes of itself. This is *Pralaya* or dissolution of the universe when the two Radical Principles alone are.

In this connection it may be observed that to Aristotle the "First Mover" must be functioning actuality, absolute *Energeia* for were it only potential *Dunamis* there were no reason, so far as it was only that, it should become actual. It has absolutely actual being which moves out of itself and

[1] Thus in Sāṃkhya, Prakṛti becomes Mahat and remains Prakṛti, Mahat becomes Ahaṃkāra and remains Mahat and so on. And in the 36 Principles (Tattvas) of the Śaiva and Śāktas, Śiva-Śakti Tattva evolves Sādākhya and remains as they were, Sādākhya evolves Īśvara-Tattva and remains Sādākhya. In the Māyā-vāda scheme there is not the same chain of development because Matter, Life and Mind are derived from the different Guṇa aspects of the Universal (Apañcīkṛta-Tanmātra.) But the Tanmātras themselves are evolved similarly from Māyā the material cause.

[2] In Kuṇḍalinī or Laya-yoga the individual actually retraces the stages of the cosmic evolution and becomes one with the initial Energy in its form as Consciousness. For this Yoga proceeds on a Monistic basis.

returns to itself. The potential presupposes preceding actuality. What is potential may or may not be. There is no absolute beginning of this process: and so it has been said "that no Theist can assign a first to Deity nor atheist a first to the systems of things in time." [1] The Sāṃkhyan Material Cause as Energy-Stuff is prior to manifestation a state of equilibrated inner activity [2] associated with the efficient Cause (*Puruṣa*), and in Vedānta the efficient and material causes are aspects of the One Reality the Whole and Full (*Pūrṇa*) with all-mighty Power.[3] Neither in Sāṃkhya nor in this or other Vedāntic schools is the universe the production of something absolutely new: but there is an unfolding or development in the sense that what previously existed in a subtle form in the Cause is made explicit and gross in the effect.[4] In the Vedāntic schools the Lord is the efficient cause.

§ 6

Before stating the doctrine of Vedānta from its transcendental standpoint in which all Causality is as much *Māyā* as the universe itself it is necessary to consider further the question of the relation of essential identity of cause and effect as held by the second Standard and by the third on its empirical side. Cause and effect may be complete or partial. By 'complete cause' is meant the attitude of the universe as a whole at the antecedent moment and the 'complete effect' is the attitude of the universe as a whole at the subsequent moment. When dealing with the complete cause external influences are excluded, that is, influences not within the system itself.[5]

[1] Dr. Sterling. Gifford Lectures (1890), 126.

[2] Sadṛśa-pariṇāma.

[3] Sarva-śaktimaya.

[4] In Madhva's dualism it is exceptionally held that God is not the material cause of the universe.

[5] Thus a seed is growing to be a plant. Here external influences are those external to the forces which constitute the seed such as soil, air, sunshine, rain and so forth. These are partial causes as is also the attraction of the earth producing the effect, namely, the fall of the apple.

As to the treatment of Causality there are thus two standpoints namely the ordinary pragmatic standpoint which deals not with the universe of Fact but with Fact-sections [1] and the philosophic standpoint which tries to deal, so far as possible, with the universe itself. Thus from the first view-point the cause of an eclipse of the moon is the falling of the shadow of the earth [2] on her. From the second view-point the cause is the condition of the universe as a *whole* at the antecedent moment, that is the antecedent attitude of the universe, and the effect is the consequent attitude of the universe, that is the condition of the universe as a *whole* at the subsequent moment. In this case the cause and effect are not held apart and one set of things held to be the cause and the other the effect. The whole as cause is the cause of the whole as effect—the state of the whole which exists first being called the cause, and the other which follows the effect, though the two are essentially one, distinguishable by the specific arrangement of Matter and Force. In the instance given the physical universe as a whole must be in a certain attitude in order that the sun, moon, and earth may be in conjunction and thereby cause the eclipse. Neither sun nor moon can be torn apart from the physical system and treated in an isolated manner. The cause or "antecedent assemblage of conditions" is really the antecedent attitude of the system as a whole. The effect also is not circumscribed to the particular section which we care to notice. It is as wide as the consequent attitude of the universe as a whole. But the ordinary outlook is narrow. Science tries to broaden it; Philosophy to complete. From the ordinary standpoint the equality of the cause and effect relates to

[1] See Prof. P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya's "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder".

[2] Rahu who is said to "devour" the moon is called Bhūchhāyā or Earth-Shadow. All the ancients were not so infantile as is sometimes supposed.

Matter and Force, though in some cases scientific analysis must supplement or correct ordinary analysis in the proof of such equality. But as regards their collocation and distribution it is evident that there is no apparent equality, a point with which I will next deal.

It is obvious that if the cause is absolutely identical with the effect there is no efficient causation at all. But we do, it is said, see "Becoming" that is continuous natural process. Hence arises the notion of relative sameness through a series of changes, stages, positions. In so far as any of the determining conditions of an aspect of reality remain unchanged, in so far that aspect is said to be continuous. The reality of Becoming involves continuity of transition. All natural processes are conceived as continuous. Motion cannot be perceived without continuity. But this continuity again must be relative. For if there be continuity in its strictest sense the cause becomes coincident with the effect, all process becomes impossible and therefore all differences are abolished. Continuity of transition is a necessary presupposition without which Becoming is inconceivable. What however practically is our experience? Objectively we only know successive positions, mere static points. Forms succeed one another in the natural process. Nextly differences of quality are shown in these successive forms. This diversity and succession of forms, discontinuous in themselves, set up the appearance of motion. The forms are many and mutually exclusive. Objectively then all that we know are successive static points which are plural, diverse, different in quality, discontinuous in themselves. The points as objectively given are discrete and unconnected. We do not see transition between one form and another, the melting of one form into another. If we accept process and with it real differences of form, continuity becomes meaningless, for that which exists as a limit only cannot become another limit continuously. Nevertheless the

notion of continuity is imposed on us being involved in the notions of causation, energy and motion. Our experience is apparently not of simultaneity. The terms of reality are successive because mutually exclusive. The cause of the reality of X is not thought of as existing contemporaneously with, but has having arisen before, X. Motion cannot be constructed by any number of mere static points. For such points always involve a gap between them with the result that there is a series of discontinuous points but no motion. What is done by any experiencer is to fill in these gaps by a subjective content. Objectively there is apparently no place for continuity. As regards causation we conceive of an ideal abstraction of Substance-Energy which is the unchanged ground beneath all changes of form which take place in it and we give to the static points a sort of movement and construct the image of a line.[1]

The universe, it is admitted, evolves. Evolving is also changing in a sense. Something is evolving. If there was absolutely no difference in any respect the "what" which in fact evolves would not evolve at all, for it would ever remain what it is. Yet there is something which does so remain. What so remains is the substance, stuff or material and the total amount of energy or Śakti (kinetic or static) working upon or in the substance. Thus if the complete cause be X and the complete effect Y then X = Y as regards the matter in them (Śakti as material cause) and as regards the energy in them (Śakti as efficient cause). But as there is change, and the effect is the cause in some way modified, there is something in respect of which cause and effect in appearance differ, though as regards substance and energy they are the same. This is the collocation or distribution of the matter[2] in it and the collocation or composition or diagram of the forces in it. It is these which constitute what is called in

[1] For a fuller treatment of Continuity see *post*. [2] Viśiṣtarūpa.

Māyā-vāda Vedānta "Name and Form".[1] From the standpoint of this Vedantic school, Name and Form, as changing things, are *Asat*, that is, the contrary of constant and permanent. Their Stuff and Energy are *Sat* as relatively (that is in the world) constant and permanent. If reality be determined by the possession of these characteristics then (according to this definition) the Name and Form are unreal and Substance-Energy are real. Hence X = Y.

The analysis of effect above given applies not only to material but to vital [2] and psychic effects.[3] An analysis of the Cause gives us the same scheme.

From the Indian philosophic standpoint the view taken is that the subsequent total attitude of the universe is the unfolding or evolution (as regards the types[4] at least) of the antecedent total attitude of the universe. Putting aside for the moment the question of Types and their variations, that is whether there is any real variation at all, cause and effect are equal also not only as regards substance-energy but as to the collocation and distribution of matter and force. In what way? If we imagine an evolving "what" as a solitary

[1] Nāma-rūpa: These produced changes or Vikāras such as a pitcher made of earth are names and forms and are Asat, a term which is better translated, non-persistent and not "unreal," whereas the Earth, *i.e.*, the substance is alone Sat (relatively) persistent. The degree of persistency a thing possesses is its Sat. Sat is that which eternally and for all time is Sat. Asat is that which is Sat for a time and becomes Asat at some time.

[2] Prāṇic.

[3] *e.g.*, in a mental effect say anger: the Substance = Mind stuff (Antahkaraṇa): Energy = force of the predispositions (Saṃskāra) + forces of exciting cause or causes. The form (Viśiṣta-rūpa) of that anger is its special form as a psychic state (it is not anger in the abstract but anger as a particular mental state in a particular person at a particular time) and the form of the Saṃskāras, etc., is the particular arrangement of them which represents that anger as an actual presentation into the mind.

[4] These generals or universals called Parajāti are held in the Cosmic Mind as Mahat which corresponds to the Buddhist-Saṃskāra in the chain of causation. These types are a form of pure being (Sattā) the correspondence of which in the rational world is the power to form and hold generals. But in this latter world the particulars are explicit.

something evolving without external influence or environment, the general scheme of collocation or distribution may be the same in both[1] but it cannot be said that the *actual* collocation or distribution of matter and force in the cause is the same in the effect. If it were there would be no change. But evolution means change. From this it follows that the matter and force are redistributing themselves without however giving up the general scheme of distribution. As regards such redistribution there is a difference that is as regards particular forms.[2] Hence while basic matter-form (for the two may be regarded as one) together with their typical arrangements also persists, the actual form does not. If we take[3] persistence as the mark of the Real and the Real to be only that which does so persist, then we may eliminate the changing characteristics of name and form as unreal in which case again X = Y for the residue is constant. If however whilst we regard the ultimate Cause as the Ens Realissimum we give to change or non-persistence a relative reality of its own, then unity can only consist in the identity of the cause which remains the same as cause even when variously self-modified as effect. The Śākta view that a thing changes as regards appearance (collocation, etc.) and yet does not change that is persists as regards energy and substance can only equate X = Y by ignoring the difference in collocation or experience, and the reason why X and Y being identical in substance and energy still differ as regards experience. Not only the appearances of X and Y but also the reason of the difference in appearance is ignored. Without ignoring them we cannot equate X and Y. The identity is affirmed by

[1] *e.g.*, when a small crystal forms into a large one in the solution the scheme of configuration of the molecules remains the same. Thus the cubic shape does not change though the size increases.

[2] Nāma-rūpa.

[3] As the Advaita-Vedānta of Śaṃkara does.

reference to Revelation as direct spiritual experience without attempt to effect explanation in terms of reason. It is the inscrutable (Acintya) Power of God. Śaṃkara is formally able to ignore them by defining his reality or Sat as that which persists so that from this standpoint, X = Y because the collocation of X and that of Y and their reasons do not persist and are therefore the contrary of Sat or Asat.

Thus the pluralism of the first Standard deals with nine independent entities, their properties and relations. Of these, matter is moved not by any inherent Energy but by another independent force called *Kāla*. The motion of one thing is communicated to another. All that is observed is this motion. Cause and effect are two things, and whether one stands to the other in the relation of cause and effect depends on its invariable unconditional, immediate, antecedence. Here we have the empirical notion of cause. The second Standard reduces these Realities to two only and introduces the notion of efficiency which is attributed to one of these namely Consciousness. The other, the Psycho-physical Principle, is inherently active and the cause of its movements is not to be sought outside itself. The relation of Cause and Effect is one of identity. Here we have the notion of causation as metaphysical efficiency. So also in Monistic Vedānta when viewed from the empirical standpoint: only here the efficient and material cause are aspects of one Reality. Lastly, from the absolute standpoint there is no causation at all: the notion having empirical validity only.

POWER AS CONTINUITY

(*Sthiti-śakti*)

§ 1

As the notion of Causality is based upon the more fundamental notion of Continuity, I propose to deal with the latter in this second part. In the present Series as well as elsewhere, Experience, Consciousness, Ākāśa have, in many places, been described as 'Continuum'. Now, with regard to this, we have to satisfy ourselves, if we are to probe deeper into the matter, that, *firstly*, the idea of Continuity is a fundamental and concrete idea (as distinguished from a mere mental abstraction); *secondly*, the idea is grounded in fact, or in other words, the Continuum really exists and is not only fabricated by the mind; *thirdly*, the idea as well as the reality of Continuity manifests itself in thought and in the world order in a variety of forms of which Causality is one. Our problem reduces itself therefore, in this second part, to three questions: (*a*) Is the idea of Continuity a native expression of the Given or Experience, or is it something constructed by imagination and superimposed upon the order of Experience? In other words, Is it a datum of Experience or is it only a mental construct? (*b*) Supposing that Experience involves this idea as its original presentation, the next query is: Does the Continuum *really* exist? Is existence really continuous? While the first is an epistemological question, the second is a metaphysical question. The first enquires as to whether the idea is *given* in Experience, the second as to whether it is *valid*.

(*c*) The next question is—In what forms does Continuity evolve in thought and in reality? *Prima facie*, the ideas of Uniformity and Causality amongst others seem to be forms of the idea of Continuity; are they so? So also, Consciousness, Time and Space amongst others seem to be actual forms of Continuity; are they so? Besides these three theoretical queries, we may have a practical one, *viz.*: (*d*) The Continuum, though it may be given in Experience and really exist, often seems to be veiled in the representation of Experience; now, how can we realise what has thus been veiled? In other words, How can we *live* in consciousness the Whole and the Perfect (*Akhaṇda* and *Pūrṇa*) which we perhaps really are?

§ 2

The first question then is: Is Experience continuous or discontinuous? In seeking to answer this question we must avoid on one hand the mistake of Sensationist Philosophy, and on the other, the illusion of "common sense". The former is committed to the view that our perception can only give us "points of sensation" or the "manifold" of experience which are always discrete. Our mental life is thus a "series" of impressions and ideas (to adopt Hume's classification) which do *not* constitute a continuous flow or "stream" (as supposed by Willam James and others) of experience. The idea of continuity in Time and in Space is a mental construct—and may be an illusion like the notion of an objective causal nexus. Our sense-experience gives us "facts" which are discrete, discontinuous, finite, particular. This psychology of Hume, Mill, Bain and others, and taken up by many physicist philosophers, which would seek to explain the phenomena of experience by the association of atoms of sensation, involves a fundamental mistake. Experience is never built up in that way. Experience never begins with, and never is, atoms or points of sensation. It always is a

continuum, a universe. As such it is the Given, the Fact.[1] The discrete points of sensation are obtained by dissociation, analysis, veiling or ignorance of the Whole.[2] The whole is always an undefined and undefinable universe of sounds, sights, smells, touches, tastes, organic sensations, ideas, feelings, hopes, fears, likes, dislikes, desires, etc. These constitute a seamless, alogical mass. The "elements" surprise one another, are discriminated from one another, not in presentation but in representation, not in perception but in review. It is true that the distribution of attentive interest is not homogeneous and uniform over the whole field: that while some parts are on the apex of the curve of presentation, others lie more or less nearly on the slopes. By reason of such preferential and in-equal distribution of interest, there arises the distinction between what William James would call the "substantive states" and the "states of transition," the "warm and intimate" tracts of consciousness and the "fringe" of consciousness. It is the non-recognition of the states of transition, the fringe, etc., constituting the slopes of the complete curve of presentation, which is accountable for the fantastic psychology of the sensationist philosophers reducing our mental life to isolated, disconnected "points" of sensation only.[3] Mental life is never a manifold of discrete elements, a series: it is *always* a continuum. This continuum which is ever given is ignored for *practical* purposes, and only points of sensation which happen to serve some practical purposes or other are noted. The points or portions thus especially noted are regarded by us as constituting the *whole* experience of the given moment; the rest, though actually

[1] See Professor P. N. Mukhyopadhyāya's "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder".

[2] See *ante*, "Mind"—Extensiveness.

[3] See *ante*, "Mind", for a criticism of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika view of Mind making it *aṇu* or Point only.

given, are ignored by us, and hence become veiled. When, for example, I am gazing at the star Sirius in a clear night, my whole experience is supposed to be concentrated for the time being at that particular star, while, really, my total experience at that time is a universe involving not only a more or less veiled presentation of many neighbouring stars, but of many imperfectly attended sounds, smells, touches, organic sensations, ideas, memories, etc. Experience at that moment is a continuum, seamless, indefinable, alogical: it undoubtedly involves many elements, but these are not yet logically discriminated *as* elements. This entire experience as given is the Fact. But I am not ordinarily interested in the whole; I am interested in parts or segments. The parts I am especially interested in are especially attended to, and are emphasised: they constitute, so to say, the crests of the continuous waves of presentation. The experiences which connect together the points of emphasis, the slopes and hollows which lie between the crests of the waves, happen not to be interesting, and they are practically ignored by us —not indeed in intuition, but in review, representation and description. We *think* as though the points of emphasis were alone the whole of experience. This thought, as we have seen, is practically useful. Without preferential regard or distributive attention, life, as we ordinarily live it, would be impossible. Hence the points of emphasis, the "crests" of the waves of presentation, may be called Pragmatic Facts, and they are, as before explained, Fact-sections.[1]

It will be observed, therefore, that the continuum is an inalienable datum of our life of experience—it is a fundamental posture, an original attitude of the Given. It is *not* obtained by the putting together of originally discrete factors by imagination; in other words, it is not a mental construct, a result of abstraction.

[1] See "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder".

Now, continuity has never been denied in India, except by some forms of Buddhistic thought. Continuity in its various forms will be studied in a later section, but here we may note three forms of it. In the first place, there is the distinction between ontological continuity and epistemological continuity. The former is continuity pertaining to Reality, apart from, and independent of, experience. It raises this issue: Is Reality or forms of Reality continuous, whether or not we experience or think it as such? The latter is continuity pertaining to experience, and it raises the following two issues: (1) Is experience or forms of experience actually continuous? (2) Has our life of experience a *basis* or ground which is continuous, though conscious experience in itself may not be so? Keeping these two issues apart, therefore, we may have, in the second place, another distinction, *viz.*, that between psychological continuity and epistemological continuity. The former relates to experience as it is actually felt or intuited, the latter to what may be implied in experience, either as its basis or as its condition. Now, keeping in mind these distinctions, we may note that the First Standard or Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika apparently does not recognise psychological continuity, but it clearly and definitely recognises the two other forms of it. As regards ontological continuity, *four* of the fundamental Substances (*Dravyas*) postulated by the First Standard are not only continuous, but infinitely continuous, which is the meaning of the term *Vibhu*. Each of the four entities, *Ākāśa*, *Kāla*, *Dik* and *Ātman*, is *Vibhu*. We need not discuss here the first three continuities, but refer only to the last. *Ātman*, which according to the First Standard is the basis or ground (*āśraya*) of experience, is an infinitely continuous substance. Though experiences themselves are discrete and transient, the spiritual ground in which they inhere is a continuum. The fundamental basis or ground of experience always is and everywhere is. A given experience has *prāgabhāva* (*i.e.*, non-existence

before actual appearance or presentation), and *dhvaṃsā-bhāva* (*i.e.*, non-existence at the third moment from its origination); but the Subject whose experience it is and wherein it inheres remains as a "permanent possibility" (to use the words of J. S. Mill). This permanent possibility of experience is always and everywhere. This conception of an eternal and all-pervasive continuum as the spiritual basis of experience is remarkable, and is characteristic of orthodox Hindu thought. According to this thought, which is clearly in evidence in the Vedas, the Spirit, whatever its fundamental nature be, is an infinite *plenum*, akin to the Æther of Science, though purer and more perfect (as we shall see), whose individuality arises chiefly, if not solely, from the circumstance of its being associated with different Minds, Sensoria, etc., just as according to Science, the individuality of the physical atoms or corpuscles arises from the circumstance of the sea of ether being subjected in different places to different forms of stress and strain.

How for instance does, according to Science, the difference between an atom of Oxygen and an atom of Nitrogen arise? Both are believed to be made up of, and grounded in, the same continuous stuff—ether. But while O is a relatively stable stress-and-strain centre of a *certain* type in, and of, ether, N is a stress-and-strain centre of a different type. Owing to the difference in the disposition of *Śākti* (Power) in them, their properties apparently differ.[1] But two points, brought into relief by recent Science, are worthy of note. *First*, that assuming electricity to be, from the physical point of view, the fundamental mode of substance-energy (it is not a mere form of energy to-day), we are enabled to say not only that it exists where it appears to exist (as "free" electrons), but it exists, in a relatively static condition, even where it does not appear to exist, *i.e.*, in the so-called "neutral" atoms of

[1] See *ante*, "Matter".

O, N, etc. (as "bound" electrons).[1] The basis of substance-energy in Matter (whether as Ether or as Electricity which is by some believed to be a condition of Ether) is thus ubiquitous. *Second*, as a corollary to the above we have this that in spite of all the difference between O and N and the rest, a slow process of evolutionary transmutation is noticeable in the material world by reason of which O, N and the rest are changing and evolving, though this universal process (symbolised by the Vedic Ṛṣis as *yajña* in many places) may be especially noticeable in what are called the radio-active substances.[2] This universal radio-activity is evidence not only of the unity of the fundamental physical basis of Matter as substance-energy, but of the unity of the *law* of material being.

Now, this fundamental unity as regards substance, energy and law in the material world will serve not only as an analogy but an illustration of the fundamental unity in the world of experience. Life, Mind and Spirit are on a higher plane, and on a more comprehensive scale, what Ether and Electricity are, according to Science, on a lower plane and on a comparatively restricted scale. In other words, as we shall presently see, Life, Mind and Spirit are the ascending orders of a series of continua of which Ether and Electricity are comparatively lower orders. The Ātman as Spirit is thus the Perfect Ether—*Ether in the limit.* Ultimately it is, as the Vedānta says, the *Cidākāśa.* The Chhāndogya Upaniṣad makes it *jyāyān* (the highest) and *parāyaṇa* (the ultimate ground). It is the Immense—*Brahman.* It, therefore, underlies, and manifests as, Time, Space, Life, Cosmic Mind, Physical Ether, and in fact, as all other continua. It is *its* pervasive presence which makes anything appear as a continuum. To withdraw it is to withdraw the basis of continuity—nay, the basis of existence. This spiritual basis of continuity and existence in its purer forms (*viz.*, as *Cit*) will be studied in a special volume

[1] See "Matter".

[2] *Ibid.*

of this Series, but here we may note the point which is especially pertinent to the present discussion. It is this: All the three standards of Hindu Philosophy definitely recognise this spiritual basis of continuity, though its *nature* is seen with increasing purity and clearness as we gradually mount up from the First to the Third Standard.

It is thus remarkable that even the First Standard which, generally speaking, reviews the world from a commonsense and pragmatic standpoint, makes the spiritual basis of experience (*Ātman*) *vibhu*, *i.e.*, a limitless continuum. It thus makes *Ātman* similar to what Ether is to Science. As in Science the basis of Matter and the possibility of its physical or concrete manifestation is given everywhere, so according to the First Standard, the basis and possibility of experience is given everywhere. Far from making the *Ātman*, as some of the Cartesian philosophers did, the special proprium of man, Hindu thought, in all its stages, recognises it, as latent or patent, in *all* things and in *all* places. But then, as we have pointed out, the standpoint of the First Standard is pragmatic, and we accordingly find it stopping short of the last limit to which the theory of continuity can be consistently pushed. The First Standard is, generally speaking, the first approximation, the first approach to Truth. We have, therefore, the following limitations or reservations left with regard to *Ātman* or the spiritual basis of experience. (1) Though *vibhu*, it is limited by the independent existence of other *vibhus* (or infinite continua), *viz.*, *Ākāśa*, *Kāla* and *Dik* (though in some branches of Neo-Logic there have been attempts to reduce to a common denominator which is *Īśvara* or *Paramātman*). (2) It is limited by the independent existence of a Chief *Ātman* (somewhat like the Arch-monad of Leibnitz). (3) It is limited by its own plurality, that is, by the fact that Spirits are many. (4) And as regards functioning, it is limited by the circumstance of its having to depend upon inner and outer

instruments (*antarindrya* and *bāhyendrya*) and objective material in order to rise to a life of conscious experience.[1] Hence though it is the basis and possibility of experience, it has to depend upon the co-operation of other factors for the purpose of getting actual, conscious experience. It is only the Supreme Spirit whose knowledge (*jñāna*), etc., is *nitya* (permanent). All these limitations or reservations are made, as we shall see in the volume on *Cit*, on pragmatic considerations, as approximations or approaches to Truth. Closer approximations or nearer approaches are made by the two higher Standards, until at last in supreme experience the Fact is recognised as the *Pūrṇa* (Whole) itself of which the *Śruti* paradoxically says: Even if *Pūrṇa* be subtracted from *Pūrṇa*, *Pūrṇa* remains.

Reverting, however, to the classification of continuity given before, we now see that the First Standard definitely recognises both ontological continuity and epistemological continuity. It recognises the latter inasmuch as, according to it, the spiritual basis of experience (*i.e.*, what is presupposed and implied in experience) is *vibhu*. But on account of the working of the atomic Mind, Sensoria, *saṃskāras*, etc., the actual experiences are, from the pragmatic standpoint of this standard discrete, transient, serial, and not continuous.[2] There is thus no psychological continuity.

Thus whilst the continuity of the spiritual basis of experience may be guaranteed by the experience of the Seers (Revelation), or may be *inferred* from the data given in our own experience, the First Standard is not prepared to say that our conscious experience itself directly gives us sufficient warrant for believing in such continuity. In actual feeling, we have a manifold, a series only, as the older generation of Empiricists would say. There is no immediate apprehension, no intuition, of continuity in our mental life. This, however,

[1] See " Reality " and " Mind ".

[2] *Ibid.*

is, according to our showing, ignorance or veiling of the Given—the Fact. Such ignorance is practically useful: hence, commonly, we all thus ignore, select and emphasise. The Second Standard rends this veil of ignorance. It shows that the spiritual basis of experience and consciousness of which experiences are modes are not two, but one. In other words, consciousness or *Cit* itself is the spiritual basis of experience. If therefore that basis be continuous we must have an immediate feeling or intuition of it. That feeling or intuition may be, for practical reasons, obscured in our ordinary mental life, but it can never be altogether effaced, since the very essence of the life of experience is consciousness. Particular experiences may cast their "reflections" on *Puruṣa* (or *Cit*), just as fleeting clouds may cast their shadows on the surface of a lake; but as in the one case, so in the other, the "reflections," though themselves varied, discrete and fleeting, do not make that which supports or reflects them (*i.e.*, *Cit*) itself so. *Puruṣa* indeed owns those reflections, and they *appear* also as his own; but really he abides undiminished and unconditioned, while they come and go. It is the recognition of this felt or psychological continuity over and above the two other forms of continuity which makes *Sāṃkhya-yoga* a standard of closer approximation than *Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika*. But even this view is, as we have seen in the preceding sections circumscribed by pragmatic considerations. The continuity of the Spirit is still limited, firstly, by the fact that the number is plural, and secondly, by the fact that there is maintained a material or objective Principle of experience independent of Consciousness, which is *Prakṛti*. According to our nomenclature, therefore, the Sāṃkhyan *Puruṣa* like the Vaiśeṣika *Ātman* is still a Fact-section, a Pragmatic Fact.

The Fact is not reached till we come to the Vedāntic idea *Brahman*—the Immense and Whole in which everything is grounded and out of which everything is evolved. And

what is this Immense, this Whole? It is Experience when we take it without ignorance, and therefore, without any limitations or reservations. It is the recognition of what we are, and can never cease to be, except through ignorance or veiling of our complete Being.[1] It is certainly alogical being, the uncircumscribed intuition of life; but at the first effort of analysis, it presents two aspects to our thought, *viz.*, a quiescent or static Being-aspect and a stressing or dynamic Becoming-aspect: the aspect of *Cit* or Consciousness as the ground and manifester, and the aspect of *Śākti* or Power of Consciousness to ignore, veil, circumscribe and variously evolve itself. In the Śākta view, the former is *Śiva* and the latter is *Śakti*, and they are in reality one, or rather, the Fact which they compose is an alogical Whole which in its perfectness is not expressible in terms of any logical category. This Whole is the perfection, "limit" and basis of all our continua, Time, Space, Ether, and so forth. And whatever may be said of Time, Space, etc., this alogical Whole is no *theory*; it is the Fact.

The well-known *Eko'haṃ bahu syāṃ prarāyeya* which describes the creative ideation of *Brahman*, clearly involves this idea of the Power of Consciousness or Consciousness as Power to evolve as the infinitely varied world of experience. The fundamental condition of undefined, uncircumscribed and therefore, alogical Being-experience is one of wonder [2] and almost one of awe.[3] In the Ṛg-veda itself the Fact is spoken of in many places as *Aditi* (lit. that which is not segmented; therefore, the Entire, the Whole). She is the mother of the gods,

[1] See "Approaches to Truth" and "Patent Wonder" where the Doctrine of Fact is elaborated.

[2] Kathopaniṣad and Gītā (Āścaryavat paśyati kaścidenam, etc.).

[3] Bṛhadāraṇyaka, where the experience of unity or singleness is spoken of *as if* it were an experience of fear. The idea is—the Primordial One multiplies itself because it seems as if it were afraid of its own singleness.

and particularly of *Dyauh* and *Pṛthivī* (loosely translated as Heaven and Earth). As *Aditi* means the Entire, the Whole, so *Diti* means the section, the part. In the Ṛg-veda itself we have unmistakeable evidence (as we shall see) to show that in the intuition of the Vedic seers *Aditi* was no other than what we have known as the Fact, so that *Diti*, her opposite, is the Fact-section. The former is the Fact accepted and manifested; the latter is the Fact ignored and veiled.

Aditi, therefore, is the vedic equivalent of what we have so long been speaking of as the continuum in the limit of Perfect Continuum. In Chhāndogya-Brāhmaṇa it is *Ākāśa*, *jyāyān* and *parāyaṇam*. In many of the Upaniṣads it appears as *Brahman* or *Ātman*; sometimes as *Prāṇa*. In the Ṛg-veda itself, Indra, Varuṇa, Soma, Agni, Viśvakarmā, etc., are apparently dealt with as separate Devatās, but looking narrowly into the matter one cannot fail to perceive that beneath all this appearance of multiplicity, there runs not only a connecting thread of harmony and kinship, but one of unity. In other words, viewed from the deeper standpoint, the vedic gods certainly present the aspect of a unitary system. Indra, Soma, Agni and the rest each, in the ultimate sense, means the Perfect Continuum which is also Perfect Experience. It is not fair to say that such meaning or such metaphysics can possibly be *read* into the Vedas by us (and were in fact read into them by Sāyana and other commentators in many places), but that probably the vedic seers themselves had little or no suspicion of that meaning or that metaphysics; and that their minds had hardly yet been elevated above the level of natural animism, spiritism, etc., which represents the infancy of the human mind in every age and country.

To the penetrating and discerning eye, the vedic literature offers three stages or planes of interpretation, and these planes of understanding and interpretation were, as we shall see in another volume of the present Series, not foreign to the

minds of the vedic Ṛṣis. In other words, there is ample internal evidence in the vedic literature itself to warrant the hypothesis that such lines of interpretation, instead of being later interpolations, were actually known and pursued by those who were first responsible for the vedic hymns. It is true that in the *Saṃhitā* portion of the vedas, these lines are not clearly indicated, and that for a clear differentiation of these lines one must look into such Upaniṣads as the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka, Chhāndogya*, etc., which mark the natural disengagement of thought from the ritualistic side of the vedas (*Karma-kāṇda*), and its rise to the philosophy of life and its values and their realisation (*Jñāna-kāṇda*). But though not very clearly set forth, these lines or planes are unmistakeably given in the Vedas—as progressively higher standpoints of understanding, realising and representing the subject-matter. These standpoints which, as we have said, are definitely adopted in the Upaniṣads (in such matters as the *Udgītha, Yajña*, etc.), appear also to be adopted, though not quite so explicitly, in the *Saṃhitā* portion of the Vedas, in the understanding and representation of such matters as the nature of Indra, Aditi, Soma, Agni, Yajña, etc. The standpoints are: *Ādhyātmika, Ādhideivika* and *Ādhibhautika*. The first interprets in terms of Experience or Consciousness; the second interprets in terms of forms of Consciousness-Power (*Cit-Śakti*) objectively treated; the third interprets in terms of objective things in which *Cit* is apparently veiled. The first is psychological; the second is psycho-physical; and the last is physical. The first gives us *Caitanya*; the second a *Devatā*; the third what appears to us a *jada*.

Now, Aditi, Indra, Agni, Soma, etc., have all been thought of and represented on these three lines. Aditi, for example, is according to the first standpoint, Perfect and seamless Experience which we have called the Fact. There is intrinsic evidence in the Vedas themselves to show that

Aditi was actually so thought of by the Ṛṣis.[1] According to the second standpoint, she is the primordial manifestation of *Cit-Śakti* as Mother-Power in whose womb all forms of *Cit-Śakti* (called Devatās) are born.[2] In the evolution of the world, the manifestations of the forms of *Cit-Śakti* (*i.e.*, forms of Consciousness working as agents) constitute an hierarchy of genera and species, of which the highest order or *summum genus* is Aditi (the undivided). She is therefore the most generic form of *Cit-Śakti*, as according to Mantra-Śāstra, the mantra *Om* is the most generic form of *śabda*.[3] From the third or physical standpoint, she is a subtle, continuous *plenum* (roughly analogous to Ether) in which the physical universe "lives, moves and has its being". In each case, be it observed, she stands for a continuum: as meaning that which is not divided, she represents the idea of continuity in each case. In each case again she presents the Mother-aspect. In the first, she is the Mother-Experience or Fact out of which all particularised experiences or Fact-sections are elaborated. In the second, she is the Mother-*Cit-Śakti* or Devatā which represents the original, conscious "vital impetus" which is the Root of all the varied forms of conscious vital impetuses or urges in the world. Not only *Dyauh* and *Pṛthivī*, but *Indra*, *Āgni*, *Vāyu* and the rest are her progeny; each is a special form of Consciousness working as an impetus in the world; if we generalise these specific forms, or take their generic character, we have the original or Mother-form which is *Aditi*. In the third, she is the Mother-stuff (call it Ether or Electricity or Protyle) in which the "atoms" and "elements" of Matter originate as strain-centres or centres of discontinuity.[4]

[1] For a full discussion of the subject see Professor P. N. Mukhyopādhyāya's Lectures on Veda and Vijñāna (in Bengali).

[2] The matter is dealt with in "Mahāmāyā".

[3] See "Garland of Letters".

[4] See the section "Matter".

Not only Aditi, but Indra and the rest have been understood and represented in the Vedas on the three lines before explained. And what is more important and more pertinent to our present purpose is this that each Devatā has been dealt with specifically as well as generically from the three standpoints. Generically treated, each Devatā = Aditi = the Continuum in the limit: the progeny are thus reabsorbed in the Mother-Power; the Fact-sections in the Fact.[1]

These then are the cardinal principles of vedic (or śāstric) interpretation: (*a*) the subject-matter is dealt with according to the three lines or on the three planes before explained; (*b*) each matter is dealt with generically as well as specifically, so that the vedic treatment of it yields a series in the ascending and descending order; and (*c*) the vedas often take the superior "limit" of the series (*caramotkarṣa* or *paramotkarṣa*), and thus reduce the specifically different matters (such as Indra, Agni, etc.) to fundamental identity. If, therefore, in our vedic (or śāstric) studies we lose these clues, we shall soon find ourselves lost (as many orientalists have been) in a jungle where there is no track leading to a system; and which abounds with dangerous pitfalls of hopelessly obscure paradoxes, difficult tangles and flagrant contradictions. In Ṛg-veda, X. 72, for example, we have the genesis of the Devatās. In that *Sūkta*, we have the following paradox: Prajāpati Dakṣa is born of Aditi and Aditi is born of Prajāpati Dakṣa. Aditi is thus the mother as well as the daughter of Prajāpati. What can this mean? Ṛg. I. 69. 1. (*Pariprajātah*, etc.), for example again, says that Agni, though he is the son of the Devas, is also their father. What is this? Ṛg. I. 95. 4. also speaks of Agni in a similar strain: Agni, though son he be, has given birth to his mothers.[2]

[1] See "Serpent Power" for the Tāntric *Bhūta-Śuddhi*.

[2] "Vatsah Mātṛī janayata, etc."

And there are similar paradoxes regarding Indra and the rest. The Ṛṣis used to record their experiences in a species of shorthand which we cannot hope to be able to decipher unless we carefully follow the clues above explained. We need not here attempt an explanation of these and many other paradoxes,[1] but may simply observe this that Aditi who is represented as the mother of the Devas cannot obviously be taken in the same sense as Aditi who is the daughter. So about Agni, Indra and the rest. In the light of the principles before explained, it will be readily perceived that Aditi, Agni, etc., are not conceived *rigidly* in the vedas, but that each constitutes a series with a superior and an inferior limit spread over the three planes referred to before. Thus reviewed Aditi as Mother = Caramā or Paramā Aditi or Aditi (Continuum) in the superior limit = Indra = Agni taken in the superior limit. In the superior limit all specific or divergent manifestations (whether as Caitanya, or as Devatā or as Bhūta) converge and meet in fundamental, undivided unity which is the Fact. Aditi as daughter is obviously a lower continuum or a continuum in the descending order of the continua-series. Suppose now Aditi as Mother = the Perfect Continuum of Experience, the alogical Fact; Prajāpati = Experience in which the Self has differentiated itself as the Subject and makes an object of that Experience, and wills to evolve that Experience into mutually distinguishable Fact-sections (the stage of the Prajāpati is itself a Fact-section as compared with the Fundamental Given which is alogical); Aditi as daughter = experience evolved and conditioned as Ākāśa (or any other lower continuum) by the creative volition of Prajāpati. This is a solution of the paradox from the *ādhyātmika* or psychological standpoint. And it can be justly claimed that this solution is not simply *read* into the Vedas by later commentators or by ourselves.

[1] See " Veda and Vijñāna ".

Similarly, Agni, Indra, Vāyu and others in their ultimate sense stand for the Perfect Continuum. And there can be little doubt that they *were* taken in their ultimate sense (as well as in their relative senses) by the vedic Ṛṣis. In many places, Agni stands for ordinary fire or heat, though with respect to this also many hymns assert that it is universally present, both as latent and as patent.[1] There are many epithets applied to Agni which are quite applicable to what is ordinarily sensed by us as fire or heat. There are other epithets which can be applicable only to something universally existent—latently even in water—which is indestructible[2] and eternal. Some *Ṛks* make it unmeasured;[3] others make it immutable;[4] others again make it great or a continuum.[5] It is true that in some *Ṛks* Agni is described as the son of Force or Energy, *vala*[6] or Śakti; but there are others which clearly identify Agni with *Ātman* or *Brahman*;[7] and there are a few which are understandable only if Agni be regarded as a form of *Cit-Śakti*, the epithets used being *vidvān*,[8] *vedhasah*,[9] etc. On the whole, if we carefully study Agni throughout the vedas, the conclusion seems to be irresistible, *viz.*, that the vedic Ṛṣis realised Agni on all the three planes explained before and dealt with it generically as well as specifically—that is, as a continua-series with a superior and an inferior limit. Ultimately, Agni like Aditi is treated as the Primary Root and Basis of all Becoming.[10]

The vedic cosmogony starts, as we have seen, with a continuum which is commonly described as a sort of cosmic fluid.[11] Ṛg. X. 3. 8. asks: Where does this Water begin?

[1] Ṛg., I. 68. 1; I. 59; I. 95. 4; I. 65. 5, etc.
[2] Ṛg., I. 26. 9. [3] Ṛg., I. 27. 11. [4] Ṛg., I. 73. 2.
[5] Ṛg., I. 59; I. 68. 1, etc.
[6] Ṛg., I. 45. 9; I. 26. 10; I. 27. 2. [7] Ṛg., I. 18. 7.
[8] Ṛg., X. 1. 3. [9] Ṛg., I. 72. 1, etc. [10] Ṛg., X. 5. 7.
[11] Ṛg., X. 82. 1; Ṛg., X. 190, etc.

Where is its middle? And where is its end? Evidently, therefore, it is a boundless *plenum* symbolised as Water which again in later Śāstric works appears as *kāraṇa-salila* (the causal fluid). Ṛg. X. 82. 1. shows that what is first created by *Viśvakarmā* is a continuous cosmic substance not yet finitised into a granular structure. Ṛg. X. 72. 6. definitely, though metaphorically, outlines the process by which granules or centres of strain appear in the continuous cosmic stuff. It tells us how the Devatās begin to dance in the cosmic all-pervasive Water; and how grains or particles (symbolised as dust) are formed by the dance of the gods. This important vedic parable is traceable in some of the other so-called mythologies of the world, and it represents a fundamental law of creative evolution. It shows the birth of centres of stress-and-strain in an otherwise placid and homogeneous cosmic substance; the birth of the " cosmic dust " from the " cosmic fluid ". Almost all philosophic systems and almost all physical theories which have ever ventured into metaphysics have had to deal with this fundamental riddle, *viz.*, how discontinuities first appear in the midst of continuity, heterogeneity evolves out of homogeneity. Modern Physics too is faced with this riddle. If, for instance, we take the Ether of Physical Science as the approximate equivalent on the physical plane of what is spoken of in the vedic parable as the Mother Fluid, then physicists are called upon, supposing they care to go to the very root of the matter, to explain how the Prime Atoms or Electrons or Centres of Intrinsic strain appear in a continuous Ether. And there appears to be a fundamental truth in the hypothesis of Lord Kelvin and others that, if Ether be something akin to a Perfect Fluid, vortex motion cannot be imparted to Ether in different centres except by a miracle, that is to say, by the action of an extra-physical agency.[1] Now, this extra-physical agency is, according to Indian

[1] See " Matter ".

conception, *Cit-Śakti* which, in various forms, appears in the vedas as the Devatās or gods. The dance of the gods, therefore, means the action of the Forms of *Cit-Śakti* upon the primordial and continuous cosmic stuff, by which action "dusts" appear meaning discontinuities or centres of strain (gyrostatic or otherwise).

Practically the same truth is expressed in somewhat different terms by the Manu-samhitā which opens with a cosmogony. Here too the primordial cosmic substance is symbolised as *Ap* or Water (which is peculiarly apt to express a condition of mobile continuity). In this Water the Creator casts His seed.[1]

This of course means two things: (1) the fundamental action of *Cit-Śakti* upon the given Datum of cosmic Matter; (2) by that action the cosmic Matter becomes, so to say, impregnated, that is, informed with *Cit-Śakti*, instinct with Consciousness-Power. This is quite in consonance with the Vedāntic doctrine that there is no evolution of *Prakṛti* or Cosmic Matter except by and through the action of *Cit* as Power.[2] In the Tantras this is spoken of as the co-operation of *Śiva* as Efficient Cause and *Śakti* as Material Cause in the creation of the world. By the action of *Cit-Śakti* the Mother Stuff (symbolised as *Āpah* or Waters) contains the seed, that is, potency of the Creator, and thus becomes the possibility of evolution as the world. This condition of potentiality or possibility is spoken of as the cosmic Egg or Ovum (*Brahmānda*). It should be noted in this connection that in the vedas themselves *Agni* is frequently described as being born in the womb of water and also as impregnating water—a symbol which on the physical plane means [1] the presence of *Agni* as Latent Heat in water (and not only in water but in all *Bhūtas—Sarva-bhūteṣu nigūrhah*), and the

[1] *Tāsu Vījamavākṣipat.*

[2] See Vedānta, particularly the Sūtras, *Īkṣater-nāśabdam*, and *Racanānupapatternānumānaṃ.*

formation of rain-drops by *Agni* acting as electric corpuscles or Electrons as centres of condensation (a modern scientific truth founded upon experimental evidence and quite well-known to the vedic seers [1]). On a higher plane, however, *Agni* means *Cit-Śakti* and *Ap Māyā-Śakti*, and we have seen how the latter becomes instinct with the former, and how this is essential to creative evolution.

The fact ultimately is experience, and we may observe that this vedic cosmogony seems to be well-grounded in experience as we actually have it. We have direct knowledge of causal efficiency when by a volition we set in motion matter in the motor centres of the brain. We as forms of *Cit-Śakti* do upon the matter in the brain what in the vedic parable the gods are supposed to have done upon the primordial cosmic stuff or Water. As Indra assisted by the Maruts is supposed in another familiar vedic parable to have released the cows shut up in the caves by Pāni,[2] so every Centre of Consciousness (*e.g.*, I) releases by its activity power latent in matter. When again the Manusamhitā speaks of the dichotomous division of the Cosmic Ovum, and says that the upper half becomes *Dyauh* while the lower becomes *Pṛthivī*, and the intervening space *Antarīkṣa*, it draws upon a vedic source. Ṛg., X. 82. 1 tells us how Viśva-karma first creates a continuum in which *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī* are still indistinguishable from each other; then afterwards, they become separate and distinguishable from each other. *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī* are crudely interpreted to mean Heaven and Earth respectively; but there seems to exist enough internal evidence in the vedas themselves to show that they were not so crudely understood by the seers, but that they, like every other matter, were understood in the three planes we have explained before.[3] *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī* is the symbol

[1] See " Veda and Vijñāna ".

[2] Ṛg., I. 6. 5 and X. 108.

[3] See " Veda and Vijñāna ".

or short-hand description for any condition of existence which has become polarised, that is, which presents two opposite poles (*e.g.*, the positive and negative poles in Electro-magnetics). The polarised substance may be immense (*mahat*) or small (*aṇu*). For example, when two unit charges of electricity of opposite kind (called corpuscles or electrons in Science, particularly the negative ones) dissociate from each other and create by their stresses a gap between them, we have the truth of the vedic parable about *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī* illustrated on the physical plane. The mutually associated condition of existence is a neutral condition—*Dyauh* and *Pṛthivī* rolled together into one, so to say. There is then no *antarīkṣa* (inter-space) between them. They are indistinguishable: there is no manifested polarity. For polarity to actually manifest itself, each must dissociate itself from the other. And unless poles manifest themselves, there is no manifestation of kinetic energy, and therefore no work done. Hence the dichotomy of *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī* is essential to creative evolution. In the psychological plane, this means the polarity of Subject-Object, *Aham-Idam*, and our experience evolves precisely upon the appearance of this polarity.[1] In the evolution of living beings too appearance of polarity (whether in the shape of sexes or not) seems to be essential. This fundamental fact is symbolised by the parable of *Dyāvā-Pṛthivī*.

The Primary Basis of evolution (*i.e.*, from and upon which evolution starts) is, like the Primary Basis of our experience, alogical, indefinable, inscrutable. This is variously described in the vedas as *Asat*,[2] *Rātri*,[3] etc. The Manusaṃhitā describes it as *Tamobhūtam*, and gives it such adjectives as *aprajñāta* (unknown), *alakṣaṇa* (indefinable), *apratarkya* (inscrutable, unthinkable). This *tamas*, however, is not darkness; it is a condition of being of which though we may have intuition, we cannot have any thought, any logical judgment. The

[1] See "Approaches to Truth". [2] Ṛg., X. 72. 3-4 [3] Ṛg., X. 190.

approximate equivalent of this in our mental life is *suṣupti* or dreamless sleep. Ṛg., X. 72. 3-4 speak of the birth of *Diks* or Directions. This is important as it shows that the Primary Continuum from and out of which evolution proceeds, is an undirected, "scalar" condition of existence—one in which "lines" of force or tendencies to manifestation have not yet appeared. In the Mantra-śāstra, the undirected, massive condition of Power which precedes creative energising in definite directions, is called *Nāda*.[1]

To sum up: The Continuum has been understood in the vedas in what the Chhāndogya calls *Parovarīyān* fashion; the result is that we have a series of continua, the superior limit of which is *Cit*, which is in the vedānta the Primary or Absolute Continuum (*Ātman* or *Brahman*); what are pragmatically regarded by us as continua such as Ether, Air, Water and so forth, are only relatively so. It is important to bear in mind the distinction between Primary Aditi and Secondary Aditi, between Secondary Aditi and Tertiary Aditi, and so on. Otherwise the Śāstra will appear, as it has in fact appeared to many, as a jungle in which there is no path.

§ 3

In the preceding long section we have dealt with the meaning of continuity, its presentation in the Śāstra (and particularly in the vedas), and its psychological basis. In the remaining few pages we shall attempt to give only a synopsis of the subject-matter which, as regards some points or aspects, has already been discussed in the preceding pages, and which, as regards other points or aspects, will be discussed in some of the forthcoming volumes. Now, we have seen that we have sufficient warrant for the idea of continuity in our normal experience which is a universe in fact, but is veiled or ignored, and thereby reduced, for

[1] See "Garland of Letters".

pragmatic reasons. The veil makes us take things by their contraries. Thus what is in fact a boundless *plenum* is practically accepted by us as a tiny "fact" of experience, *e.g.*, as a particular sound or colour, a particular feeling or idea. The real "Fact" is supposed by us to be an "abstraction" or a mental construct; while the pragmatic "fact-section" which in reality is abstract is taken as the "Fact". Thus sensation appears to be more real and more original than perception. It is therefore necessary for us to be able to lift the veil in order to have a full and complete view of Experience as it is. This is *Vidyā* which is opposed to *Avidyā* (ignorance). The lifting of the veil, and the consequent realisation of Experience as it is, is the work of *Sādhanā*. Evidence of continuity, though not lacking in ordinary life, is thus supplied by *Yoga*.

In what is called *Kuṇḍalinī-Yoga Bhūtaśuddhi*, there is effected a progressive absorption of all limited and discrete forms of experience (*i.e.*, fact-sections) into the Primary Continuum which is *Śiva-Śakti* united together. It is the merging of the finite into the Infinite, of the part into the Whole, of the measurable and thinkable into the Immeasurable and Unthinkable. This is the realisation of *So'ham*. Then again, starting from this, the limited forms of experience are progressively evolved and in the reverse order (as compared with the order of absorption).[1] Yoga establishes the continuity of experience (*a*) as regards extensity, and (*b*) as regards protensity or duration. In *Samādhi* it reveals the *Cidākāśa* which is Cit manifested as extensity. It also shows the continuity of mental life (the nexus between actual presentations and possible presentations or *Saṃskāras*), by lighting up subliminal consciousness. It traces the complete and apparently infinite curve of mental life not only by showing how actual presentations persist in subtle forms when they sink below the threshold of consciousness, but also by tracing the

[1] See "Serpent Power".

curve out through previous cycles of birth.[1] It therefore shows that there is no void in *Cit*, and interruption in the flow of experience. Further, it is able to show that the life-cycle of the world itself is continuous not only in this sense that it has no absolute beginning and end, but in this also that the cycle of the life-history of the world continually repeats itself, as regards the Types at least, if not as regards their detailed manifestation. This gives us continuity of the World Form, and of the Law of its evolution.

§ 4

In the earlier section "Matter", the physical basis of Continuity has been discussed. There reference was made to the search after the limit of the Continua-series and after that of the Discontinua-series made in Science. Search in one direction has now brought us up to Ether, and in the other, down to the Electron. But as we have seen, neither the scientific Ether nor the Electron can be taken as the limiting position. It is just possible that the Science of to-morrow will push beyond both. But in any case the need of "points" of charge or centres of stress-and-strain, and of a continuous medium (whatever that turns out to be) somehow linking them up, will remain. Particular *forms* of Ethers and Charges may be given up as being not fundamental; but Ether *as* Continuum, and Charge *as* Point of stimulation must abide. All the three standards of Hindu Philosophy recognise this and retain both, though in different forms. (1) The First Standard has *Ākāśa*, *Kāla* and *Dik* (over and above *Ātmā*) on the continua side, and *Paramāṇus* (as Points of stimulation) on the other side. (2) In the Second, *Pradhāna* (*Prakṛti*) and *Mahat* stand on the continua side, while by the action of the Centre-making Principle (*Aśmitā*), *Tanmātras* evolve out of the continua and work them out into discontinuities. (3) In the Third, *Cit* as

[1] See "Mahāmāyā".

the Primary Continuum progressively finitises itself by its own Power, and discontinuities appear as the result of this veiling and limiting operation. The Mantra-Śāstra contemplates the attitudes of Power as *Nāda* and as *Bindu*. The Physical Continua—Space, Ether and the rest—evolve out of this self-veiling and self-limiting and self-determining operation of Consciousness as Power. So do Cosmic Mind and Cosmic Life (*i.e.*, *Manas* and *Prāṇa* as universal, pervading all existence as latent or as patent).

As was pointed out under "Matter", the tendency of modern Science is to treat the one-time constant *mass* of Matter as a a function of Energy, so that the physical units of Matter (Atoms, Electrons, etc.), are no longer regarded as absolutely persistent. Continuity of Matter in that sense therefore no longer holds. Matter can be annihilated and also perhaps created. When annihilated it liberates an enormous quantity of stored up and "bound" (one could say, *Kundālākṛti*) energy which is the essence of Matter; it is created when *Śakti* becomes in a given manner "bound" about a nucleus or centre. When again one kind of Matter (Hydrogen) changes into another kind (Helium), we see this transference of Mass into Energy illustrated. The First Standard, it is true, lays down the indestructibility of the *Paramāṇus*, but the Second makes *Prakṛti* alone indestructible into which *Tanmātṛas* and the rest may be reabsorbed as they are evolved out of her. The Derivatives too are persistent, if we take into consideration their patent as well as latent conditions. In the latent condition, each Derivative becomes assimilated into its immediate Root or Cause. The Third Standard asserts absolute continuity in its *Cit* working as Power (*Śakti*).

§ 5

We may briefly note also continuity in Life. Hindu thought has recognised the continuity of Life not in the crude

sense in which Biogenesis holds the view that the germs of life have not been evolved by "non-living" matter, but in the deeper sense (now corroborated by the researches of Sir Jagadīśa Bose) that Life is latent in all being, since it is the one primordial *Cit-Substance* which by its own Power appears as Mind, as Life and as Matter. "*Ekaṃ sad viprā bahudhā vadanti*"—as the Veda says. In fact, the Upaniṣads study the *Prāṇa* in the *Parovarīyān* fashion, noticing different strata. *Prāṇa* may mean "breath"; it may mean "vital air" or "nerve energy"; it may mean *Hiraṇyagarbha* or Cosmic Life and Mind (*i.e.*, the substratum and synthesis of all forms of life and mind in the universe); and finally it means *Brahman* or the Immense itself. The last underlies all existence, since it is and manifests as all existence. So that there is no "non-living" matter—nothing in which there is not life. Hindu thought maintains further (1) continuity of the Types (*Ākṛti*), including the Types of living being. These Types may be, however, either latent or patent in a given age or locality. The Type Homo for example is persistent, though in a particular cycle of world-operations, it might have appeared as patent after certain geological strata had been formed and certain other anthropoid types had appeared. It maintains too (2) that the process of evolution (with reversions and retrogressions) of living beings is an infinite curve line without beginning and without end. This curve is *Saṃsṛti*, and is traced out on the map of infinite Time and Space in accordance with the Law of *Karma*. It maintains also (3) continuity in the life of the world in rhythm (creation and dissolution being compared to exhalation and inhalation of the Divine Mother—diastole and systole of the Cosmic Heart); in heredity; in tradition; and so on.

On the whole we may say this: The world starting from a common Root has, or appears to have, three divergent (and yet parallel) manifestations—as *Artha* (Object), *Pratyaya* (Thought)

and *Śabda* (Name). Now, the Hindu position is this that each line is continuous, starting from the Origin and going back to the Origin again.[1]

§ 6

Continuity may be regarded in different forms. Some have been discussed by us in a previous section. We propose another scheme here. In the first place, continuity may be of Substance or of Form, or of both. The substance of a Thing remains but its form varies; or its form remains but substance varies; or both the substance and form remain. Continuity of Substance may be of two kinds: continuity of stuff or Matter, and continuity of Energy. Continuity of Form may also be of two kinds: continuity of Types and continuity of Laws.

§ 7

Now, Stuff or Matter in the universe appears in the four forms: Spirit, Mind, Life, Matter (*Bhūta*). We know that the Highest Standard regards these four as *essentially* one. Hence the stuff of the world is continuous (*a*) as regards essence, and (*b*) as regards evolution and involution (from one to another).[2] In Nature there is no vacuum, no missing links. As regards Energy, it is maintained to be fundamentally *Cit-Śakti;* and though therefore transformation and correlation of the various forms of Energy are allowed, Vedānta is not prepared to circumscribe *Śakti* itself which is immeasurable, so that we cannot say that its sum-total always remains constant. Conservation of Energy in that sense is therefore only approximately and pragmatically true.[3] It follows also that energy which is fundamentally of the same

[1] See "Garland of Letters". [2] See "Reality".

[3] Hence the stock of energy is not a closed curve; see the account on "Matter".

nature operates in different planes—spiritual, vital and physical. It may be there as Static and as Kinetic. Absolutely static form of Energy (the limit of quiescence) is *Cidākāśa* which is *Śiva*. What ordinarily passes for static or potential Energy is really subtle Kinetic Energy. The definition of the former as Energy of Position and that of the latter as Energy of Motion are only pragmatic definitions. Now, operative Energy may be pragmatically analysed with respect to two co-ordinates: Succession, Co-existence. The former again may be variable and conditional or invariable and unconditional. If invariable and unconditional, it makes Causation, or Causal Operation. Power as *Kāla* moves things in succession; Power as *Dik* holds them in their relative positions; Power as Cause produces phenomenon. Whilst the First Standard makes the first two Powers separate entities (*viz.*, *Kāla* and *Dik*) and reduces causation to invariable and unconditional succession of one phenomenon upon another in which the former was non-existent (*Prāgabhāva*), the Highest Standard, as we have seen, makes ultimately *Kāla* = *Dik* = Consciousness as Power; and in both Sāṃkhya and Vedānta, Cause = Effect (each completely considered), as regards substance and energy, the only difference being the configuration or collocation of substance-energy in the latter which is not apparent in the former.[1] In Vedāntic parlance, it is merely the difference of *Nāma*, and we might add, of apparent *Rūpa*.

As regards Formal Continuity we have noticed two modes: the continuity of Types and continuity of Laws. The world is a cycle of operations which completes itself in a time which is technically called *Kalpa*. During the life-time of this cycle, Types and their variations down to mere particulars appear: Types of *Artha*, *Pratyaya* and *Śabda*. Now, it is a common position of Hindu thought that the cycle of operations in one *Mahā-Kalpa* repeats itself, at least as regards the

[1] See " Causality ".

Types, in another *Mahā-kalpa* (hence it is called *cycle*), and that as a *Pravāha* or flow it is infinitely continuous (*anādi* and *ananta*). The question whether the particulars or details also reappear is a difficult one, and there seems to exist some ground for holding that the world-movement is *spiraline* (which combines upward motion with rotatory motion), instead of being merely rotatory, with the result that there is progress in spite of the persistence and repetition of the Typal Forms. Types again may range from the *summum genus* to the *infima species*, in the three fields of *Artha*, *Pratyaya* and *Śabda*. Hence we have orders or Hierarchies. For example, on the cosmic plane we have the hierarchy of *Īśvara*, *Hiraṇyagarbha* and *Virāt*, and in ourselves that of *Prājña*, *Taijasa* and *Viśva*.[1]

We need not refer in particular to Continuity of Laws, and the question whether they are invariable or variable; nor discuss here the epistemological relations of Continuity to other concepts such as Homogeneity, Sameness, Infinity and Uniformity. These relations will be dealt with in "Cit". Here, however, we need only say a few words about certain forms of Continuity which will make its bearings somewhat clearer. In the first place, Continuity may be either absolute (*aikāntika*) or relative (*apekṣika*). The former is one which eliminates or is beyond all difference (*bheda*). *Bheda* may be of three kinds. (1) *Svagata* or intrinsic—as the difference between waves, eddies, etc., in a mass of water; it is that by which one part of a substance is discriminated from another. (2) *Sajātīya* is one by which one individual of a species (*jāti*) is distinguished from another (*e.g.*, the difference between one man and another). (3) *Vijātīya* is one by which objects of different kinds are constituted as such (*e.g.*, man and stone). Now, absolute continuity is free from these three kinds of difference. But this can be either real or pragmatic. It is *real* when difference does not exist at all. It is *pragmatic* when

[1] See "Garland of Letters".

difference, though perhaps existing, is veiled or ignored by us. Real absolute continuity is Pure Consciousness or *Cidākāśa*. Pragmatic continuity which, as we have seen, is veiled difference, is instanced by *Deśa* (Space), and *Kāla* (Time). Concretely, there *is* difference between one position and direction of Space and another—between here and there, up and down, and so on. Similarly, there *is* difference between temporal determinations—between past and future, now and then, for example. But abstractly, Space and Time are conceived by us as though they were homogeneous, uniform and impartial. Such conceptual Space and Time are the veiled products of perceptual Space and Time. On the other hand, relative continuity admits of difference of one or other of the three kinds. It is therefore unity-in-difference. Thus we speak of a continuous mass of water though waves, etc. on it may constitute real difference. Our mental life is continuous (*i.e.*, like a stream) though the facts are infinitely various. The colours of a rainbow or a spectrum are in this way continuous. Thus also is Space continuous: so Ether; so Time; so Life. Now, this relative continuity may also be real or pragmatic. The former is illustrated by *ghatākāśa* (the Space bounded by a jar) and *mathākāśa* (the Space bounded by a temple). Here there is real (though not absolute) continuity, but this is veiled on account of certain practical determinations, *viz.*, those constituted by the jar and the temple. Pragmatic relative continuity is one in which real difference is ignored for practical purposes, and objects are thought of as being continuous. *E.g.*, the air we breathe: it is a mixture of different gases; and the particles of different gases have also their interspaces filled by a different substance. All our lower continua are thus pragmatic. What, for example, is the position of *Ākāśa*? From one standpoint, it is pragmatic or veiled continuity, *viz.*, from the absolute standpoint of *Cidākāśa*: there *are* real intrinsic differences in *Ākāśa* (whether as actual or

as potential). Similar is the position of the Sāṃkhyan *Prakṛti*. From another standpoint, however, *Ākāśa* is real continuity, *viz.*, with respect to other "continua" which are inferior to it. If we rigidly define "real" as that upon which no "veil" has operated to any extent, then the "Fact" alone is real and all "Fact-sections" (*Ākāśa*, *Kāla* and the rest) are pragmatic. Thus rigidly defined, no *relative* continuity can be real continuity: relative and real become contradictories of each other.

Then, again, continuity may be either statical or dynamical. The former is continuity of Being (*sattā*); the latter is continuity of Becoming (*pariṇati*). Such analysis of Fact into Being and Becoming, Consciousness and Stress, *Śiva* and *Śakti*, is, however, pragmatic. Adopting such analysis, Absolute Real Statical Continuity is *Cidākāśa* or *Śiva*; and Absolute Real Dynamical Continuity is *Cit* as Power or *Śakti*. *Cit* as Being and *Cit* as Power-to-become is real and is absolutely continuous. *Cit* is never *minus Śakti*, and *Śakti* is never *minus Cit*. The Power manifests Itself in infinite variety and such manifestation is generally cyclic; but Power *as* Power suffers no change. It is the identical Power to evolve as the varied world-order: Power as such never becomes other than Itself—in this sense the *Devī* is *nityā* and *vayaya*. In the evolution of the 36 Tattvas (see *Śakti and Śākta* and *The Garland of Letters*), Power never really becomes other than the Holder of Power, and never other than Itself. The symbol of *Chinna-mastā* (a Form of the *Devī* which shows her cutting off her own head and drinking the hot blood sprouting out of the severed trunk) is a symbol of the creative process, but it is not a symbol of self-destruction which feat even Power Itself must be incapable of achieving.

Identity, Sameness, Homogeneity are modes of the idea of Continuity: they together with the last form one family of categories. We shall not study them here. Each, we may note however, may be classified on the lines of Continuity.

In what sense, for example, can Self and the Supreme Self be identified with each other? *Tvam* with *Tat*? It is absolute real (though ordinarily veiled) identity, according to Pure *Advaitism* (the realisation being *So'ham* or *Sā'ham*). It is relative and pragmatic identity according to *Viśiṣṭādvaitism* and the various forms of *Dvaitism.* Man is only the image of God; His part; and so on: there is real difference between Self and Supreme Reality (or Fact) which *persists*, even when the former is without its veil. The Tantra, as a *sādhana* Śāstra, leads to the realisation of *So'ham* or even beyond (*i.e.*, the transcendental, alogical state beyond the polarity of *Tat* and *Tvam*), but in the discipline it provides, there is, to begin with, *practical* recognition of duality.

The Substance-Energy of the cosmic order being fundamentally the same, we cannot have absolutely one set of laws for Matter, another set for Life, and so on; all must be ultimately governed, in so far as they are governed, by one fundamental Law or set of Laws.

§ 8

Another point should be finally noticed:

It is not enough in Philosophy to know continuity; by *Sādhana* we must *realise* it. As realised it is *Amṛtatva*—Blissful Deathlessness. There are Paths progressively leading to *Amṛtatva*—through Science, through Art; through Philosophy; and through *Sādhana*, when we realise *So'ham* or *Sā'ham* (He or She am I).

GENERAL INDEX

A

PAGE

Aṁśa 36, 205
Akarmaṇya 88
Akula 21
Akṣapāda 175
Akṣamatā 88
Akhaṇḍa 42, 49, 78, 138, 194, 207, 368
Akhaṇḍakāla 28
Agni 103, 106, 108, 110, 115, 116, 117, 211, 318, 380, 382, 383, 385, 386
Aṅkuśa 271
Acara 87
Acarabhūta 118
Acala 305
Acit 29
Acintya 365
Acintyaśakti 40, 42
Acetana 87, 88, 160, 187
Acaitanyaṁ 120
Aṇīyān 238, 267, 333
Aṇu 57, 158, 160, 171, 173, 184, 238, 241, 267, 269, 270, 272, 306, 319, 333, 387
Aṇutva 160
Aṇudīrgha 320
Aṇuparimāṇa 157
Aṇubhāva 62
Aṇumahat 270, 320
Aṇurūpa 159
Aṇuhrasva 270, 320, 321
Aṇḍaja 101, 121
Atattvamasi 36
Atimanda 119
Atilāghava 159
Atīndriya 62, 273, 348

PAGE

Atīndriyaśakti 343, 344
Aditi 268, 371, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 388
Adṛṣṭa 30, 128, 179, 292, 293, 294, 297, 299, 301, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 311, 312, 315, 316, 317, 326, 328, 345, 346
Adṛṣṭasṛṣṭi 284
Advaita 39, 48, 137, 158, 246, 284
Advaitavāda 49, 50, 220
Advaitavedanta 51, 57, 284, 364
Adharma 73, 335, 345
Adhikāra 22, 130, 309
Adhikāri 43
Adhiṣṭhātrīdevata 265
Adhiṣṭhāna 125, 158, 160
Adhyakṣa 160
Adhyavasāya 165, 170, 187
Adhyavasāyātmikā 165
Adhyatma 103
Ananta 395
Anādi 395
Anāhata 108, 122
Anāhatacakra 113, 253
Anāhataśabda 110
Aṇitya 27, 30, 276
Aṇityā 301
Anirvacanīya 42
Anugraha 212
Anupapatti 385
Anubhava 62
Anumāna 385
Anumiti 161
Anusvara 111
Anekarasa 323
Anekarūpavattva 323
Anena 170
Antah 170

PAGE

Antahkaraṇa 21, 28, 30, 33, 57, 132, 145, 146, 147, 149, 152, 153, 157, 161, 162, 163, 170, 173, 174, 175, 187, 189, 192, 196, 197, 198, 199, 201, 202, 203, 204, 226, 269, 363
Antahsaṁjñā 119
Antarātmā 103
Antarikṣa 386, 387
Antarindriya 58, 173, 375
Antarmukhti 48
Antaryāmin 81
Anna 108
Annamaya 101, 131
Annamayakośa 74, 104, 164, 199, 204
Anyat 103
Anyatra 291
Anyatrabhāva 126
Apakarṣa 272, 369
Apañcīkṛta 156
Apañcīkṛtatanmātra 57, 358
Apañcīkṛtabhūta 191
Aparāvidhyā 41
Aparokṣa 200
Aparokṣajñāna 35, 155
Apavarga 250, 266
Apāna 102, 106, 107, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 123
Apānavāyu 107
Apūrṇaṁ 11, 73
Ap 97, 112, 122, 131, 138, 176, 223, 275, 282, 283, 300, 313, 323, 324, 325, 334, 385, 386
Apparamāṇu 276
Appayadīkṣita 36, 191
Aprajñāta 387
Apratarkya 387
Abādhita 126, 130
Abhāva 27, 29, 30
Abhinavagupta 78, 207
Abhiprāṇitah 103
Abhimāna 166, 167, 170
Abhimānicaitanya 265
Abhimānī 282
Abheda 37
Abhyudaya 286
Aṁbikā 190
Amanāḥ 206, 230

PAGE

Amutra 66
Amūrtaṁ 103
Amūrta 103, 104
Amṛta 73, 102, 103
Amṛtattva 42, 398
Amṛtamaya 103
Ayaṁ 160
Ayaugapadya 159
Arghya 211
Artha 187, 197, 392, 394, 395
Arthavattva 329
Alakṣaṇa 387
Avacchinna 146, 326
Avaccheda 196
Avayava 274, 314, 327, 329
Avayavin 274
Avayavī 276
Avalaṁbaka 117
Avastu 67
Avasthā 67
Avākṣipat 385
Avidhyā 37, 163, 250, 281, 389
Avidyaśakti 191
Aviśeṣa 181, 329, 333
Avyakta 140
Avyaktāvasthā 303
Avyaya 397
Aśvattha 66
Asacchāstra 40
Asat 363, 387
Asatkāryavāda 248, 343
Asādhāraṇa 101
Asura 293
Asthāvara 118
Asthi 121
Asmi 100, 230
Asmitā 184, 185, 238, 282, 330, 331, 390
Ahaṁ 48, 49, 153, 160, 191, 197, 218, 230, 280, 281, 298, 306, 377, 387, 389, 398
Ahaṁkāra 33, 57, 98, 152, 156, 157, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 173, 174, 175, 184, 185, 187, 192, 195, 204, 208, 233, 281, 282, 290, 328, 330, 358
Ahaṁkāratattva 156, 166
Ahaṁbrahma 201
Ahirbudhnyasaṁhitā 28, 357

Ā

PAGE

Ākāśa 25, 28, 29, 30, 33, 34, 97, 110, 112, 113, 114, 125, 177, 179, 196, 231, 233, 234, 272, 277, 282, 283, 295, 300, 305, 311, 319, 323, 324, 325, 326, 332, 333, 371, 374, 378, 382, 383, 390, 396, 397
Ākāśatanmātra 334
Ākāśastalliṅgāt 196
Ākṛti 182, 247, 392
Āgantuka 313
Āgama 103
Āgamaśāstra 3
Āścarya 377
Ājñā 110, 113, 122
Ātman 23, 24, 27, 30, 33, 65, 66, 74, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 145, 155, 158, 161, 162, 163, 164, 166, 169, 206, 222, 272, 277, 300, 301, 305, 306, 309, 311, 319, 325, 328, 332, 345, 371, 373, 374, 376, 388, 390
Ātmasamarpaṇa 211
Ātmasaṁyoga 305
Āditya 108
Ādyakarma 316
Ādyakāli 211
Ādyāśakti 190
Ādhidaivika 379
Ādhibhautika 379
Ādhyātmika 379, 382
Ānanda 42, 105, 207, 222, 298
Ānandatva 222
Ānandamaya 101, 131
Āpah 30, 385
Āptapramāṇa 155
Āpekṣika 395
Ābhāsa 189
Āyuh 102
Āyuṣtvaṁ 102
Āyurveda 113, 228
Āraṁbhavāda 248, 344
Ārtava 121, 208
Ālocaka 117
Ālocana 170, 173
Āśraya 158, 371

I

PAGE

Icchā 116, 231
Icchāśakti 160
Idaṁ 48, 49, 170, 197, 198, 298, 387
Indra 378, 380, 381, 382, 383, 386
Indriya 32, 125, 156, 165, 167, 170, 173, 176, 187, 195, 282, 325
Indriyatvaṁ 169
Indriyārthasaṁnikarṣa 160
Indhana 117
Iha 66

Ī

Īkṣati 315, 385
Īśvara 12, 13, 20, 27, 29, 30, 40, 49, 62, 77, 127, 139, 145, 305, 307, 311, 344, 374, 395
Īśvaratattva 358
Iśvaraprayatna 305

U

Ucchvāsa 111
Uttaramīmāṁsa 19
Utkarṣa 272, 319
Utpatti 184
Udāna 72, 102, 106, 107, 109, 111, 113
Udānavāyu 107
Udgīta 379
Udbodha 140
Udbhijja 101, 120
Udbhūta 277, 314
Udbhutarūpa 277, 315
Udyāna 119
Unmanīśakti 209, 213
Upagrahita 326
Upaniṣad 19, 72, 79, 81, 82, 206, 221, 379, 189
Upanyasyati 392
Upamiti 161
Upaṣṭaṁbhaka 314
Upaskāra 178, 300, 326
Upādāna 143, 151, 265
Upādhi 147, 169, 203
Upāsasva 85
Umāsvātī 121
Uṣṇatā 323

Ū

PAGE

Ūṣmaja 120

Ṛ

Ṛk 383, 386
Ṛgveda 116, 253, 377, 381
Ṛjurekhā 271
Ṛṣi 19, 20, 35, 37, 322, 373, 379, 380, 382, 383

E

Eka 130, 306, 377
Ekatrāvasthāna 203
Ekaṁ 372
Enaṁ 377
Evaṁ 170

Ai

Aikāntika 395

Au

Aupādhika 308

Ka

Kaṭha 167
Kaṭhopaniṣad 377
Kaṇāda 27
Kapha 113, 114, 115, 117, 122, 123
Karaṇa 301
Karṇaśaṣkuli 326
Kartavya 166
Kartā 158, 163
Karma 15, 27, 30, 143, 170, 177, 180, 213, 231, 250, 266, 291, 292, 293, 294, 297, 299, 301, 305, 310, 311, 316, 324, 326, 327, 345, 392
Karmakāṇḍa 379
Karmayoga 124
Karmendriya 98, 169, 282, 300
Kalpa 394
Kalpataru 86
Kākinī 122
Kācit 377
Kāṇva 102
Kāma 116
Kāmakalāvilāsa 103, 211, 298
Kāmuka 210

PAGE

Kāraṇa 158, 167, 178, 265, 301, 307, 311, 353
Kāraṇaguṇa 178, 300
Kāraṇabhāva 178, 300
Kāraṇavannitya 301
Kāraṇaśakti 339
Kāraṇaśarīra 384
Kārpaṇya 11
Kārya 13, 30, 178
Kāryaguṇa 178, 300
Kāryabhāva 178, 300
Kāla 27, 28, 29, 30, 33, 67, 101, 103, 179, 196, 222, 295, 300, 306, 397, 308, 309, 311, 325, 326, 327, 328, 332, 333, 345, 365, 371, 374, 390, 394, 396, 397
Kālavādin 307
Kālaśakti 309
Kālīdevī 133
Kālīmūrti 332
Kālīśakti 332
Kāṣṭhā 154, 309
Kiṁcit 154
Kuṇḍalākṛti 391
Kuṇḍalinī 358
Kuṇḍalinīyoga 389
Kuṇḍalinīśakti 112
Kuṁbhaka 66
Kula 21
Kuladharma 8
Kulārṇavatantra 8, 20, 50, 67
Kulīna 21
Kusumāñjali 305
Kūtasthaśiva 65, 213
Kūrma 108, 109
Kṛkara 108, 109
Kṛti 351
Kṛṣṇānanda 176
Kena 85, 102
Kaivalya 349, 352
Komala 283
Kośa 104, 132
Kaula 21
Kauṣītaki 85, 102, 125
Kauṣītakī-Upaniṣad 100
Kriyate 170
Kriyā 9, 74, 130
Kriyākāṇḍa 322
Kriyāśakti 99, 109, 160

PAGE

Kledaka 117
Kvacit 232, 291
Kṣaṇa 33, 327
Kṣayakṛt 309
Kṣiti 131, 300, 325
Kṣudra 232, 238
Kṣudrabrahmāṇda 291

KHA

KHAṂ 196
Khalu 198
Khaṇda 308

GA

GANDHA 178, 180, 182, 275, 282, 301, 312, 313, 323, 327, 329, 330, 384
Gandhaviśeṣa 326
Gāyatrī 102
Gāyatrīmantra 296
Gītā 377
Guṇa 27, 57, 88, 89, 97, 152, 154, 160, 177, 190, 196, 208, 254, 278, 279, 300, 301, 323, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331, 350, 358
Guru 111, 357
Gautama 175
Gaurikañjalitantra 107

GHA

GHAṬAH 160
Ghaṭākāśa 396
Ghanībūta 254, 332

CA

CAKRA 108, 109, 110, 111, 122, 131
Cakradatta 107
Cakrapāṇi 119
Caṇḍi 222, 309
Cara 87, 118, 157
Caraka 107
Carama 276
Caramā 382
Caramasmaraṇa 162
Caramāvayava 301
Caramotkarṣa 381
Calanavantah 119

PAGE

Cārvāka 39, 97, 341
Cit 20, 29, 33, 46, 47, 87, 88, 104, 126, 130, 131, 137, 138, 139, 143, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 151, 152, 153, 154, 158, 163, 165, 184, 186, 189, 196, 198, 203, 206, 218, 222, 223, 233, 247, 250, 264, 284, 289, 296, 297, 299, 331, 332, 333, 373, 375, 376, 385, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 395, 397
Citta 152, 157, 166, 175, 187, 188, 189, 192, 202
Cittavṛtti 188
Cittaśuddhi 210
Citśakti 7, 47, 89, 143, 151, 155, 157, 182, 186, 204, 217, 241, 265, 266, 283, 292, 293, 295, 296, 297, 299, 332, 333, 356, 379, 380, 383, 385, 386, 394
Citsvarūpa 152
Cidākāśa 126, 138, 151, 195, 196, 241, 266, 269, 285, 332, 373, 389, 394, 396, 399
Cidrūpa 170
Cidrūpiṇī 3, 283, 356
Cidrūpiṇīśakti 204
Cidvilāsa 183
Cinmayīśakti 190
Cetana 88
Cetanāvantaḥ 119
Caitanya 97, 140, 196, 300, 329, 382

CHA

CHĀNDOGYA 102, 121, 125, 133, 157, 379, 388
Chāndogyaupaniṣad 81, 373
Chāndogyabrāhmaṇa 328
Chāndogyaśruti 205
Chāyāpuruṣa 197
Chinnamastā 397

JA

JAGAT 32, 86, 228
Jagatprāṇa 103
Jagadātmatva 103
Jaṅgamabhūta 118

PAGE

Jaṭājāla 296
Jaḍa 87, 137, 152, 153, 166, 379
Jaḍadravya 153
Jaḍasaḍa 87
Janayitā 381
Jarāyuja 121
Jala 108
Jalabhūmi 118
Jalaṁ 323
Jalīya 325
Jāgrat 125, 131
Jāti 329, 395
Jātismara 161
Jīva 39, 40, 60, 109, 120, 138, 173, 176, 187, 267, 289, 292
Jīvanayoniyatna 97
Jaina 121
Jyāyān 267, 373, 378
Jyeṣṭhā 271
Jyoti 125

JÑA

JÑĀTĀ 152, 153, 196
Jñāna 15, 19, 152, 170, 173, 196, 213, 228, 300, 375
Jñānaṁ 250
Jñānakāṇḍa 379
Jñānagataprayatna 201
Jñānayoga 72, 77, 213
Jñānaśakti 160
Jñānasaṁkalanītantra 107
Jñānasvarūpa 151
Jñānendriya 98, 169, 170, 174, 282
Jñāneśvara 43
Jñeya 152, 196

DA

ḌĀKINĪ 122

TA

TAT 36, 60, 211, 298
Tattadrūpa 222
Tattva 28, 49, 60, 99, 108, 110, 111, 142, 156, 157, 166, 192, 207, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 358

PAGE

Tattvajñāna 8
Tattvasaṁdoha 3
Tattvārthādhigama 121
Tantra 9, 99, 210, 253, 385
Tantrarāja-tantra 211
Tantraśāstra 80, 165, 283
Tanmātra 12, 28, 29, 32, 33, 54, 57, 98, 109, 119, 156, 168, 177, 179, 180, 181
Tantrasāra 176, 182, 184, 185, 186, 195, 198, 233, 247, 282, 327, 328, 330, 331, 333, 358, 390, 391
Tamas 110, 119, 126, 139, 154, 167, 175, 186, 189, 208, 209, 254, 278, 279, 328, 329, 331, 353, 387
Tamaśchanna 119
Tamoguṇa 153, 164, 195, 210, 259
Tamobhūta 387
Tarpaka 102, 117
Tasmat 36
Tasmin 36
Tasmai 36
Tasya 36
Tasyai 222
Tāmasika 153, 107, 168, 199, 200, 204
Tejaḥ 30, 97, 112, 116, 117, 122, 131, 176, 213, 275, 282, 300, 324, 325, 329, 334
Tejaḥparamāṇu 276
Tejomaya 103
Taijasa 157, 168, 197, 198, 199, 325, 325
Taittirīya 102
Trasareṇu 30, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 301, 321, 322
Trikhaṇḍamudrā 165
Triguṇamayi 88
Triguṇamayiśakti 190
Triputī 196
Tripurasundarī 9
Trivṛtkaraṇa 334
Tryaṇuka 270
Traividya 340
Tvak 121
Tvaṁ 36, 398

Da

PAGE

Dakṣa 381
Dakṣatā 88
Dātuṁ 385
Darśana 19, 20
Dārśanika 29
Dik 27, 28, 29, 30, 33, 179, 196, 300, 301, 306, 308, 309, 310, 311, 325, 326, 327, 328, 332, 333, 346, 371, 374, 378, 388, 390, 394
Dikśakti 309
Diti 378
Dīkṣā 198
Digaṁbari 295
Divyadaṁpati 298
Dīrgha 260, 272, 319, 320, 321
Duṣya 115, 117
Dṛś 19
Dṛśimātra 189
Dṛśya 332
Dṛṣṭa 118
Deva 268, 381
Devatā 9, 122, 130, 182, 253, 271, 304, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382
Devadatta 108, 109
Devālaya 78
Devī 99, 191, 211, 397
Deśa 29, 222, 396
Daiva 103
Daivīśakti 67, 75, 77, 219, 220, 245
Doṣa 10 115, 117, 123, 178, 181, 183
Dyāvāpṛthivī 386, 387
Dyu 378, 380, 386
Dyauḥ 378
Dravatva 313
Dravya 27, 28, 30, 155, 299, 300, 301, 307, 308, 325, 332, 334, 371
Draṣṭavya 206
Draṣṭā 189, 332
Dvandva 220
Dveṣa 94, 127, 256
Dvyaṇuka 30, 271, 273, 276, 301, 321, 322
Dvaita 297, 306, 398
Dvaitavāda 50
Dvaitavādin 86
Dvaitādvaitavivarjita 50

Dha

Dhattūra 109
Dhātu 121, 122
Dhanaṁjaya 108, 109
Dharma 94, 95, 345, 346, 355
Dharmamīmāṁsā 19
Dhāraṇā 154
Dhārā 269, 272, 319, 332
Dhvaṁsābhāva 372
Dhvani 110, 112
Dhyāna 154

Na

Nakulīśa 29
Natanānandanātha 103
Nabhodeśa 326
Namah 222
Navyanaya 196
Nāga 108, 109
Nāḍi 123, 388
Nāda 297, 299, 391
Nādabindu 333
Nāma 394
Nāmarūpa 39, 363, 364
Nigūḍha 385
Nitya 27, 157, 160, 276, 301, 305, 308, 319, 347, 375, 397
Nitya-icchā 27, 344
Nityakriyā 27, 344
Nityaguṇa 30, 312
Nityajñāna 27, 344
Nityadravya 30, 332
Nityā 301
Nityāṣoḍaśikātantra 11
Nidānabhūḥ 11
Nididhyāsita 72
Nididhyāsitavya 72, 206
Nimitta 151
Nimittakāraṇa 314, 325
Nimbārka 36
Niyati 28
Niyāmaka 36
Niratiśaya 222
Niravayava 160
Nirākāra 295
Nirudyoga 87

PAGE

Nirodha 188
Nirbīja-samādhi 189
Nirvikalpa 170
Nirviśeṣaṇa 145
Niśvāsa 67, 101, 106
Niścayakāriṇi 165
Niścayātmikā 165
Niṣkriyā 325
Niṣedha 78
Niṣedhavyāpārarūpa 78, 207
Niṣpaṇda 87
Netratantra 37
Naiyāyika 36, 97, 179, 317
Naivaṁ 170
Nyāya 97, 155, 158, 162, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 189, 195, 196, 240, 246, 271, 284, 299, 315, 342, 346, 369, 371
Nyāyavaiśeṣika 17, 19, 27, 145, 376
Nyāyavaiśeṣikadarśana 29
Nyāyasūtra 175
Naivaṁ 170

PA

PAÑCADAŚI 172
Pañcīkaraṇa 314, 334
Pañcīkṛtamarut 253
Patañjali 166, 176, 187, 188
Pati 29
Padārtha 27, 29, 222
Padmapurāṇa 40
Parajāti 363
Paratantra 29, 37
Parabrahmasvarūpa 102, 154
Paraṁ 154
Parama 270
Paramamahat 272, 319, 333
Paramā 382
Paramātman 196, 305, 374
Paramāṇu 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 30, 33, 93, 177, 178, 179, 180, 184, 185, 240, 245, 247, 271, 272, 273, 275, 276, 277, 282, 300, 301, 303, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 326, 327, 328, 330, 345, 390, 391
Paramāṇukāraṇavāda 326

PAGE

Paramatmā 103
Paramārtha 65, 78
Paramārthasāra 78, 207
Parameśituḥ 209
Parameśvara 196
Paramotkarṣa 381
Parasattabhānaṁ 341
Parā 231, 302
Parāgāti 154
Parābhakti 213
Parāyaṇa 373, 378
Parāvidyā 41, 67, 68
Parāśakti 74, 190
Parāhaṁta 247, 297
Paricchinna 101, 157
Pariṇati 397
Pariṇāma 168, 169, 272, 278, 303, 305, 319, 326
Pariṇāmapradayinī 309
Pariṇāmavāda 248
Pariṇāmasṛṣṭi 284
Pariṇāmika 118
Paripoṣaka 205
Pariprajātaḥ 381
Parimaṇdala 272, 273, 319, 320
Parimala 36
Parimita 285
Parispanda 97, 140
Parōvarīyān 388, 392
Paśyantī 120, 302, 377
Paśyāmi 120
Pākajasparśa 323
Pācaka 115, 117
Pāñcarātratantra 28, 77
Pāṇi 386
Pātañjala 97, 327
Pātañjaladarśana 329
Pātañjalabhāṣya 331
Pātañjalasūtra 118, 181
Pāda 102, 103
Pādendriya 176
Pāramārthika 138
Pāramārthikasattā 42
Pārimāṇdalya 245, 273, 320
Pārthiva 325
Pāśa 29
Piṇda 301
Pitta 113, 115, 117, 123
Puṇyānanda 11

PAGE

Punarjāyante 125
Purāṇa 18
Puruṣa, 20, 27, 32, 33, 46, 49, 98, 154, 156, 157, 163, 165, 187, 188, 189, 278, 284, 328, 348, 350, 351, 352, 356, 359, 376
Pūraka 66
Pūrṇa 12, 21, 60, 76, 78, 125, 126, 130, 136, 137, 138, 170, 196, 213, 217, 232, 240, 298, 359, 368, 375
Pūrṇāham 7, 190, 218
Pūrṇāvasthā 298
Pūrva 19
Pūrvanivāsasthāna 341
Pṛthivī 30, 31, 97, 110, 112, 113, 128, 177, 211, 275, 282, 283, 300, 301, 314, 315, 317, 323, 324, 329, 334, 378, 380, 386, 387
Pṛthivītanmātra 334
Pṛthivīparamāṇu 276, 300, 315, 318
Pṛthivībhūta 277
Prakāśa 151
Prakāśaka 188
Prakṛti 30, 33, 38, 46, 47, 49, 86, 98, 144, 156, 157, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 184, 187, 189, 190, 208, 229, 246, 279, 283, 284, 296, 331, 349, 351, 352, 358, 376, 385, 390, 397
Prakṛtitattva 284
Prakṛtivāda 87, 88, 104
Prakṛtiśakti 152, 153
Prakramaṇa 104
Pracchanna-bauddha 40
Prajāpati 334, 381, 382
Prajāyeya 306, 377
Prajñātmā 102
Praṇayana 104
Pratibandhaka 140, 298
Pratibandhakābhāva 27
Pratīka 211
Pratītyasamutpāda 341
Pratyakṣa 155, 161, 187, 203
Pratyakṣayogya 270, 276, 322
Pratyaya 189, 392, 394, 395
Pradeśātīta 273
Pradhāna 99, 390
Prapañcasāra 112

PAGE

Prapañcasāratantra 67, 101, 114, 117, 123
Prapāṭhaka 121
Prabudhyate 125
Praṇāmi 323
Pramātṛ 203
Pramātṛcaitanya 200
Prayatna 305, 307, 311, 325
Pralaya 29, 67, 299, 303
Pravāha 395
Praśna 75, 108, 118
Prasara 75, 118
Prāgabhāva 371, 394
Prājña 395
Prātibhāsikasattā 41, 42, 220
Prāṇaḥ 6, 78, 85, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109, 111, 113, 114, 123, 125, 131, 132, 153, 157, 162, 170, 199, 209, 241, 378, 391, 392
Prāṇatattva 109
Prāṇamaya 101, 131
Prāṇamayakośa 74, 104, 204
Praṇavāyu 106, 107, 109
Prāṇaśakti 117, 134, 231
Prāṇāgnihotropaniṣad 106
Prāṇāt 103
Prāṇātma 103, 106
Prāṇāyāma 66, 104, 111
Prāṇī 93, 105, 363
Priyā 305
Premāspada 222

BA

BANDHA 250
Bahiḥprāṇa 108
Bahirindriya 375
Bahirmukhi 48
Bāhyakaraṇa 145, 173
Bāhyavastūparāga 188
Bāhyaviṣayapratyakṣa 160
Bindu 200, 241, 254, 267, 269, 272, 297, 299, 333, 391
Binduśakti 267, 290, 294
Bīja 101, 121, 385
Bījatanmātra 111
Bījatva 120
Bījamantra 251

PAGE

Buddha 160
Buddhi 33, 57, 152, 156, 160, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 173, 174, 175, 184, 185, 187, 192, 195, 204, 207, 208, 233, 280, 281, 282, 284, 296, 328
Buddhikośa 132
Buddhiguhā 265
Buddhivyāpāra 247
Buddhiśakti 198
Buddhīndriya 169
Bṛhadāraṇyaka 72, 102, 106, 197, 377, 379
Bodhaka 117
Bauddha 203, 392
Brahman 39, 40, 63, 65, 66, 100, 102, 103, 104, 124, 125, 134, 192, 196, 198, 200, 206, 211, 212, 230, 238, 295, 376, 377, 378, 383, 388, 392
Brahmaśakti 200
Brahmāṇḍa 232, 385
Brāhmaṇa 350

BHA

BHAKTA 43, 124
Bhakti 15, 36, 43, 213, 222
Bhājaka 117
Bhānumatī 119
Bhāmati 36, 307
Bhavanopaniṣad 121
Bhaṣāpariccheda 325
Bhāṣya 196, 281
Bhāskararāya 11, 121
Bhūcchāyā 360
Bhūta 29, 32, 33, 98, 103, 104 118, 119, 153, 156, 157, 162, 167, 168, 177, 182, 208, 231, 268, 272, 276, 277, 313, 328, 329, 382, 385, 393
Bhūtaśakti 113, 153, 225, 231
Bhūtaśuddhi 211, 381, 389
Bhūtākāśa 196
Bhūmi 323
Bheda 37, 200, 298, 308, 395
Bhedābheda 37
Bhokta 306
Bhoktrī 36
Bhoga 79, 250, 329

PAGE

Bhogasādhana 306
Bhogya 36, 306
Bhogyāyatana 306
Bhautika 149, 153, 157
Bhautikaparispanda 344
Bhrājaka 117

MA

MAṬHĀKĀŚA 396
Majjā 121
Madhurabhāva 222
Madhyamaparimāṇa 157
Madhyamā 302
Maṇipūra 108, 113, 122
Manas 23, 28, 30, 33, 57, 98, 105, 108, 146, 152, 156, 158, 159 160, 161, 162, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 187, 189 192, 195, 196, 204, 282, 300, 325, 391
Manusaṁhitā 385, 387
Manomaya 101, 131, 204
Manomayakośa 74, 105, 204
Mantavya 72, 206
Mantra 60, 72, 81, 109, 111, 153, 182, 212
Mantraśakti 212
Mantraśāstra 232, 254, 297, 302, 380, 391
Mantrasādhana 212
Mantreśvara 60
Marut 131, 268, 386
Marudgaṇa 253
Mala 114, 122, 123
Mahatah 238, 267, 333
Mahat 156, 165, 167, 184, 238, 241, 267, 269, 270, 272, 276, 280, 281, 282, 306, 314, 319, 333, 358, 363, 387, 390
Mahattattva 164, 165, 328
Mahatdīrgha 270, 272, 320, 321
Mahat-hrasva 270, 320
Mahākalpa 394, 395
Mahākāla 307
Mahākāli 210
Mahākāśa 396
Mahākuṇḍalinī 210
Mahātripurasundari 210
Mahānārāyaṇa 108

PAGE

Mahānirvāṇa 212
Mahāpralaya 67, 189
Mahāpreta 49
Mahābhārata 119
Mahārāṣtra 43
Mahāmāyā 50, 223, 284
Mahāyoginī-Nyāsa 122
Mahāyoni 66
Mahāvākya 36
Maheśvara 60
Mahāśakti 65, 75, 137, 150, 185, 186, 190, 217, 231, 233, 246, 249, 265, 283, 295, 347, 357
Mahīyān 238, 267, 333
Mātṛ 196, 200, 381
Mādhava 29, 36, 359
Māna 196, 200
Mānasa 212
Mānasaśakti 231
Mānasī 133
Mānasīkriyā 166
Mānasīśakti 145
Māntri 112
Māṁ 85
Māmsa 12
Māyā 37, 38, 40, 42, 43, 47, 49, 50, 67, 80, 155, 163, 189, 190, 191, 193, 195, 200, 203, 220, 231, 246, 247, 283, 295, 297, 343, 351, 356, 359
Māyāvāda 20, 36, 38, 39, 40, 43, 49, 64, 99, 155, 156, 157, 189, 193, 343, 358, 363
Māyāvādin 29, 43
Māyāśakti 47, 49, 65, 86, 87, 143, 151, 152, 153, 154, 158, 186, 190, 191, 195, 204, 241, 283, 293, 332, 356, 386
Mīyate 220
Muktapuruṣa 163
Mukti 163
Mukhya 196
Mukhyahprāṇa 103
Muṇḍaka 108
Mudrā 164, 165
Mumukṣu 209
Mūrta 153
Mūrtaṁ 103
Mūrti 323

PAGE

Mūlaprakṛti 20, 328
Mūlabhāva 120
Mūlādhāra 108, 109, 120, 122, 134, 211
Mūlādhāra-Cakra 113
Mṛgatṛṣṇā 220
Mṛtyuṁjaya 73
Meda 121
Meya 196, 200
Maitrī 102, 103, 108
Maitrī-Upaniṣad 105
Mokṣa 67, 280
Mohita 88

YA

YAJÑA 379
Yathā 222
Yadā 125
Yantra 253
Yājñavalkya 106
Yākinī 122
Yuktipradhāna 35
Yoga 15, 42, 50, 62, 79, 109, 150, 154, 178, 188, 189, 191, 196, 199, 201, 202, 204, 206, 211, 212, 213, 221, 311, 358, 389
Yogadarśana 157
Yogadṛṣti 270, 322
Yoganāḍi 123
Yogamuni 207
Yogavāsiṣtha 70
Yogaśāstra 109, 112
Yogasūtra 112, 108, 187
Yogi 63, 123, 174, 181, 206, 279, 271
Yoginītantra 11
Yoginīhṛdaya 222
Yoginīhṛdayatantra 201, 203
Yogya 199, 202
Yogyata 284, 344
Yaugikaṣṛṣti

RA

RAKTA 121
Raghunāthaśiromaṇi 196, 385
Racanā
Rajaḥ 126, 154, 175, 189, 278, 279, 328, 329, 331, 350, 353
Rajoguṇa 152, 164, 167, 259
Rañjaka 117

PAGE

Ravikiraṇa 157
Rasa 118, 121, 178, 275, 282, 301, 312, 316, 326, 327, 331, 334
Rasaviśeṣa 326
Rākinī 122
Rāga 94, 105, 106, 127, 256, 298
Rāghavabhatta 101, 107, 108, 109, 120, 191
Rājasika 152, 157, 168
Rātrī 387
Rāmānuja 29, 36,65
Rāhu 360
Rudra 304
Rūpa 178, 179, 182, 275, 277, 282, 301, 312, 314, 315, 317, 318, 323, 324, 326, 327, 329, 330, 331, 332, 334, 394
Rūpatanmātra 329
Rūpaviśesa 277, 315, 317, 318, 326
Recaka 66
Roma 121
Raudrī 271

La

Lakṣaṇa 323
Lakṣanārtha 102
Laghu 157
Laya 127, 184, 280, 304, 305, 307, 309, 310, 311, 312, 351
Layayoga 358
Lalitā 210
Lākinī 122
Lingadeha 161, 205
Līlā 124, 183
Lokah 103, 309
Lokāyata 39, 97
Laukikavāyu 108

Va

Vakrarekhā 271
Vatsa 381
Vadanti 392
Varuṇa 110, 111, 116, 378
Vartamānata 201
Vallabha 36
Vaśīkaraṇa 81

PAGE

Vastu 222
Vahni 323
Vācaspati 170, 187, 307
Vātaḥ 108, 113, 123
Vāmā 271
Vāyavīya 325, 326
Vāyu 30, 72, 97, 98, 102, 104, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 122, 123, 177, 253, 275, 276, 282, 283, 300, 313, 315, 323, 324, 325, 380
Vāyutattva 253
V(B)ārṣagaṇyarṣi 281
Vāsanā 163
Vikalpa 168, 172
Vikāra 189, 363
Vikārarahita 357
Vikāsa 127
Vikāsaśīla 158
Vikṛti 164, 278, 283, 296
Vicāra 71
Vijātīya 395
Vijñāna 105, 228, 380, 382
Vijñānabhikṣu 188
Vijñānamaya 101, 105, 131, 204
Vijñānamayakośa 104, 204
Vidyā 389
Vidyeśvara 60
Vidvān 383
Vipra 392
Vibhāga 310
Vibhu 158, 193, 371, 374
Vibhutva 196
Vibhuparimāṇa 157
Vimarśa 151
Virāṭ 395
Virūpapariṇāma 351
Vilomārghya 211
Vivartavāda 249
Vivartasṛṣṭi 284
Viśiṣtarūpa 3, 362, 363
Viśiṣtādṛṣta 326
Viśiṣtādvaita 398
Visiṣtādvaitavedānta 65
Viśuddha 108, 122
Viśudḍhacakra 113
Viśeṣa 27, 30, 179, 302, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 326, 327
Viśeṣaguṇa 326, 327

PAGE

Viśeṣarūpa 316
Viśva 395
Viśvakarmā 378, 384, 386
Viśvasāra-tantra 232, 291
Viṣaya 197
Viṣayacaitanya 200
Viṣayākāra 197
Viṣayāvacchinna-Caitanya 202
Viṣṇu 304
Visadṛśa 351
Visadṛśapariṇāma 189
Vīrya 357
Vṛkṣa 119
Vṛtti 111, 148, 162, 163, 187, 188, 189, 197, 198, 201, 202, 203
Vṛtyavacchinna-Caitanya 202
Vega 196, 310, 345
Veda 19, 37, 63, 115, 116, 122, 333, 378, 379, 380, 392
Vedamantra 322
Vedamātā 36
Vedānta 11, 14, 17, 18, 19, 20, 24, 27, 35, 37, 38, 40, 43, 57, 58, 62, 63, 71, 74, 81, 86, 87, 97, 98, 99, 101, 104, 109, 117, 125, 137, 138, 139, 141, 142, 145, 147, 149, 150, 155, 156, 157, 158, 163, 166, 170, 172, 175, 184, 189, 194, 195, 198, 199, 203, 206, 217, 218, 219, 220, 231, 240, 241, 246, 247, 248, 250, 284, 285, 292, 296, 303, 307, 314, 326, 348, 356, 359, 363, 365, 373, 385, 392, 393, 394
Vedānta-sūtra 182, 196
Vedāntaparibhāṣā 172, 191, 198
Vedhas 383
Vaikārika 168
Vaikharī 302
Vaidyaśāstra 108
Vaiśeṣika 33, 97, 155, 158, 159, 162, 170, 171, 173, 179, 196, 240, 246, 271, 284, 299, 306, 307, 310, 311, 314, 315, 317, 319, 323, 324, 344, 369, 371, 376
Vaiśeṣikadarśana 300
Vaiṣamya 296
Vyakta 131

PAGE

Vyañjaka 140
Vyavahāra 200, 308
Vyaṣṭi 127, 130, 131
Vyaṣṭideha 131
Vyaṣṭiprāṇa 131
Vyaṣṭimanas 131
Vyādhi 11, 73
Vyāna 102, 106, 107, 109, 111, 112, 113
Vyāpāra 139, 162, 170, 226
Vyāpārarūpa 78
Vyāparaviśeṣa 170
Vyāpti 341
Vyāvahārika 138, 143
Vyāvahārikasattā 42
Vyāsabhāṣya 118, 323
Vyoma 114, 131
Vyomakeśa 296

ŚA

ŚAṂKARA 37, 43, 121, 196, 364, 365
Śaṁkaramiśra 178, 300
Śaṁkarācārya 18, 19, 37, 39, 40, 41, 49, 62, 67, 182, 190, 326
Śakti 11, 17, 21, 27, 28, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 53, 54, 65, 67, 81, 88, 92, 97, 102, 103, 104, 117, 118, 126, 129, 143, 149, 151, 152, 158, 196, 197, 198, 200, 201, 203, 205, 207, 209, 217, 218, 219, 223, 228, 230, 240, 241, 243, 250, 254, 256, 283, 284, 290, 296, 298, 299, 302, 304, 309, 328, 332, 333, 344, 346, 347, 383, 391, 393, 397
Śaktikūṭa 254
Śaktipāta 212
Śaktimān 77, 81, 190, 218, 283
Śaktivāda 157, 158, 163
Śaktivyāpāra 255
Śaktivyūha 254
Śaktisaṁgamatantra 77
Śabda 161, 182, 251, 277, 282, 302, 313, 323, 324, 329, 331, 333, 334, 380, 393, 394, 395
Śabdatanmātra 182, 331, 333, 334

PAGE

Śākta 47, 49, 50, 51, 65, 67, 68, 71, 74, 77, 78, 79, 80, 96, 99, 137, 151, 155, 156, 157, 190, 193, 195, 206, 209, 219, 221, 222, 246, 249, 283, 284, 356, 358, 362, 364, 372, 377, 381
Śākta-āgama 223
Śāktavīra 211
Śāktavedānta 254, 255
Śāktatantra 43, 51
Śāktadarśana 47
Śāktaśāstra 48
Śāktasādhana 65, 210
Śānta 43
Śāntiparvan 119
Śāradā 108
Śāradātilaka 107, 109, 120, 168, 191
Śārirakasthāna 107
Śāstra 23, 35, 56, 113, 144, 146, 161, 162, 238, 241, 352, 388, 398
Śāstropadeśaviṣaya 119
Śiva 21, 46, 47, 49, 50, 60, 103, 126, 154, 190, 203, 228, 231, 283, 284, 295, 298, 332, 379, 394, 397
Śivatattva 206
Śivaśakti 47, 211, 297
Śivaśaktitattva 49, 358
Śivaśaktimaya 359
Śivasaṁhitā 107, 205
Śivasūtravimarśinī 206
Śivohaṁ 65
Śukra 121, 122
Śukravāhinī-nāḍī 122
Śuddha 189
Śuddhavidyā 49
Śṛṅgātaka 271
Śaiva 28, 48, 157, 250, 343, 358
Śaivatantra 37
Śoṇita 121
Śrīcakrasaṁbhāra 40
Śrīyantra 44, 73, 211
Śruti 37, 44, 63, 65, 155, 250, 375
Śrutipradhāna 35
Śrotavya 206
Śrotra 325, 326
Śleṣma 115, 117, 123
Śvāsa 106, 111

PAGE

Śvāsaniśvāsarūpa 106
Śvetāśvatara 197

ṢA

ṢATCAKRANIRŪPAṆA 122

SA

SAṀKALITĀRTHA 196, 200
Saṁkalpa 168, 296
Saṁkalpavikalpa 169, 170
Saṁkoca 158, 193, 347
Saṁcaraṇa 198
Saṁcitakarma 315
Saṁprajñāta samādhi 181
Sambandha 30
Saṁmugdha 169
Saṁmohanatantra 49
Saṁyama 154
Saṁyoga 30, 181, 276, 301, 310
Saṁvit 12, 49, 147, 186
Saṁvitkūta 222
Saṁśaya 172
Saṁsāra 60, 66, 67, 303
Saṁsṛti 297, 392
Saṁsthānamātra 353
Samhitā 379
Saṁskāra 12, 13, 30, 40, 41, 48, 49, 55, 66, 76, 77, 95, 116, 127, 139, 140, 141, 142, 147, 161, 162, 163, 164, 171, 181, 197, 199, 280, 281, 294, 296, 307, 315, 330, 345, 363, 393
Sacetana 88
Saccidānanda 20
Saccidānandamaya-śakti 183
Sajātīya 302, 395
Sat 207, 211, 222, 392
Satkāraṇavāda 249
Satkāryavāda 248, 249, 353
Sattā 203, 220, 278, 363, 397
Sattabhāva 37
Satyaṁ 103
Satvaratā 88
Sattva 88, 126, 154, 167, 169, 175, 187, 189, 208, 209, 278, 279, 327, 329, 331
Sattvaguṇa 88, 89, 152, 157, 164, 209, 259, 350
Sattvaśuddhi 202

PAGE

Sadakāraṇavannityaṁ 301
Sadāśiva 49
Sadṛśa 189, 351
Sadṛśapariṇāma 303, 359
Sadvidyā 49
Samanīśakti 213
Samanvita 119
Samavāya 27, 30
Samavayikāraṇa 313, 314
Samavāyī 325
Samaṣṭi 127, 139, 167
Samaṣṭimanas 131
Samādhi 35, 71, 138, 154, 204, 206, 296, 389
Samāna 102, 106, 107, 109, 111, 113, 302
Samānādhikaraṇa 201
Sarga 328
Sarvajña 334
Sarvatogati 323
Sarvapiṇḍavyapin 101
Sarvabhūta 385
Sarvaṁ 198, 355
Sarvaṁ khalvidaṁ brahma 65, 198
Sarvavit 334
Sarvaśaktimaya 359
Sarvātmaka 335
Savicāra 181
Saviśeṣa 145
Sahakṛta 307
Sahasrāra 122
Sahovāca 85
Sāṁkhya 17, 24, 39, 46, 49, 57, 86, 97, 98, 99, 118, 131, 139, 144, 145, 146, 156, 157, 158, 162, 166, 184, 189, 190, 191, 283, 284, 285, 296, 350, 356, 357, 358, 359, 376, 394, 397
Sāṁkhyapuruṣa 47
Sāṁkhyayoga 19, 27, 30, 139, 155, 163, 229, 246, 247, 278, 284, 376
Sāṁsiddhika 313, 323
Sākinī 122
Sākṣātkāra 155, 201
Sāttvika 152, 155, 156, 157, 168, 199
Sāttvikapariṇāma 187
Sāttvikaṁśa 198

PAGE

Sāttvikāhaṁkāropādāna 169
Sādākhya 358
Sādi 157
Sādhaka 43, 117, 211, 213
Sādhakarañjaka 295
Sādhana 15, 43, 63, 65, 77, 78, 101, 202, 207, 210, 211, 212, 213, 221, 389, 398
Sādhana-śakti 337
Sāmānādhikaraṇya 201
Sāmānya 27, 30
Sāmānyaguṇa 25, 178
Sāṁya 296, 378
Sāṁyāvasthā 164, 189, 295, 296
Sāyaṇa 378
Sāratama 205
Sāvayava 157, 197, 285
Sāhaṁ 65, 68, 201
Siddhāntaleśa 191
Siddhi 81, 123, 124, 145, 202, 199, 213, 254, 293
Sukhaduhkha 119, 160
Sukhī 160
Suśruta 107
Suśrutasaṁhitā 114
Suṣupti 125, 131, 280, 296, 388
Sūkṣma 140, 181, 205, 269, 276, 329, 333
Sūkṣmākaśa 333
Sūkṣmabhūta 157, 329
Sūkṣmarūpa 139
Sūkṣmavāyu 333
Sūkṣmāvasthā 167
Sūtra 196
Sṛṣṭi 67, 189, 209, 304, 309, 310, 351
Sṛṣṭiprakriyā 307
Soma 116, 122, 378
So'haṁ 65, 201
Saubhāgyaratnākara 122
Strīśukra 121
Sthāvara 118
Sthiti 67, 304, 310, 351
Sthiti-śakti 367
Sthityādhāra 29
Sthūla 205, 219, 269, 276, 314, 329
Sthūlabhūta 182, 334
Spanda 54, 81, 238, 243, 302, 324
Spandana 310, 311, 325

	PAGE
Sparśa	178, 180, 182, 275, 282, 301, 313, 314, 323, 324, 329, 333, 334
Sparśatanmātra	311, 331
Sparśavat	323
Sparśaviśeṣa	326
Svagata	395
Svaccha	188
Svacchandatantra	37
Svatantra	29
Svaprakāśa	278, 332
Svabhāva	209
Svarūpa	87, 190, 356
Svarūpapariṇāma	351
Svarūpasaṁbandha	27
Svādhiṣṭhāna	108, 122
Svādhiṣṭhānacakra	109, 113
Svādhīna	130
Svāmitvasaṁbandha	36
Svedaja	101, 120, 121
Smṛti	160

HA

HĀKINĪ	122
Hiraṇyagarbha	12, 13, 60, 130, 141, 181, 334, 392, 395
Hṛdayaṁ	209
Hrasva	269, 319, 320
Hrasvadīrgha	320

BY SIR JOHN WOODROFFE (ARTHUR AVALON)

ENGLISH

		Rs.
Introduction to Tantra Shastra (*A key to Tantrik literature*) 3rd Edition (1956)	...	5/-
Principles of Tantra (*Tantra Tattva*) 2nd Edn. (1952) 1,200 pp. Cloth Bound	...	30/-
Shakti and Shakta (*Essays and Addresses*) 4th Edn. (1951) 750 pp. Cloth Bound	...	25/-
The Great Liberation (*Mahanirvana Tantra*) 3rd Edn. (1953) Cloth Bound	...	20/-
Garland of Letters (Varnamala) (*Studies in Mantra Shastra*) 3rd Edn. (1955) Cloth Bound With an Introduction by Prof. T. M. P. Mahadevan	...	15/-
Hymns to the Goddess (*From Tantras and Stotras of Shankaracharya*) 2nd Edn. (1953)	...	6/-
Tantraraja Tantra—A Short Analysis With a Preface by Yogi Shuddhananda Bharati	...	6/-
The World as Power (*Reality*, *Life*, *Mind*, *Matter*, *Causality* and *Continuity*) 2nd Edn. (1957) R. Octavo 400 Pages Cloth Bound	...	15/-
Mahamaya (*The World As Power: Consciousness*) 2nd Edn. (1954)	...	10/-

SAMSKRIT—ENGLISH

The Serpent Power (*Kundalinī Shakti*) Text and Translation with Notes. Illustrated with 17 plates, 5th Edn. (1953)	...	25/-
Kamakalavilasa Text, Translation and Commentary, 2nd Edn. (1953)	...	6/-
Hymn to Kali (*Karpuradi Stotra*) Text, Translation and Commentary, 2nd Edn. (1953)	...	6/-
Wave of Bliss (*Anandalahari*) Text, Translation and Commentary, 4th Edn. (1953)		3/-
Greatness of Shiva (*Mahimnastava of Pushpadanta*) Text, Translation and Commentary, 3rd Edition (1953)	...	3/-
Isopanishad Text, Translation and Commentary, 2nd Edn. (1952)	...	3/-
Kulachudamani Nigama Text and Introduction by A. K. Maitra, C.I.E., 2nd Edn. (1956)	...	3/-

GANESH & CO. (MADRAS) PRIVATE LTD. MADRAS-17

॥ सौन्दर्यलहरी ॥

श्रीमच्छंकरभगवत्पादविरचिता

कैवल्याश्रमकृतया सौभाग्यवर्धन्या, लक्ष्मीधराचार्यकृतया लक्ष्मीधरया,

कामेश्वरसूरिकृतया अरुणामोदिन्या च व्याख्यया संवलिता

SAUNDARYA-LAHARĪ

OF S'RĪ S'AṂKARĀCĀRYA

WITH COMMENTARIES

SAUBHĀGYAVARDHANĪ OF KAIVALYĀŚRAMA, LAKṢMĪDHARĀ OF LAKṢMĪDHARĀCĀRYA, ARUṆĀMODINĪ OF KĀMEŚVARASŪRIN

ENGLISH TRANSLATION AND NOTES

BY PAṆḌIT R. ANANTAKṚṢṆA ŚĀSTRI

AND

ŚRĪ KARRĀ RĀMAMŪRTHY GĀRU, B.A., B.L.

PRAYOGAS ILLUSTRATED WITH YANTRAS

WITH A FOREWORD BY

Dr. SIR C. P. RAMASWAMI AIYAR

Over 600 pages—Royal Octavo with six coloured plates
Bound in full cloth. Price Rs. 25/-

Saundarya-Laharī of Śrī-Śaṃkarācārya holds a high place in liturgical or Bhakti literature on account of its poetic, devotional and mystic aspects. There is such a wealth of ideas packed in brief verses that there have been more commentaries on this Poem than on any other of a like extent in Samskrit literature as a whole. The work may be epitomised as the Bible of Śrividyā-upāsakas of the Samayā school, as containing the quintessence of Mantra-Śāstra.

"It is a real public service that has been performed by Messrs. Ganesh & Co. in issuing a popular edition of the Saundarya-Laharī which occupies in the Tantra system the same position that the Bhagavad-Gītā occupies in the orthodox system of Indian philosophy. In addition to the English translation, Commentary and Prayogas, there is a series of exhaustive Appendices which will be of great help to the serious student and specialist."

GANESH & CO. (MADRAS) PRIVATE LTD. MADRAS-17

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

MAHĀMĀYĀ

THE WORLD AS POWER: POWER AS CONSCIOUSNESS

This is the last volume of the series "The World As Power" explaining in simple language the Shakta doctrine that the Universe is a manifestation of the Supreme Power—Maha Shakti—in various aspects. A comparison is also made between this and the better known Vedanta system called Māyāvāda. Both systems speak of Māyā but understand it differently as explained in the ten chapters of this book. Its object, whatever be its effect, is not to prove the truth of this or any other system, but to give an exposition of Consciousness as conceived in the doctrine of Power and in such exposition to show that it is not a mere fossil in a museum of antique thought, but has practical utility to-day. It offers to Western philosophy a new conception of Consciousness and Mind and brings to the controversies within the Vedantic schools a profoundly conceived contribution, in its theory of power and in its doctrine of the unity of conditioned and unconditioned being, of the state of worldly experience which is SAMSĀRA and of that super-worldly experience which is MOKSHA.

As the Creatrix of forms the Divine mother is MĀYĀ and as the produced individual form AVIDYA (ignorance). As Liberatrix from the ignorance of the forms which are of her making She is MAHĀMĀYĀ.

2nd Edn. 300 pp. Royal Octavo. Cloth Bound—Price Rs. 10/-

GANESH & Co. (MADRAS) PRIVATE Ltd.,
MADRAS-17